

# EMPIRE CHANGE-OVER FROM WAR TO PEACE

*In this chapter, covering events in the Dominions during the year 1945, internal politics, the aid given to Britain both in the last months of war and the first of peace, and the sacrifices made in the cause of the United Nations are the chief topics. The history of the Dominions in 1944 is given in Chapter 338*

**T**HE failure on February 5 of the attempt to find General McNaughton (see page 3450) a seat in Parliament for Greynorth (where he was beaten by a Progressive Conservative) led the Premier, Mr. Mackenzie King, to state that his defeat would force the Government to consider holding a general election very shortly, notwithstanding his own frequently expressed reluctance to do so while the soldiers were still fighting in Europe. The 19th Parliament of the Dominion of Canada was dissolved on April 16, a few hours before its term automatically expired on the 17th; but the fighting was in fact over before election day, June 11. The results, declared on June 19, gave the Liberal Party still the largest number of seats in the House, but with much reduced strength, the figures of the principal groups being: Liberals 119 (155 at the dissolution); Progressive Conservatives 65 (40); Co-operative Commonwealth Federation 28 (10); Social Credit 13 (10). Seven Independent Liberals and three of eight Independents could generally be counted on to support the Government, which thus had a precarious majority of seven.

**CANADA** pressed reluctance to do so while the soldiers were still fighting in Europe. The 19th Parliament of the Dominion of Canada was dissolved on April 16, a few hours before its term automatically expired on the 17th; but the fighting was in fact over before election day, June 11. The results, declared on June 19, gave the Liberal Party still the largest number of seats in the House, but with much reduced strength, the figures of the principal groups being: Liberals 119 (155 at the dissolution); Progressive Conservatives 65 (40); Co-operative Commonwealth Federation 28 (10); Social Credit 13 (10). Seven Independent Liberals and three of eight Independents could generally be counted on to support the Government, which thus had a precarious majority of seven.

Mr. Mackenzie King himself was defeated at Prince Albert, Saskatchewan, a seat he had held for nineteen years: he polled a 263 majority of civilian

**Mackenzie King** votes, but the service vote put him out by 129. In Saskatchewan, where a year earlier the

C.C.F. had gained a sweeping victory in the provincial elections (see page 3449), that party won 18 out of 21 seats in the Federal House. The C.C.F.'s other ten seats were five (out of 17, with 10 Liberal) in Manitoba; four out of 15 in British Columbia; and one in Nova Scotia. The Social Credit Party was successful only in Alberta, where it won 13 out of 17 seats. The Progressive Conservatives won a victory in Ontario, securing 48 seats to the Liberals' 34. A record number of candidates (965), including a record number of women (19), presented themselves to the electors; 430 lost their deposits. General McNaughton was again defeated; but the other members of Mr. King's Cabinet, with the exception of the newly appointed

Mr. D. L. McLaren, Minister of National Revenue, held their seats.

Mr. King (who was returned at a by-election at Glengarry on August 6) declared that the result showed that not only were most Canadians justly proud of their contribution to victory, but also recognized that the country's war effort had been wisely organized and directed, and had repudiated the



**CANADIAN CROSS**

Mothers or widows of all Canadian soldiers who gave their lives in the Second Great War received this silver cross from the Canadian Government. Each cross was accompanied by a personal note from the Canadian Minister of Defence, General A. G. L. McNaughton, saying 'This memorial cross is forwarded to you on behalf of the Government of Canada in memory of one who died in the service of his country.'

*Photo, P.N.A.*

efforts of those who had "ignored Parliament and Parliamentary methods" and sought by "high pressure" publicity to gain control of the Government. The Government interpreted the service vote (118,537 Liberal, 109,679 C.C.F., 86,530 Progressive Conservative) as showing lack of support for total conscription, favoured only by the Progressive Conservatives.

General McNaughton continued to be Minister of Defence until August 21, when he resigned to assume the chairmanship of the Canadian section of the Joint Permanent American-Canadian Defence Board: he had been a minister

for eight months—several of them the most critical in the history of the Canadian services—without a seat in the Federal Parliament. The only precedent was the case of Sir Wilfred Laurier who was Minister of Inland Revenue from October 1877 to February 1878 without a seat in the House of Commons.

Before Parliament was dissolved, however, the crisis caused by the difficulty of maintaining Canada's fighting forces at strength had been resolved: a reduction in the incidence of casualties among the Canadians in Europe during January and February, when the brunt of the fighting fell on the U.S. 1st and 3rd Armies and the British 2nd Army in the Ardennes, enabled the Minister of National Defence to issue a statement on March 7 that the reinforcement crisis was over. Six days later he told the press that the position overseas was so satisfactory that men with long service abroad could be relieved in greater numbers without affecting the army's fighting strength.

The 1st Canadian Army, formed to take part in the invasion of Normandy, and containing throughout its existence large numbers of British (see page 3567) and other Allied units, ceased to exist on June 30. It had liberated much of France, Belgium and the Netherlands. Its commander, General H. D. G. Crerar, C.H., C.B., D.S.O. (see plate facing page 3331), returned to Canada, the remaining Canadian forces in Europe, under the command of Lieutenant-General Guy Simonds, becoming known as Canadian Forces in the Netherlands. The total casualties among all Canadian forces on all fronts from September 3, 1939, to August 14, 1945, were 37,476 killed; 1,843 missing, 53,174 wounded, 9,045 prisoners of war—a total of 101,538.

The part Canada was to play in the Pacific was the subject of a statement by the Prime Minister in April. The forces employed would be volunteers, and "Canada's effort to maintain her just part in the further prosecution of the war against Japan will, as measured in numbers, necessarily be very much less than has been the case in the war in Europe." Speaking at Edmonton in May, he gave the forces for the

**End of First Canadian Army**





### BALLOON BOMBS FALL ON CANADA

Japanese long-distance balloon bombs were first reported over British Columbia and the prairie provinces of Canada on May 22, 1945. Carrying high explosive and incendiaries, they were able to stay aloft for about a week at a height of some five miles and to descend automatically. Above, one of over 350 balloons rendered harmless in Canada. The balloon was of tough paper; also shown is the 'chandelier,' carrying mechanism and bombs. *Photo, Paul Popper*

Pacific war as some 50,000 soldiers, 13,000 sailors, and an undetermined number of airmen. The Navy Minister, presenting the naval estimates in April, said that the naval unit which would take part in the Pacific war would include two cruisers, a number of destroyers and frigates, and, if the necessary arrangements for their acquisition could be made, two aircraft carriers Canadian-manned, but with airmen of the British Fleet Air Arm.

The arrival in Guam of Canadian troops and aircraft was announced in Washington on August 6, among the famous regiments mentioned being Princess Patricia's Light Infantry, the Seaforth Highlanders of Canada, the 48th Highland Regiment of Canada, and the Royal 22nd (French Canadian) Regiment.

An announcement in January by the Minister of Defence that the North Atlantic was "alive with U-boats," and that ships were being sunk daily caused serious alarm, not only in Canada; it was somewhat modified by the Navy Minister's statement of February 13 that although U-boat activity had been slightly greater during January, shipping losses both then and in December

had been less than in earlier times. There had been losses off the Canadian coast, but not "day by day."

Agreements signed in Ottawa on April 3 by Colonel Llewellyn, British

Minister of Food, and Mr. J. G. Gardiner, Minister of Agriculture, provided for the purchase in 1946 by Britain of not less than 450,000,000 lb. of Canadian bacon and ham, 60,000,000 lb. of beef, and all eggs available subject only to shipping space; three months later, Britain made an agreement to take all surplus eggs until the end of 1947. To help the United Nations' deficiency of sugar, Canada saved 184,000,000 lb. by cutting the civilian ration from June to October from 2 lb. to 1 lb. per month. To make supplies of meat available to liberated Europe, meat rationing, suspended on March 1, 1944, owing to a shipping "bottleneck," was reintroduced from September 10, the ration being 2 lb. of carcass meat a week—just under 1½ lb. of actual meat; Tuesdays and Fridays became meatless days in all Canadian restaurants from July 13. Canada's 1945 production of wheat suffered from severe drought—one of the factors in the world food crisis of 1946.

### Food Agreements with Britain

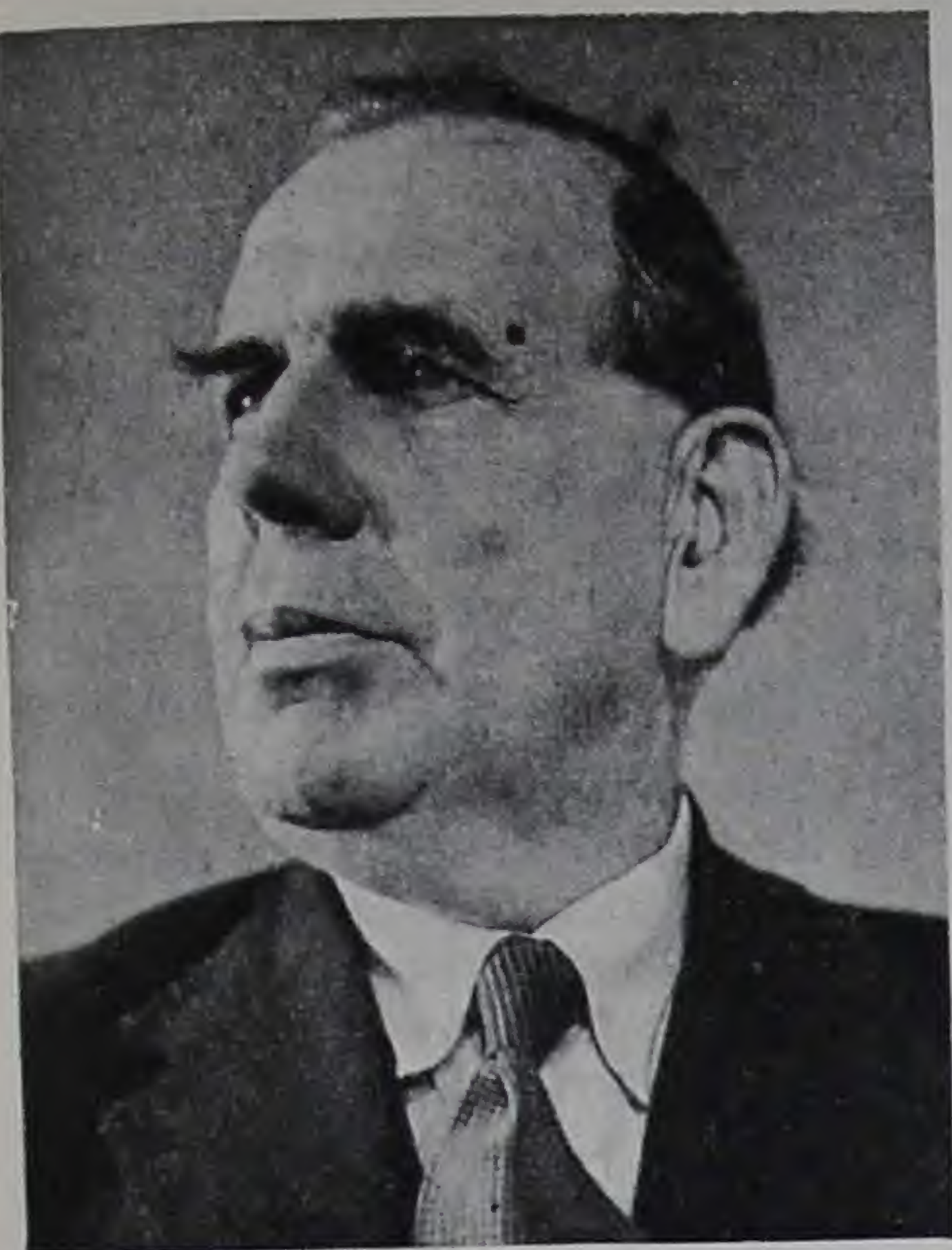
The Empire Air Training Scheme (see Chapter 132, and pages 588-9, 687, 776, 1184, 1187, 2202, and illus. in page 1962), established in 1940, was formally closed in Canada at a ceremony near Ottawa attended by the Governor-General, the Earl of Athlone, on March 29; some 125,000 airmen had passed through the 250 schools created and administered by Canadians in Canada. The Air Minister announced on April 5 that the Royal Canadian Air Force would be represented by a squadron in the air police force that would be required for the occupation of Germany.

### ALLIES PLANNED ICEBERG AIRFIELDS

How Britain, Canada and the U.S. planned to build mobile iceberg airfields weighing 2,000,000 tons each was not disclosed till February 1946. Under Operation 'Habakkuk,' it was intended to use them as advanced bases for anti-U-boat warfare. Main structural material was to be pykrete, which was about 86 per cent ice and 14 per cent wood pulp. Here, a workman at Lake Louise, Alberta, Canada, chips ice blocks for 'Habakkuk' beams during experimental work.







#### NEWFOUNDLAND GOVERNOR

On January 16, 1946, Mr. Gordon Macdonald, Regional Controller of the Lancashire, Cheshire and North Wales coal-producing areas since 1942, was appointed Governor of Newfoundland and knighted by the King. Sir Gordon succeeded Vice-Admiral Sir Humphrey Walwyn who had held the post since 1936.

*Photo, Keystone*

that the prolongation of the war must postpone the setting up of machinery to examine the constitutional future of the island, and made impossible any attempt to forecast its future economic circumstances. Parliament had expressed the view, shared by the Newfoundland people, that any pronouncement on the constitutional future depended for its validity on the chances of normal economic security.

In December the Prime Minister, Mr. Attlee, stated in the House of Commons that it had been decided to set up as early as possible in 1946 an elected National Convention of Newfoundlanders. Elections, held on June 21, were broadly on the basis of the former parliamentary constituencies, all adults being entitled to vote. The resulting convention had the following terms of reference: "To consider and discuss the changes that have taken place in the financial and economic situation of the island since 1934 and, bearing in mind the extent to which the high revenues of recent years have been due to wartime conditions, to examine the position of the country and to make recommendations to His Majesty's Government as to the possible future forms of government to be put before the people at a national referendum."

The Dominions Under-Secretary announced on February 13, 1945, that Newfoundland had lent Great Britain

to that date 12,300,000 dollars free of interest during the war.

The death on July 5 of Mr. John Curtin, Prime Minister of Australia since October 1941, and Minister of Defence since February 1942, brought Mr. Joseph Benedict

**AUSTRALIA** Chifley to the Premiership. Aged 60—the age at which Mr. Curtin had died after a long illness—Mr. Chifley had been an engine driver in early life. He was a close friend of Mr. Curtin, and the only change from Curtin's Cabinet in the new Government he announced on July 13 was the replacement of Senator Collings (then in his 80th year) by Mr. Johnston at the Ministry of the Interior.

On August 2, Mr. Arthur Calwell, Minister of Immigration, announced in the House of Representatives two draft agreements with the United Kingdom, one covering free passages for British ex-servicemen and women and their dependents, the second covering assisted passages for United Kingdom civilians not eligible for free passages. The Australian Government had also approved in principle a plan to bring out 50,000 orphans from Britain and other war-devastated countries in

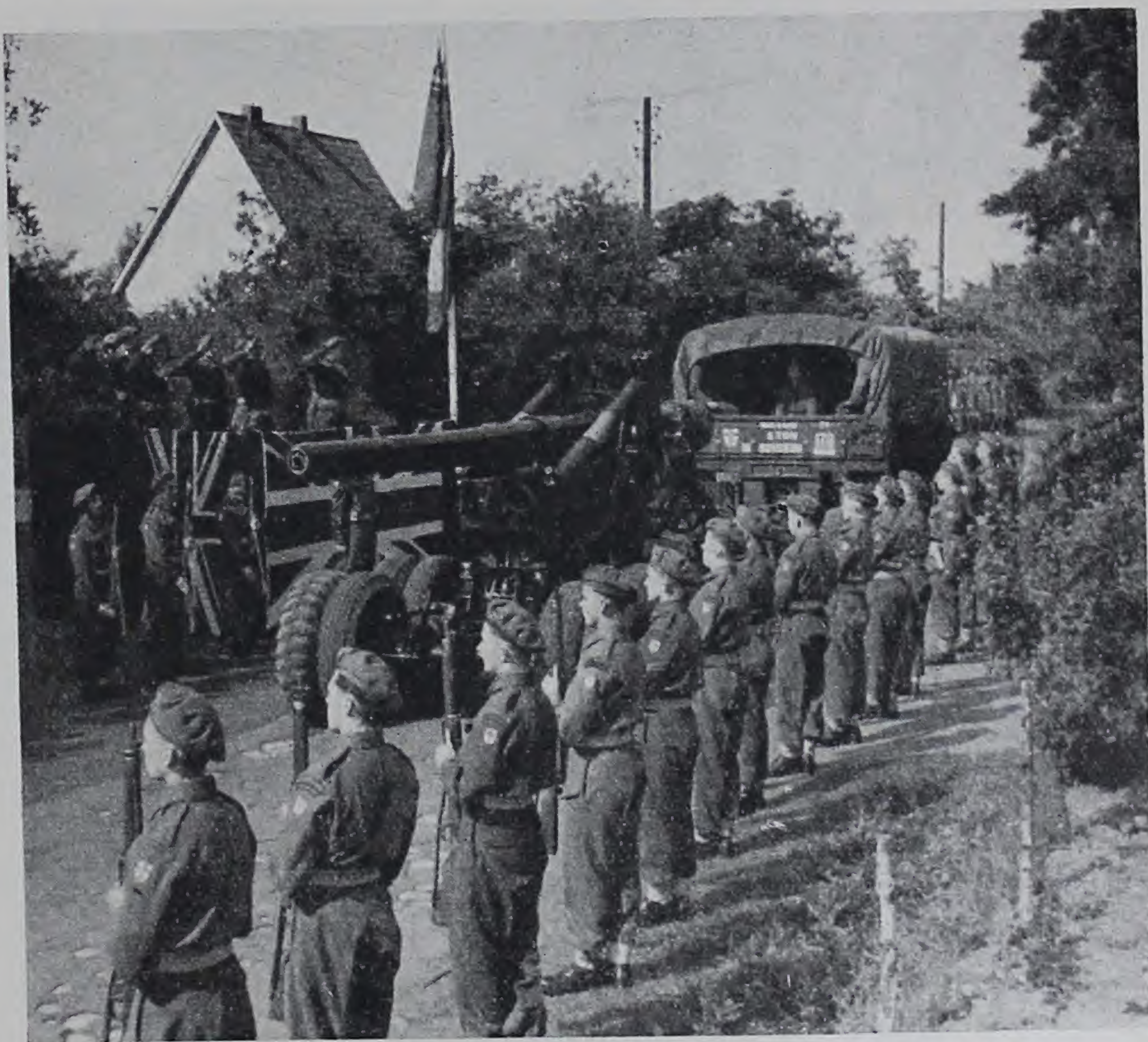
the first three years after the war. Australia, he said, was always open to healthy immigrants from the Dominions, the U.S.A., and Europe who would not become a charge on the community; but he emphasized that the maximum additional population Australia could absorb was about 140,000 per annum. As the average excess of births over deaths was about 70,000 per annum, this meant that annual immigration could not satisfactorily exceed 70,000. He also estimated that the re-settlement of Australian ex-servicemen and women and the provision of additional housing for them might take up to two years.

The Empire Air Training Scheme ended in Australia, as in Canada, (see page 3735) on March 29; it had turned out in Australia 35,000 fully trained airmen.

Egg rationing was introduced in Australia on February 26. The adult meat ration (averaging

2 lb. a week, excluding unrationed bacon, ham, offals, etc.), cut by 9 per cent on January 26, was cut by a further 12 per cent on May 7, when supplies to restaurants were also cut by 25 per cent. In announcing this second cut Mr. Chifley

#### Meat Ration Cut in Australia



#### NEWFOUNDLANDERS BID FAREWELL TO THEIR GUNS

The only Empire formation in the British 2nd Army, the 59th Newfoundland Heavy Regiment, R.A., formed in 1940, bade farewell on June 2, 1945, to the guns they had fought from the Normandy beaches to Hamburg. The ceremony took place at Bergedorf, near Hamburg, the inspection and salute being taken by Brigadier Francis Cleeve, D.S.O., M.C., commanding No. 3 Army Group, Royal Artillery (above). (See also illus. page 1182.) *Photo, Newfoundland Official*





### CANADA IN THE HEART OF EMPIRE

For over five years an office building in Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, housed the H.Q. in Britain of the Royal Canadian Air Force. At a civic ceremony on October 30, 1945, the northern side of the square, known for 300 years as Newman's Row, was renamed 'Canada Walk.' Here a name-plate is unveiled by a member of the Canadian W.A.A.F.

*Photo, Central Press*

With the closing of the 8th Victory Loan on May 12, 1945, Canada had raised in two War Loans and eight Victory Loans a total of 10,774,784,900 Canadian dollars (£2,410,466,910), exceeding the aggregate target figure of 8,600,000,000 dollars by 2,174,784,900 dollars. Her total wartime financial aid to Britain to September 2, 1945, was 4,600,000,000 dollars—ninety per cent

would pass from the United States Army to the Canadian Army on April 1, 1946. It was to be maintained for peacetime use. The total cost of building the road, from Fort St. John in British Columbia to Fairbanks in Alaska, had been 115,000,000 dollars.

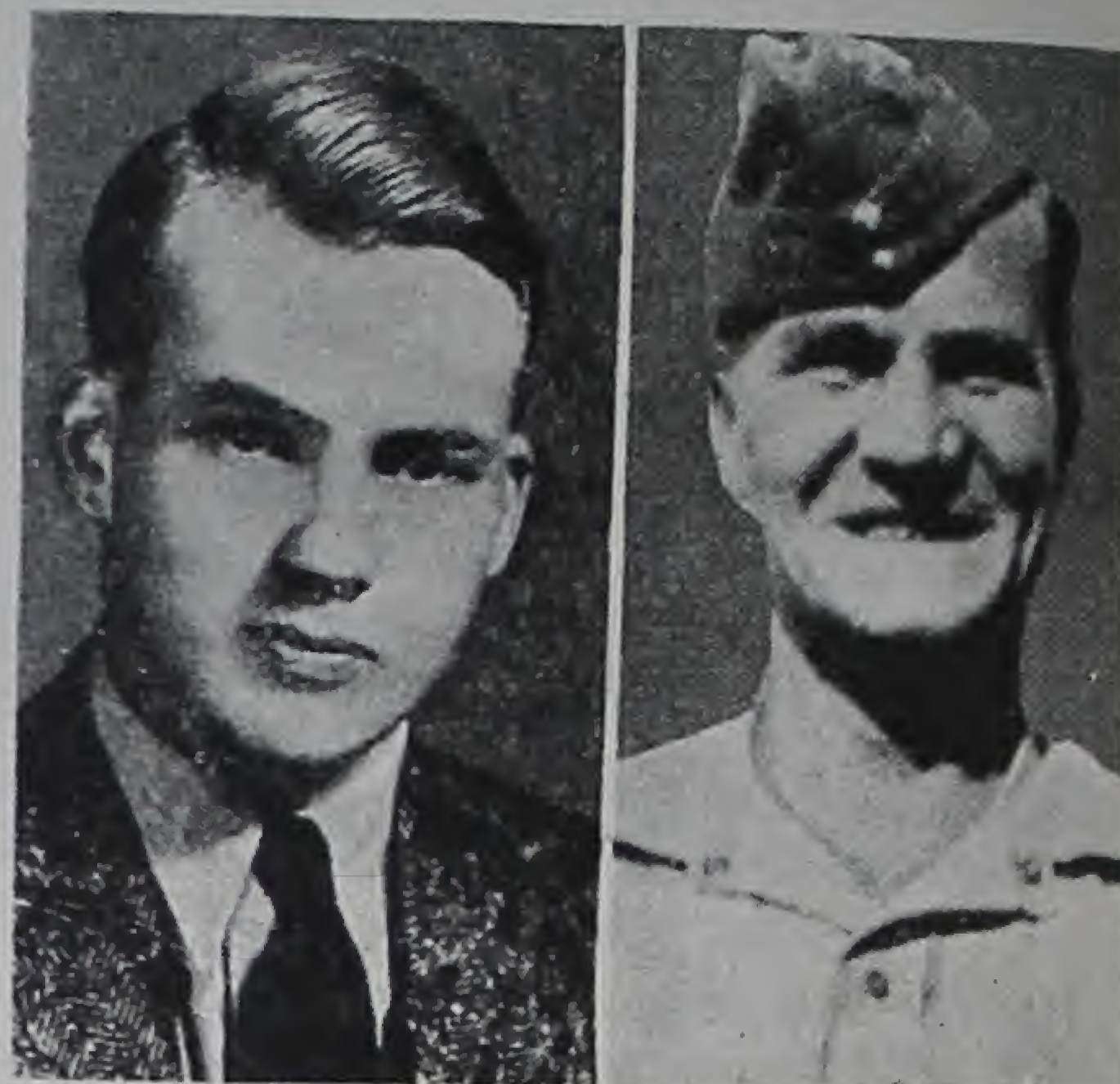
The Charter of the United Nations Food and Agricultural Organization was signed in Quebec on October 16 by

of her total aid to the Allies. In addition 200,000,000 dollars' worth of war plants in Canada had been bought from Britain, and 800,000,000 dollars' worth of securities had been repatriated to supply Britain with Canadian dollars.

It was announced on October 24 that responsibility for maintaining the Alaska Highway (see page 2319), built by the United States Army with Canadian assistance,

thirty nations, the Soviet delegation signing three days later. On October 28, Sir John Boyd Orr, the British nutrition expert, was appointed Director-General, and Syria and the Lebanon were admitted to membership. Canada ratified the United Nations Charter on October 25, and on December 12 the House of Commons approved, by 169 votes to nine, of participation in the Bretton Woods agreements.

When the Family Allowances Act (see page 3468) came into force on July 1, 1,273,755 families out of the estimated 1,467,000 had registered; in 3,644 families there were ten or more children under 16, in two fifteen or more. During the first month, the mothers in 1,237,754



**LT. GRAY, D.S.C.**  
(R.C.N.V.R.)

**C.S.M. OSBORN**  
(Winnipeg Grenadiers)

The V.C. was awarded posthumously to Lieutenant Robert Hampton Gray, D.S.C., a Canadian fighter pilot who, when serving in the British aircraft-carrier H.M.S. 'Formidable' on August 9, 1945, led an attack on enemy shipping in the bay of Onagawn Wan, Honshu (Japan). Though his aircraft was in flames, he pressed home the attack to destroy an enemy cruiser, sacrificing his life.

For displaying 'heroism and self-sacrifice' while serving with the Canadian forces in the defence of Hongkong in December 1941, Company Sergeant-Major John Robert Osborn was awarded the V.C. posthumously. After leading a desperate bayonet attack to capture Mount Bulter, Osborn threw himself on a hand grenade about to explode killing himself, but saving the lives of his comrades.

*Photos, British and Canadian Official*



### ALEXANDER, CANADA'S NEW GOVERNOR-GENERAL

On July 31, 1945, the King approved the appointment of Field-Marshal Sir Harold Alexander, Supreme Allied Commander in the Mediterranean, as Governor-General of Canada. Raised to the peerage in the New Year Honours of 1946, as Viscount Alexander of Tunis, of Errigal in the County of Donegal, he sailed to take up his appointment on April 5, 1946. He here inspects the R.C.A.F. guard of honour as he entered Parliament Buildings, Ottawa, for his installation.

*Photo, Keystone*

families, on behalf of 2,956,844 children under 16, actually received allowances, totalling 17,560,934 dollars (about £3,900,000).

The appointment of Field-Marshal Sir Harold Alexander, Supreme Allied Commander in the Mediterranean, to succeed the Earl of Athlone as Governor-General of Canada was announced on July 31.

The status of Newfoundland (see page 2801) came up for discussion in the House of Lords (London) in January 1945, when Lord Cranborne, Secretary of State for the Dominions, said

**NEWFOUND-  
LAND**



said "the choice facing Australia is either to cut the present rate of consumption or cut down on export to Britain. But to reduce supplies to Britain at present would be unthinkable, and every Australian will share that opinion." Later in the same month, Mr. Scully, Minister of Agriculture, said that Australia viewed the position in Britain "with grave concern" and that she would do "all humanly possible to maintain our commitments to Britain," but food production was being gravely hampered by the worst drought in the history of Australia. All restrictions on clothing were removed on September 27.

A conference of the United Nations Relief and Rehabilitation Administration opened at Lapstone on February 15. It urged the participating governments to establish immediately depots for medical supplies to be sent quickly wherever they were needed, and to set up more forward bases close behind the military lines. It also decided that

the principle of medical officers entering relief areas with adequate supplies should be adopted by all governments. A resolution moved by Dr. Evatt, Australian Minister for External Affairs, that relief should go to areas immediately they were liberated was passed unanimously.

Australia, to which the Japanese menace had come so close, celebrated V.J. Day (August 15) with wild rejoicing. Ships in harbour were illuminated, crowds danced in the streets of the leading cities, great victory parades were staged in Sydney and Melbourne. Mr. Chifley made a nation-wide broadcast in which he declared that the unstinted thanks of all free people were due to Mr. Churchill, President Roosevelt, Marshal Stalin and Generalissimo Chiang. "Especially do we honour Mr. Churchill," he said, "with whom we had the honour to stand alone against aggression." In a message to General MacArthur, he said, "Australia is deeply indebted to you for your

wonderful courage and devotion." A loyal Address of Congratulation, moved by Mr. Chifley and seconded by Mr. Menzies, leader of the Opposition, was adopted by Parliament on August 29.

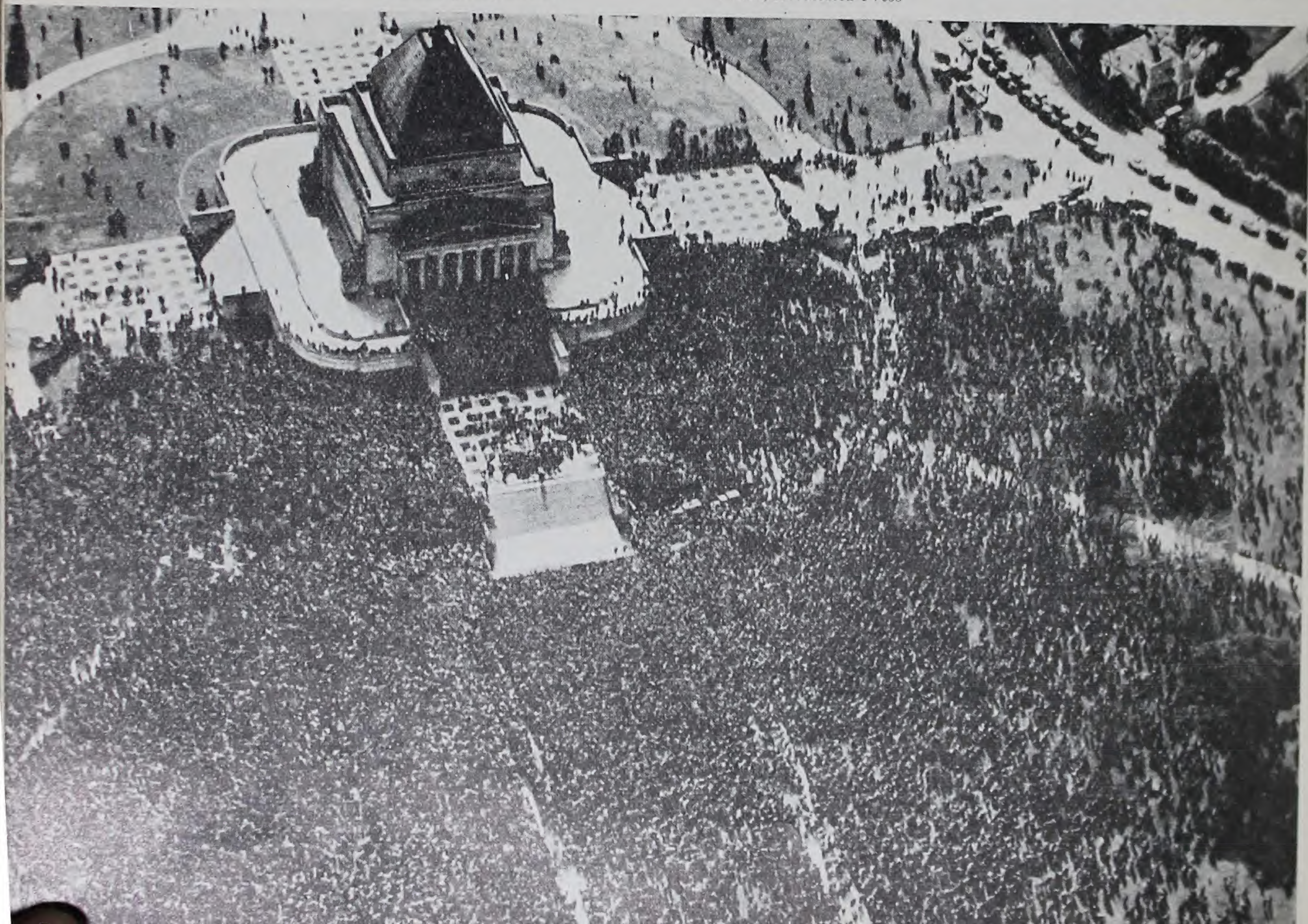
On August 17 the Prime Minister announced that the War Cabinet had told the British Government that Australia, as a principal Pacific Power, wished to furnish a force to participate in the occupation of Japan, and to share with the United Kingdom the responsibility for command in the South-West Pacific. General MacArthur and the United States Minister in Canberra, to whom the Australian claim for representation at the Japanese surrender was referred, acceded to the claim, said Dr. Evatt on August 24, "in recognition of the outstanding part Australia had played in the war against Japan."

Australian ships took part in most of the major, as well as many minor, engagements of the Pacific war, and they assisted U.S. landings at Arawe and Cape Gloucester (New Britain), Aitape and Hollandia (New Guinea), Wake Island, Biak Island, Morotai (Halmaheras) and Leyte (Philippines).

#### MELBOURNE'S V.J. THANKSGIVING SERVICE

Australia celebrated V.J. Day (August 15, 1945) and her final freedom from the Japanese menace with wild rejoicings. Ships in harbour were illuminated, crowds danced in the streets, great victory parades were staged in Sydney and Melbourne. The Prime Minister, Mr. Chifley, delivered a nation-wide broadcast. Below, the vast crowds gather outside Melbourne's Shrine of Remembrance for the public thanksgiving service.

*Photo, Associated Press*







### AUSTRALIA'S PREMIER

Mr. Joseph Benedict Chifley's selection as Prime Minister of Australia in succession to Mr. John Curtin, who died on July 5, 1945, was announced a week later. Born in 1885, Mr. Chifley was leader of the Australian Labour Party. An engine-driver in early life, he became Commonwealth Treasurer in 1941.

*Photo, Central Press*

Australian soldiers, many of them veterans from the fighting in Egypt, Libya and Greece, were mainly responsible for the land operations which brought about the reconquest of New Guinea; they served in the Philippines, and landed in Borneo, Celebes and Timor. When in November 1944 they took over from the Americans complete responsibility for New Guinea and the Solomons, the Japanese still held all Bougainville except the Torokina sector on the west coast (then slightly smaller than the area the Australians held for eight months at Tobruk) and a few other areas. By July 25, 1945, the Australians had reconquered 3,000 square miles (see Chapter 351).

An act to restore civil government in Papua and mandated New Guinea south of the Markham River (temporarily amalgamated under one administration until six months after the war) was

### Civil Government Again in Papua

passed by the House of Representatives on July 20. Most of the settlements in New Guinea and many in Papua, an area with a native population of about a million, had been destroyed.

General Sir Thomas Blamey, C-in-C. Australian Military Forces, represented Australia at the formal surrender of Japan in Tokyo Bay. An announcement of October 26 said that a detachment of 1,500 volunteers was to take part in the occupation of Japan. General V. A. H. Sturdee, who, as commander

of the Australian 1st Army received the Japanese surrender in the South-West Pacific (see page 3602), in December succeeded General Blamey as C-in-C. Australian Military Forces pending their subsequent control, as before the war, by a Military Board.

Out of a population of 7,200,000, Australia provided close on a million men for full time service in the fighting forces, and 60,000 women in the auxiliary forces. Two out of three men between 18 and 40 served full time in one of the fighting services. Casualties from September 3, 1939 to August 8, 1945—78,086 in the army, 14,629 in the Air Force, 2,816 in the Navy—were 23,365 killed, 6,030 missing, 39,803 wounded, 26,363 prisoners of war. Australians won over 11,000 war decorations.

In August the War Cabinet decided that demobilization should begin not later than October 1, and on September 20 it was announced that 200,000 men would be released before the end of January 1946. The Advisory War Council was dissolved on August 30. The cost of the war to Australia to the middle of 1945 was £A2,110,000,000 or approximately £A287 10s. per head of the population. By January 26, 1945, twelve public loans totalling £A772,000,000 had been raised, and a further loan was opened in March.

A new graving dock, the "Captain Cook" dock, big enough to accommodate the largest battleships or liners such as the "Queen Elizabeth"—one of the largest docks in the world, and the only one of its size in the south Pacific—was opened by the Governor-General at Sydney on March 24 (see illus. in page 3451). First conceived in

### FOOD FOR BRITAIN

Towards the end of 1945, gifts of foodstuffs were shipped from Australia under a 'Food for Britain' campaign. On November 25, the aircraft-carrier 'Unicorn' sailed from Sydney with over 400 tons of food, including 15,000 lb. of sweets and chocolates for British children. Here British naval ratings at Sydney load more gift-food on H.M.S. 'Nepal.'

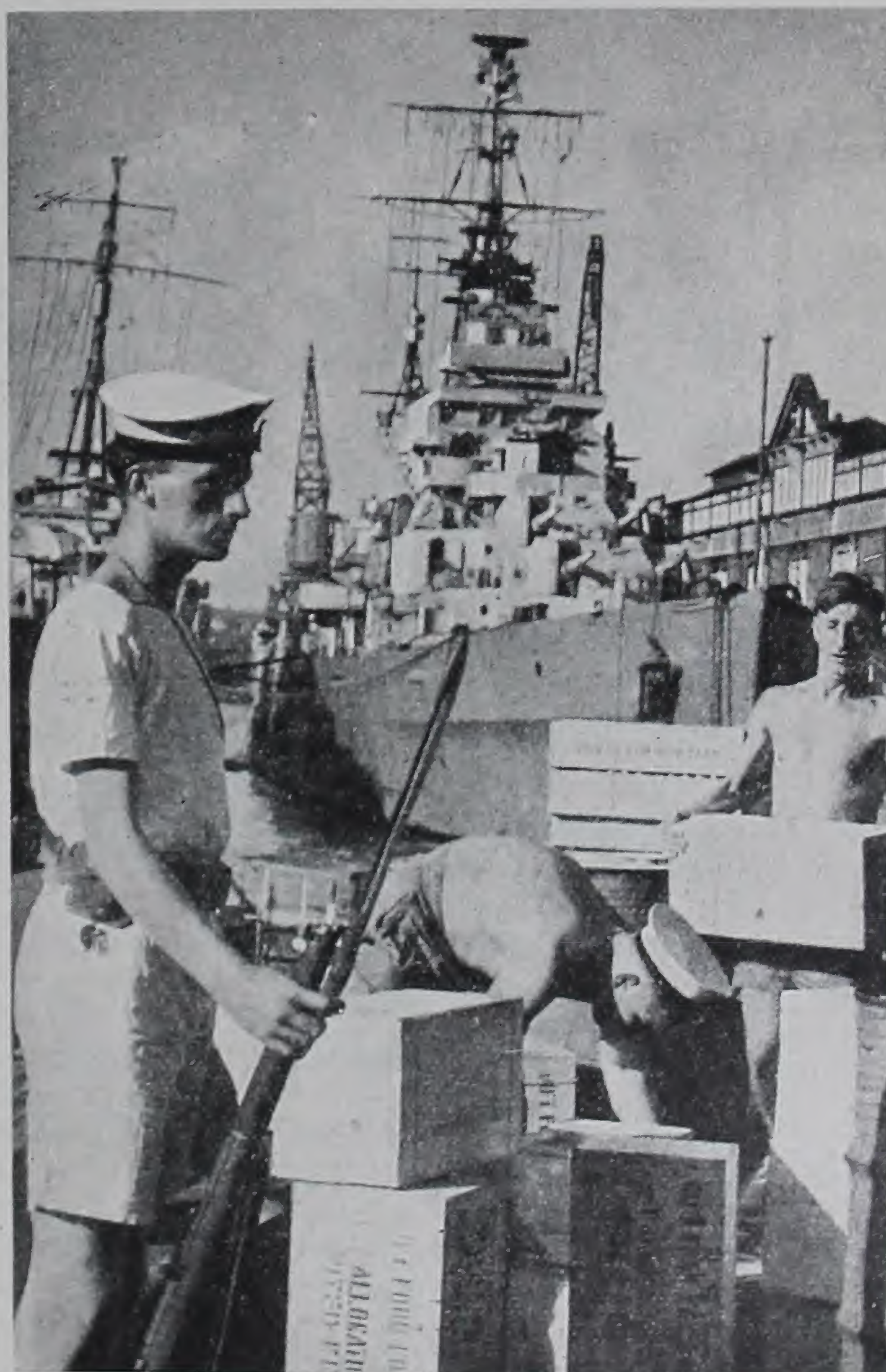
*Photo, Planet News*

1938, it was under construction when Singapore fell, after which it was rushed to completion five years ahead of schedule. Constructed of local stone, it was completed by machinery and equipment made in Britain and shipped to Australia without loss at the height of the U-boat campaign.

Australia ratified the United Nations Charter on September 19.

The announcement was made on September 4 that H.M. the King had approved the appointment of the popular Lieutenant-General Sir Bernard Freyberg, V.C. (see **NEW ZEALAND** page 3443) to be

Governor-General of New Zealand in succession to Marshal of the R.A.F. Sir Cyril Newall. Born in London, brought up and educated in New Zealand, General Freyberg fought in Gallipoli and in France during the First Great War, winning his V.C. at Beaumont Hamel. He retired on account of ill-health in 1937, but returned to active service in 1939 to command the New Zealand Expeditionary Force which he led in Greece. He superintended the evacuation of Allied forces to Crete, where he was Allied C-in-C. in 1941. He and his





division (New Zealand 2nd) served with the 8th Army throughout the campaigns in North Africa and in Italy, where they particularly distinguished themselves at Cassino. Crossing the Isonzo on May 1, New Zealanders reached Monfalcone, making there the first link with Marshal Tito's Yugoslav forces in Venezia Giulia, and on May 2 they received the surrender of the Germans in Trieste (*see* page 3718).

To increase exports to Britain, by an estimated 1,500 tons of meat and 5,000 tons of butter annually, the weekly meat ration was cut in June from 1s. 9d. worth to 1s. 6d. worth, butter ration from 8 ozs. to 6 ozs.

The House of Representatives ratified the United Nations Charter and the constitution of the Court of International Justice on August 7.

Total New Zealand casualties of the war were 10,033 killed, 2,129 missing, 19,314 wounded, 8,453 prisoners of war.

After the cessation of hostilities in Europe, Sir Pierre van Ryneveld, Chief of the South African General Staff, broadcast on May 9 an account of the part played by South Africa in the war. In September 1939 the Union possessed

the disasters of Sidi Resegh and Tobruk, South Africa had over two divisions in the field, and her field strength remained at the equivalent of two divisions—the 6th Armoured Division of some 22,000 Europeans (including 1,500 Rhodesians) and 3,000 non-Europeans, and another division made up of about 140 Specialist Units (Engineers, Signals, etc.) totalling 21,000 Europeans and 16,000 non-Europeans. The S.A.A.F. grew to a maximum of 34 squadrons (considerably larger than the R.A.F. a few years before the war), and the South African Naval Forces, including 3,000 personnel seconded from the Royal Navy, manned 64 vessels. In May 1945 the Union's Defence Forces totalled 175,000 Europeans, 75,000 non-Europeans plus 35,000 well trained and well equipped



#### AUSTRALIA'S VICTORY

Among the nine Allied signatories to the Japanese surrender instrument on board the U.S.S. 'Missouri' in Tokyo Bay on September 2, 1945, was General Sir Thomas Blamey, C.-in-C. Australian Land Forces (left), to whom all enemy troops in Borneo, British New Guinea and the Bismarck-Solomons area had been ordered to surrender. Above, Australia's contingent in the British Commonwealth Occupation Force lands at Kure, Japan.

*Photos, British Official; Keystone*



outstanding leadership of Major-General Dan Pienaar they formed the spearhead of the successful British campaign which freed Abyssinia (*see* Chapter 164). The same South African forces were largely responsible for stopping Rommel at El Alamein in June 1942 (*see* Chapter 224). The South African 6th Armoured Division served throughout North Africa and formed an important part of the highly cosmopolitan army with which Field-Marshal Alexander finished the campaign in Italy.

All those who joined the armed forces of South Africa were volunteers. The total number who served was 354,049, made up of 197,820 European men, 24,975 European women, and 122,254 non-European men. They won 4,537 awards, including four V.C.s. Total casualties were 6,840 killed, 1,841 missing, 14,363 wounded, 14,589 prisoners.

one Fairey aeroplane, one Bristol Blenheim, six Hurricanes, four anti-aircraft guns, and a few hundred bren guns. Within a

#### SOUTH AFRICA

few weeks, Field-Marshal Smuts, the Premier, approved of plans for raising a field army of two divisions, an air force of 35 squadrons, and a fleet of 51 vessels of the mine-sweeping and anti-submarine types—a programme requiring the recruiting of 120,000 European personnel. Before

officers and men serving part time.

At the beginning of the war £14,000,000 worth of vehicles were ordered, mostly from Canada, and safely delivered. When in the middle of 1940 Union troops went to East Africa, there was not sufficient shipping to take them, and they therefore went the whole way by road, 11,000 vehicles and 30,000 men being moved 4,000 miles along the Great North Road through Central Africa to the Abyssinian frontier, where under the



The 6th Armoured Division returned to South Africa after the surrender of the Germans in Italy, but 12 S.A.A.F. squadrons, with engineer, signal, transport, workshop and security units, remained in the Mediterranean area to maintain and safeguard lines of communication to the Far East.

On September 10, Mr. Strauss, Minister of Agriculture, announced that the Union Government had offered cheese, dried fruit, citrus fruits, jam

#### Fruit and other Foods for Britain

and other foods, to the value of about £6,000,000 to Britain during 1945, and that 43,000 cases of meat and sugar had been earmarked for U.N.R.R.A., but that the amount of food that the Union could make available to Britain, the Netherlands and other countries would be affected by the prevailing drought over a large part of South Africa.

The appointment of Major Gideon Brand van Zyl to be Governor-General from January 1, 1946, was announced on October 28. Major van Zyl, a lawyer, aged 72, was the first Union-born man to be appointed Governor-General. He sat in the House of Assembly from 1918-1942, and was appointed Administrator of Cape Province in 1942. On his taking up office, Mr. N. J. de Wet, appointed Officer Administering the Government in 1943 (see page 2806), would relinquish that appointment.

Field-Marshal Smuts attended the San Francisco conference (see Chapter 381) as South Africa's representative, and was mainly responsible for the drafting of the preamble to the Charter. On his return to South Africa, in a speech at Pretoria on July 21, he described the Charter as "a declaration of war against war" in which the higher law of humanity was laid down in unmistakable terms. The Union Government ratified the Charter by executive action on October 9.

The wartime Coalition Government broke up when Mr. B. Madeley, Minister of Labour and leader of the South African Labour Party, tendered his resignation in October; at the same time the nine other Labour members of the Assembly went into opposition. The Dominion Party decided also to withdraw at its congress in Durban on November 20, a decision involving the resignation of Colonel Stallard, Minister of Mines. On November 28, Smuts paid tribute for invaluable service to the Union rendered by Mr. Madeley and Colonel Stallard, and added, "The Coalition was a great success. Our opponents prophesied it was a house built on sand, but it stood for six years

through the storm and we have parted good friends."

In his broadcast on V.J. Day, Field-Marshal Smuts said, "It is the greatest occasion for thanksgiving that at the very moment in history when man has produced a weapon with which he can destroy himself this greatest of wars has come to an end, and an opportunity is thus granted to humanity so to order the affairs of the world in future that no human agency shall ever again bring war upon mankind." A proclamation of October 5 vested in the State the sole right to search or prospect for uranium or thorium, or to mine, dispose of or isolate from any substance or export these substances, and laid it down that every person who had discovered or might discover uranium or thorium must immediately notify the authorities.

"Southern Rhodesia's war effort, and the presence on the world's battle-fronts and in all arms of Rhodesians who have been worthy ambassadors of their country, have aroused an interest in this country in thousands of people to whom, hitherto,

#### NEW ZEALAND CELEBRATES VICTORY IN EUROPE

While in Australia celebration of victory in Europe (May 8, 1945) was subdued—it being emphasized that for Australian fighting forces there remained elimination of the Japanese—in New Zealand V.E. Day meant the return of the victorious New Zealand 2nd Division from the battlefields of Italy. Below, a section of the great crowd which surged through the grounds of Government Buildings in Wellington, New Zealand, on V.E. Day.

*Photo, Sport & General*





# STEPPING-STONES TO JAPAN'S MAINLAND

*This chapter continues the history of the war in the Pacific from Chapter 322, and covers the American conquest of Luzon in the Philippines, Iwo Jima in the Volcano Islands, and Okinawa in the Ryukyus—the last bringing the Allies to a distance of only 750 miles from Tokyo. Its author, the distinguished war correspondent Mr. A. D. Divine, O.B.E., D.S.M., served with the forces which carried out these successive invasions*

ON February 4, 1945, twenty-six days after the landing under General MacArthur's personal command of Lieutenant-General Krueger's 6th Army in Lingayen Gulf, MacArthur's forces entered Manila. In those twenty-six days they had advanced 115 miles. Inevitably the interest of this campaign before Manila lies primarily in the reasons for its almost staggering speed. Between the landing at Lingayen and the crossing of the Pasig River there was no battle, no major clash of armed forces. There was, in point of fact, to be no major battle commensurate with the size of the forces potentially engaged throughout the whole campaign of Luzon.

To arrive at the reason for this it is necessary to go farther back than the landings on Lingayen Gulf. The whole campaign of the Philippines must be looked upon as an exercise in sea power, an exercise in which the

**LUZON** American command grasped to the full the potentialities of the combination of weapons, and in which the Japanese showed themselves, to a degree almost incomprehensible, without grasp of the realities and without knowledge of their advantages. The Philippines were lost to the Japanese long before General MacArthur ever landed in Lingayen Gulf. They were lost when the Japanese Fleet, with its ancillary air and with the potential advantage of its shore-based air, failed to prevent the American Fleet, under the direction of Fleet-Admiral Nimitz and the command of Admiral Halsey, from raiding at will from Cape Engano to Mindanao.

To make that defeat doubly sure, the Japanese command fought a campaign thereafter of complete inco-ordination of arms, exemplified by the successive stupidities of the Battle for Leyte Gulf (see page 3402) and the attempts to reinforce Leyte (see page 3401). By the time Mindoro came into American hands (see page 3275) the Japanese on Luzon were already in parlous plight. Their hope of seaborne reinforcement had disappeared with the destructive defeat of the Japanese Fleet on October 24 and 25. They were faced with an enemy overwhelmingly superior at sea, in the

air and on the land. Their force, weakened by the useless sending of reinforcements to Leyte, was hopelessly small to defend an island 500 miles in length from north to south and poorly provided with internal communications.

The Americans extracted the last possible benefit from their command of the sea. By elaborate feinting in the Verde Islands Passage, south of Manila Bay, they created in the mind of General Tomoyuki Yamashita the impression that they intended to land in the Batangas area. Then, moving north with the speed that can be achieved only by ship-borne arms, they descended early on January 9 upon Lingayen.

Yamashita's defensive plan was never to become clear. It seemed almost that he had no plan. Colonel Harisbi Hashimoto, Chief of Staff of the Japanese forces in Manila, stated in evidence before the U.S. Military Commission that the landing was made two months ahead of Japanese expectations. There was a concentration to the south of Manila in some hope, apparently, of staving off the expected invasion there. There was no defence of the Lingayen Gulf. The invasion fleet of 850 ships came in to the beaches without the loss of a single transport, and the 14th Army Corps was disembarked with the loss of very few men on the southern shore, while the 1st Army Corps landed unopposed at Damortis.

What interference there was in the landings came from airmen of the Kamikaze Corps (suicide pilots) who, during the preliminary bombardment and the necessary mine-sweeping operations, caused heavy damage and some loss to the Luzon Attack Force under Admiral Kinkaid. What Japanese forces there were in the vicinity of Lingayen and in the great central plain withdrew to the surrounding mountains. With two divisions, General MacArthur and General Krueger blocked any hopes Yamashita had of fighting a campaign from the Caraballo Mountains. Another division covered the enemy forces which hovered on the right flank. The U.S. 37th Infantry moved down the central plain upon Manila (see map in page 3744).

From the Caraballo Mountains Yamashita sent in his exiguous armour. It is necessary here to remember that Japanese armour in the East was throughout the reconquest quantitatively inferior and qualitatively almost negligible. It is improbable that General Yamashita had more than 300 tanks in the whole of the Luzon area. Two hundred of those were wasted in attack ill-devised against an enemy prepared and wholly superior in anti-tank weapons.

By January 11, the 37th was only 88 miles from Manila. On the 25th it was

**Exiguous  
Enemy  
Armour**

## FILIPINOS GREET U.S. LIBERATORS

When Lieutenant-General Krueger's U.S. 6th Army went ashore in Lingayen Gulf, north-west Luzon, 129 miles north of Manila, on January 9, 1945, and seized four important beaches, they encountered negligible enemy resistance. Below, Filipinos race across the sands to greet their American liberators. Lingayen Gulf was the scene of Japanese landings on December 22, 1941 (see page 1976).

*Photo, Keystone*





Southern Rhodesia has been but a name," said Sir Godfrey Huggins, Prime Minister of Southern Rhodesia. Some idea of that war effort is given in the following facts:

Out of a total European population in 1940 of just under 69,000, of whom some 19,000 were men of military age (18-45), over 10,000 (including 1,400 women) served full-time with the military forces of the British Commonwealth—8,000 in the Army, nearly 2,000 (including two Rhodesia squadrons) in the Royal Air Force, and 350 with the Royal Navy. Fatal casualties were rather more than six per cent of the enlisted personnel.

The Rhodesia Fighter Squadron of the R.A.F. went into action at Dunkirk on June 2, 1940, and served continuously during the Battle of Britain, fighting both day and night battles. It carried out, in 1942, the first Typhoon attack on enemy territory. A Rhodesia Bomber Squadron served with Bomber Command.

The first station of the Empire Air Training Scheme to be ready anywhere in the Commonwealth was opened in

May 1940 in Southern Rhodesia, which eventually had ten stations.

Both prices and consumption were controlled by the Government, and a Government Food Production Committee helped to increase agricultural production, particularly of maize, wheat, potatoes and ground-nuts. Butter was rationed (at amounts varying according to supply of from a quarter of a pound to half a pound per head per week), and it was made an offence to eat an egg between 4 p.m. and 5 a.m., but thanks to the efforts of her farmers, Southern Rhodesia was able to maintain a good diet standard throughout the war. The Government set up two factories to turn out essential war material, women entering industry in considerable numbers. Southern Rhodesian industry provided the Eastern Group Supply Council with a wide variety of goods, including military boots (55,000 pairs in 1943, 440,000 pairs in 1944-45), ingot tin and 28,000 tons of timber. Southern Rhodesian mines produced chrome, asbestos, mica, tungsten, tantalite and coal to meet the Allied needs.

Southern Rhodesia's war effort was



#### SMUTS AT SAN FRANCISCO

Field-Marshal Jan Smuts, South Africa's Prime Minister, was responsible for drafting the preamble to the Charter adopted by the United Nations Conference on International Organization which opened in San Francisco on April 25, 1945. Over a quarter of a century before he had helped to draft the League of Nations Covenant. He is seen here on arrival at San Francisco.

*Photo Keystone*



#### SOUTH AFRICAN ARMOURD FORCES 'MARCH PAST'

At the famous Monza motor-racing track, north-east of Milan, a 'march past' was held in May 1945 of the entire South African 6th Armoured Division which had played such a vital part throughout the Mediterranean campaign. The salute was taken by Commodore F. C. Sturrock, Minister of Railways and Harbours and Acting Minister of Defence for the Union of South Africa.

*Photo British Official*

financed entirely from home resources by a population of some 69,000 Europeans and 1,350,000 Africans of low productive capacity, to whom a "tickey" (3d.) meant approximately as much as 5s. to a European. Her last pre-war budget amounted to £5,300,000; the figure for 1944-45 was more than £10,000,000. From the outbreak of war up to the end of March 1945 she spent a total of £25,988,000 on war purposes alone, besides maintaining and in some cases developing her administrative and civilian services.

#### S. Rhodesia's Wartime Finance

An announcement of importance for Southern Rhodesia's future was that made on April 4, 1945, by the Colonial Office of the constitution of the recently created Standing Central African Council (*see* page 3454). Its members were the Governor of Southern Rhodesia, Vice-Admiral Sir Campbell Tait (chairman); the Governors of Northern Rhodesia, Sir John Waddington, and of Nyasaland, Sir Edmund Richards; and the Prime Minister of Southern Rhodesia, Sir Godfrey Huggins; with nine others, three each appointed by Waddington, Richards, and Huggins. It held its first meeting in Salisbury, capital of Southern Rhodesia, on April 24.





### RECAPTURE OF THE PHILIPPINE CAPITAL

Manila, capital of the Philippines, was entered by U.S. forces from three sides on February 4, 1945, when opposition was met from enemy snipers. After blowing up the Quezon and Ayala bridges across the Pasig River (1), fanatical Japanese continued to hold out in Intramuros, the old walled city on the south bank. It was not till February 24, after bloody fighting, that Intramuros finally fell—four days after its 40-foot walls had been breached by artillery (4). U.S. infantry patrolled the streets on the look-out for snipers (2); while homeless Filipinos sought safety behind the U.S. lines (3). *Photos, U.S. Official and Signal Corps; Paul Popper*





announced that U.S. troops had captured Clark airfield and the nearby Fort Stotsenberg. Not until they reached the subdivided river beds of the Pampanga area was there even serious demolition to impede their progress. The only holding action of the slightest importance was the Japanese attempt half-way between Lingayen and the capital to establish positions on a spur of the Zambales range where the plain narrows to a waist at Bamban.

Meanwhile, with that fluidity of base line which absolute amphibious power gives to a commander, General MacArthur had prepared fresh landings near Subic Bay on the far side of the momentous battleground of Bataan, and at Nasugbu in the area of the original feint—from which any forces originally concentrated there had long been withdrawn—new U.S. troops went into action.

The denial of Manila Bay to General MacArthur was the sole military advan-

tage left within Yamashita's purview. If he could have kept the Americans out of that harbour he could have at least hoped to postpone for a little the "build-up" of the forces for the invasion of Japan. But he could not keep them out. There was left for the Japanese nothing save guerilla warfare.

By February 6 Manila was under American control, and by the 8th American infantry of the 37th Division were across the Pasig River co-operating with the 11th Airborne Division, which had reached the city from the southward, in a final clearance. The Japanese, compressed into the intricate area of the Intramuros, the ancient Spanish walled city, were making a last stand.

By February 21 the Japanese holdings had been compressed to an area less than half a mile long and only 500 yards wide, and General MacArthur announced that 16,000 Japanese dead had been counted

#### Japanese Last Stand at Intramuros

in Manila since the battle began on February 4. At the same time he stated that 92,000 Japanese had been killed in the six weeks that had followed the landings at Lingayen, while American casualties were 2,676 killed and some 10,000 wounded. The figures of Japanese dead must be accepted with some reserve, but the almost incredible disparity between the totals of dead—2,000 as against almost 100,000—can indicate one thing only—the overwhelming strength of the American forces, a strength in aircraft, guns, tanks, armoured vehicles and ammunition infinitely beyond anything the Japanese could hope to summon.

The Intramuros fighting was a traditional "last stand." It was, however, the last stand of a section only—Yamashita's main army was scattered north-west and east of the capital. The west in these days was cleaned up: Bataan, of terrible memory, was overrun in a remorseless return (February 16); Corregidor was battered into silence and captured a few hours later. As the Intramuros fell (February 24),

#### U.S. LANDINGS ON LUZON

Under the personal command of General MacArthur, the U.S. 6th Army on January 9, 1945 landed at Lingayen on Luzon, largest of the Philippines, and established four beach-heads. The route of the invasion convoy is shown on the left. Three weeks later further landings were effected near Subic Bay and at Nasugbu.







### 'OLD GLORY' HOISTED AGAIN AT CORREGIDOR IN THE PHILIPPINES

In Luzon on February 16, 1945, the recapture of Bataan was followed within a few hours by the landing on Corregidor of U.S. parachute troops and infantry. Twelve days later, General MacArthur announced from Manila that the last remnants of the enemy garrison on Corregidor had been eliminated. To mark the return of U.S. troops, the Allied commander here salutes the Stars and Stripes run up on the same flagstaff from which it was hauled down by the Japanese on May 6, 1942 (inset). In the background are troops of the U.S. 503rd Parachute Regiment.



Yamashita played his last card in Manila, standing astride the city's water supplies in the hills towards the east. Swiftly these small holding forces were dislodged. The campaign degenerated into a series of mopping-up operations north and north-east in the high mountains of the Sierra Madre. It was still incomplete when Japan surrendered.

The campaign of the Philippines was a story of overwhelming force brought against an enemy incompetent by reason of numerical inferiority, deficiency of supplies and equipment,

**IWO JIMA** and uninspired leadership to defend his chosen terrain. On Iwo Jima the enemy had an ample sufficiency of men for adequate defence. He had, for the special nature of his defence, sound material, his leadership and his planning were good, and he had all the advantage of what was probably the strongest defensive terrain utilized in the Second Great War.

Iwo Jima is the centre island of the three tiny specks of the Volcano group. It is shaped like a leg of mutton, five miles long, with the crater of Suribachi poised upon the exposed end of the bone. The cone itself is not more than 500 feet high. The main island rises in the centre not more than 300 feet, but that 300 feet is seamed, scored, honeycombed with excoriated volcanic vents. Hundreds of natural caves communicate

with deep sulphur-exuding tunnels. Steep and broken gulleys cut across the surface; ragged sea cliffs surround it. Only in the triangle to the south is there level sand, and even the sand is utterly treacherous: fine, shifting, black pumice dust in which a man cannot dig a fox-hole, in which the beaches are a quicksand. Only on these beaches could a landing be effected.

The importance of Iwo Jima lay in one thing only—the possibility of its use as a base from which long-range fighters could cover the Super Fortresses on their missions to Japan. To the Japanese it had already ceased, under a succession of air attacks from Saipan, to be an effective base either for offence or defence. It was 750 miles south of Tokyo.

The plan for the attack, which was under the overall command of Vice-Admiral Spruance, provided for a three-day bombardment of the tiny island combined with heavy bombing attacks and sustained raiding by ship-borne aircraft. The main weight of the bombardment was, however, to come from a force of seven of the older battleships—subsequently increased—supplemented by a strong force of cruisers, destroyers and gunboats. The known defences of the island included 6-inch and

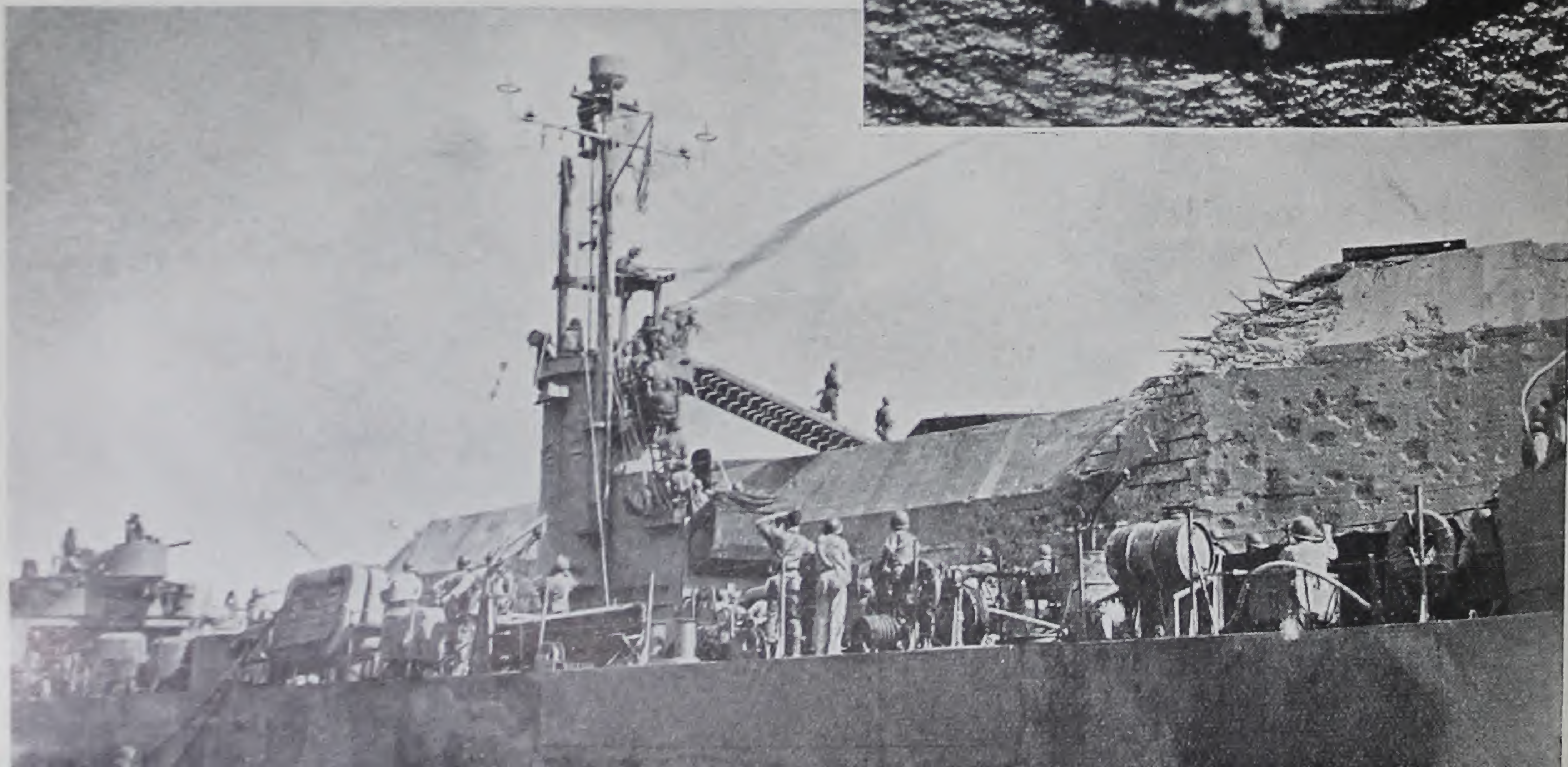
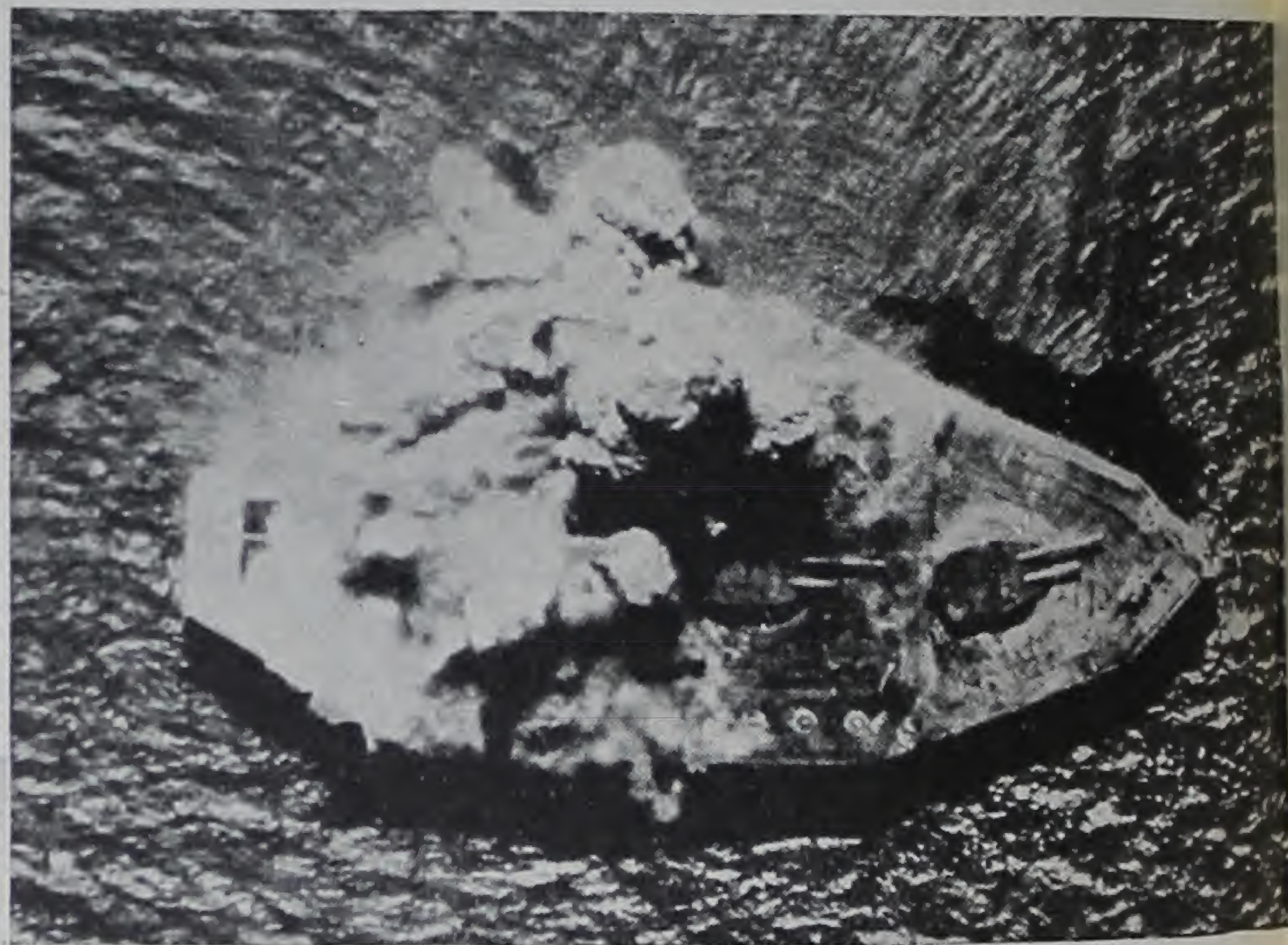
probably 8-inch batteries, well set in concrete emplacements at the base of Suribachi and in the volcanic embrasures of the north. Besides these, photographic reconnaissance showed innumerable pill-boxes, gun-pits, trenches and mortar sites behind the beaches and over the whole surface of the island.

At 8 o'clock on February 16, while Corregidor, 1,500 miles away off Luzon, was being recaptured, the battleships stood in to the attack. No more sustained bombardment has ever been carried out on so small and concentrated a target in the history of war. The weight of metal that was brought against Iwo Jima must stand in relation to the size of the target as an all time high in sea bombardment. In the course of the three days, nine battleships fired incessantly at well-spotted targets. One of them alone, the "Tennessee," fired 1,377 rounds of 14-inch and 6,380 rounds of 5-inch against selected targets. Under the battering of the heavy guns, under the rain of shells from the cruisers, the destroyers, the gunboats that thrust right in against the rocks, under the incessant barrage of bombs, rockets and cannon fire from

#### MANILA'S 'BATTLESHIP ISLAND'

Guarding Manila Bay was Fort Drum, 335-foot long battleship island, built by the U.S. Navy in 1905, mounting 6-inch and 14-inch naval guns and heavily protected by reinforced concrete 'plates' 36 feet thick. (See map in page 2092.) Recapturing it from the Japanese in February 1945, U.S. troops pumped 5,000 gallons of petrol and oil mixture into vents in the walls, set a 30-minute fuse and blew it, with its enemy garrison, right out of Manila Bay, opening the way for the Allied fleet. Right, direct hit on the fort by the U.S.A. 5th A.F. Below, U.S. infantry land on the island by a 'Trojan Horse' catwalk from an invasion craft moored alongside.

*Photos, Keystone; Fox Photos*





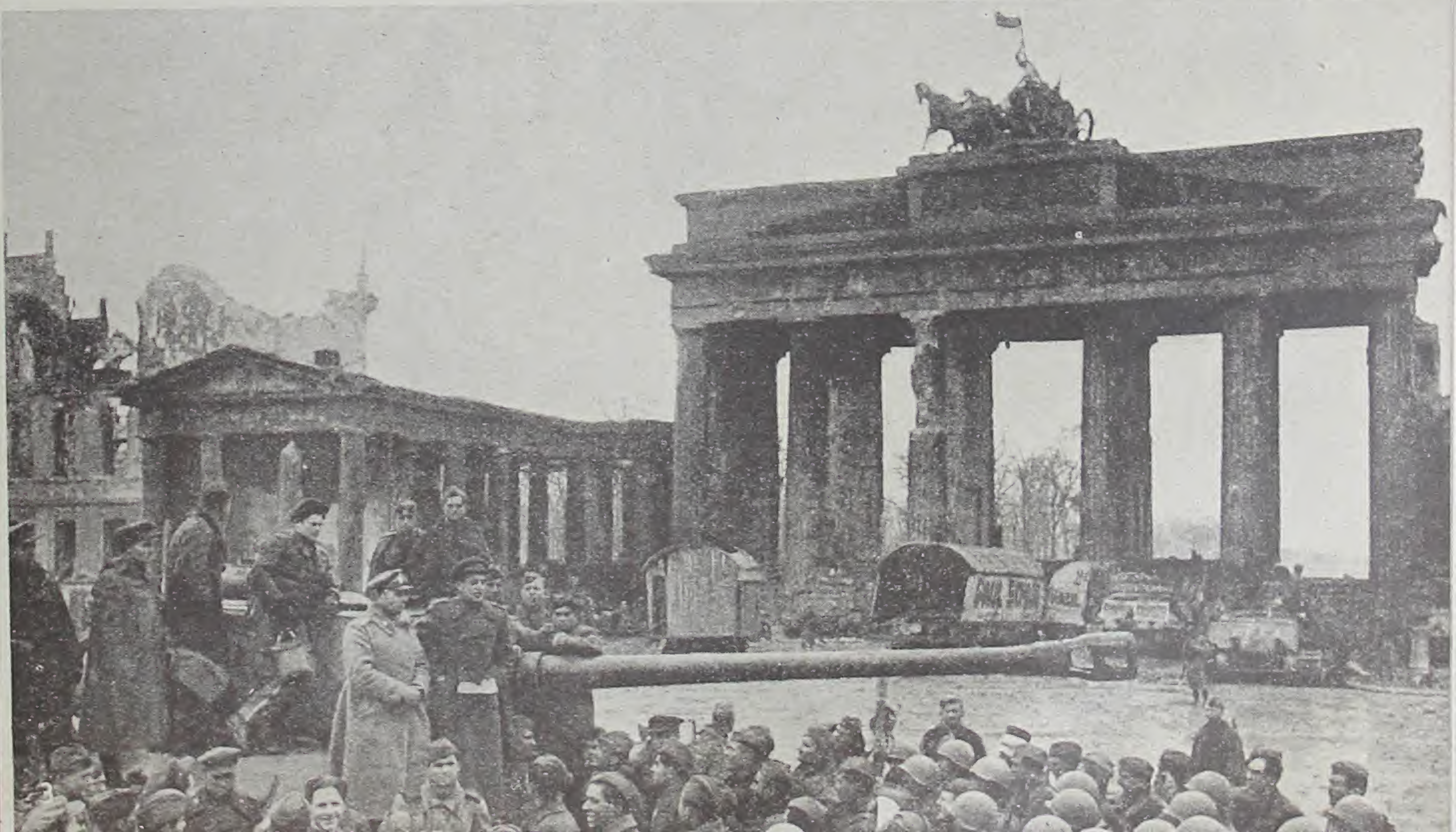






### RED ARMY STORMS THE AGGRESSOR'S CAPITAL

Final struggle for the Reich capital was waged in a chaos of blazing buildings, dive-bombing by Soviet Stormoviks and hopelessly commingled German civilians and troops clamouring for shelter. Many officers and men tried to escape capture by donning civilian clothes and mixing with the terror-stricken homeless. Main resistance to the Russians centred in the Government quarter where fanatical S.S. troops resorted to shooting members of the Wehrmacht attempting to desert. 1. To the cheers of his comrades in the street, this Soviet soldier flew the Red Flag from the roof of the burnt-out Reichstag on April 30, 1945. 2. A Russian mobile unit fires a multiple gun against the background of a blazing building. 3. Russian officer addresses his troops at the badly-shattered Brandenburg Tor.





the sea, the surface of the island changed before the eyes of the invaders. The trees of the northern section turned from green to bare grey skeleton trunks, the scrub of the south disappeared, the very slopes of Suribachi changed from a weathered grey to the brown of fresh-broken rock.

To the bombardment there was virtually no reply. One cruiser was moderately damaged by fire from a 6-inch battery. Not until the L.C.I.s covering the underwater demolition teams went in did the grim, well-disciplined defence open fire. This was the "invasion repulse" claimed by the Japanese. In actual fact the little force though heavily damaged, withdrew only on completion of a detailed examination of the beach approaches.

At dawn on February 19 a vast fleet lay off Iwo Jima, and to the north the fast carrier force of the 5th Fleet, under the command of Vice-Admiral Mitscher, stood between the invasion forces and any attempt by Japan to interfere by surface craft or by air.

The scene was one of the most remarkable among the many landings of the Second Great War. The United States battleship "Tennessee" occupied the

#### Amphibious Attack on Iwo Jima

central position 2,500 yards off the main landing beach on the south-western side of the island, selected in accordance with the weather forecast which promised winds from the westward. From her on either side extended a line of battle-ships, cruisers and destroyers, which ringed and commanded the entire circumference of the island. With a slowness that was as impressive as it was methodic, the assault landing craft gathered at the line of departure, and at 9 a.m. the first wave of the U.S. V Marine Corps swept in under the thunder of a rolling barrage. As the craft touched down the barrage lifted from the beaches to the ridges beyond. It held the Japanese defence penned in the depths of its caves and its deep gun-pits through the first critical moments of the landing. Not until approximately noon was the Japanese reaction to become serious, and not until 2 p.m. did it reach its full height.

But what there was even in the first stages was sufficient to pin the right flank, where the 5th Marine Division landed, to the desperate, shelterless slope of the open sand. The centre, below No. 1 airfield (see map in page 3754), was more successful. The extreme left flank was held by withering fire from the slopes of Suribachi. None the less the position was established, and Vice-Admiral Richmond K. Turner,

in overall command of the operation, and General Holland M. Smith, commanding the Marines, had good reason to be proud of their achievement.

At dusk, however, the position was precarious. Intolerable mortar fire—on Iwo Jima the Japanese produced their most modern weapons, including rocket guns and gigantic mortars—had broken all attempts to advance on the left. In the centre the advance had taken the Marines across the narrow portion of the island and, as darkness fell, the position was in the shape of a ragged L, the 4th Division astride the island, the 5th pinned on the open sand. Had General Yamashita attacked during the night with all available force, he might have engineered a great disaster. The only attack

and only the soldier could pay the price.

Optimistically, it had been hoped by many before the landing craft went in that Iwo Jima would fall within three days; but on the third day it was necessary to land the 3rd Marine Division, which had been held in reserve. For twenty-six days the men of the V Marine Corps advanced against an enemy who had with brilliant tactical eye turned Nature to his purpose. There was not a rock from south to north in that island that was not defended. There was not a defensive point that was not directed to cover the movement of an attacker from those two treacherous beaches where alone he could land. There was not a spot in the island from

#### Strength of Japanese Defences



#### AMERICANS RETURN TO CORREGIDOR

Important island-fortress guarding Manila Bay and scene of an heroic stand by the Americans in 1942 (see page 2094), U.S. parachute troops and infantry landed on Corregidor on February 16, 1945, after a three-days' heavy naval and air attack during which it was plastered with over 2,000 tons of bombs and shells. Here, bombs from B-24's of the U.S.A. 13th A.F. rain on the island, blowing up a large ammunition dump. (See also page 3747.)

*Photo, Keystone*

that came, however, was weak and easily broken up. By dawn fresh waves of men, new material, the organization that was beginning to come out of the appalling chaos of the sandy beach with its tanks and jeeps sucked into the quicksand, its rim of wrecked and battered landing craft, redressed the position.

This day the first airfield was overrun in the face of intense opposition from heavy defences to the north. It was becoming apparent rapidly that this was not a case of shore-line defence. With every yard of the advance fresh Japanese fortifications were opening up. By the end of the second day the pattern of Iwo Jima was sealed. There was no room here for the battle of manoeuvre, no room for generalship in the full sense. This was a "soldier's battle"—only the soldier could win it

the first day until the last that was not potentially within range of Japanese guns and heavy mortars.

There was endless gallantry in this desperate fighting. Not the least of its episodes was the capture on February 23 of the broken volcano of Suribachi, heavily defended, desperately held, by men of the 28th Regiment—an exploit standing high even in the great record of the U.S. Marines. Its loss deprived the Japanese of an observation post from which the movements of every man of the invasion force could be watched with the naked eye, and from which concealed mortars and light guns had caused intolerable harassment of the southern flank. By the time Suribachi was taken the Americans had suffered 5,372 casualties (644 killed) on land, apart from considerable casualties upon the ships.





# MACARTHUR'S MEN GO ASHORE AT LINGAYEN GULF IN THE PHILIPPINE ISLAND OF LUZON

Against surprisingly little resistance, very large forces of Lieutenant-General Krueger's U.S. 6th Army, under the personal direction of General MacArthur, who went ashore with his men, landed on Luzon Island on January 9, 1945. Heavy bombing and an intensive bombardment of shore installations by a powerful Allied fleet, including an Australian naval squadron, preceded the invasion. Here, U.S. troops come ashore at Lingayen from Coast Guard landing barges. A Coast Guard (left) directs traffic beside the striped signal flag, while in the background lies a mass of landing craft.



Through all this period the battle-ship force maintained its bombardment, spotting being carried out either from the ships' own aircraft or by shore parties. But the advances were measured in yards—sometimes in feet.

To evaluate properly the courage of the Marines, it is essential to emphasize the courage and tenacity of the Japanese defenders. Where they stood they died, and they died under a concentration of fire that was equalled perhaps not more than twice in the course of the war.

On the irregular circle of the main portion of the island, a circle only  $2\frac{1}{2}$  miles in diameter, there was poured every type of projectile then in use. The seamed and tortuous surface was drenched with napalm, the terrible jelly fire that falls from the air. The caves and the pillboxes were smoked out with long-range flame-throwers. From

the air everything from 2,000-lb. bombs to cannon shell was poured into the defences. With the capture of Suribachi, the full artillery of the three divisions was in effective operation, the guns so thickly on the ground that the difficulties of storage and dumping were at times almost insuperable.

Behind the creeping forward lines, the Seabees began their immense war of construction: roads were built of netting and steel plates from the shifting sand of the tide-marks; shelters were made with sandbags in the uncertain sand; fuel, food, ammunition dumps were dug in; work went forward on No. 1 airfield. On March 1 the western beaches were brought into the full picture, and slowly, painfully slowly, the advance crept on, pushing forward

with its tremendous concentration of force. Later, Motoyama airfield was secured in a long series of yard by yard advances. Motoyama "town," that miserable sulphur village of the centre, was overrun. The hideous area of the sulphur mines beyond, where volcanic crater interlocked with volcanic crater and the ground of the island looked like the surface of the moon, was taken, and by March 5 the enemy had been driven into the coastal strip at the extreme north of the island. By March 10 the remnants of the Japanese garrison were split into three small pockets of resistance. All organized resistance ended on March 16 when elements of the U.S. 3rd and 5th Divisions broke through the enemy lines at Kitano Point.

### IWO JIMA INVADED

The securing of five-miles-long Iwo Jima ('Sulphur Island'), midmost of the Volcano Islands and only 750 miles from Japan, was vital for American attack on the enemy mainland. Though U.S. landings began on February 19, 1945, after a powerful three-days' naval shelling, it was not until March 16 that the island finally fell. Right, Iwo Jima from the air; the volcanic Mt. Suribachi is seen at the tip on the right and also (extreme left), in the bottom photograph, of the invasion force going in.





The cost was heavy. The V Marine Corps casualties were 4,189 dead, 441 missing, 15,308 wounded. To these it was necessary to add considerable naval casualties (see Chapter 365). The Japanese were estimated to have lost approximately 21,000 men plus some 700 prisoners.

Ten days after Iwo Jima had been secured, on Monday, March 26, elements of the United States 10th Army, with Marines, landed on the little islets of

Kerama Retto. With this **OKINAWA** step the subjection of Japan itself came within measurable distance. The little group of islets which makes up the Kerama group is almost precisely in the centre of the long chain of the Ryukyu or Nansei Shoto Islands which, like a series of giant's stepping stones, link Formosa with Japan and form the outpost barrier between the Pacific Ocean and the East China Sea.

Once again the operation was essentially an exercise of sea power. Once again it proceeded without interference from the Japanese Navy. To ensure that immunity, to provide for the proper use of that power, Fleet-Admiral Nimitz, under whose command the operation proceeded, assembled the most powerful fleet that the world had ever known.

It was necessary as a first step to take the Kerama group in order to obtain an anchorage and to secure positions commanding the Okinawa beaches. The objective of the operation was Okinawa itself. This, the main island of the chain, is approximately 65 miles from north to south with a maximum width of about ten miles, a long, narrow, irregular island, subdivided by constricted waists of land with irregular peninsulas projecting east and west to the sea (see map in page 3755). It was believed to be garrisoned by a force of 60,000 men under General Mitsuru Ushijima, together with a certain number of impressed Okinawan troops.

Though hilly, Okinawa had none of the natural defences of Iwo Jima. The landing beaches were good and there was

**Landing on Okinawa** a considerable number of possible alternative landing places. The tactics of the landing followed in broad essentials the tactics at Luzon. A feint was made at the southern portion of the island where the capital, Naha, and the old capital, Shuri, are situated, and which contains the bulk of the population. Then, with the exquisite flexibility of amphibious tactics, the force, under Vice-Admiral Turner, was swung in on the beaches below



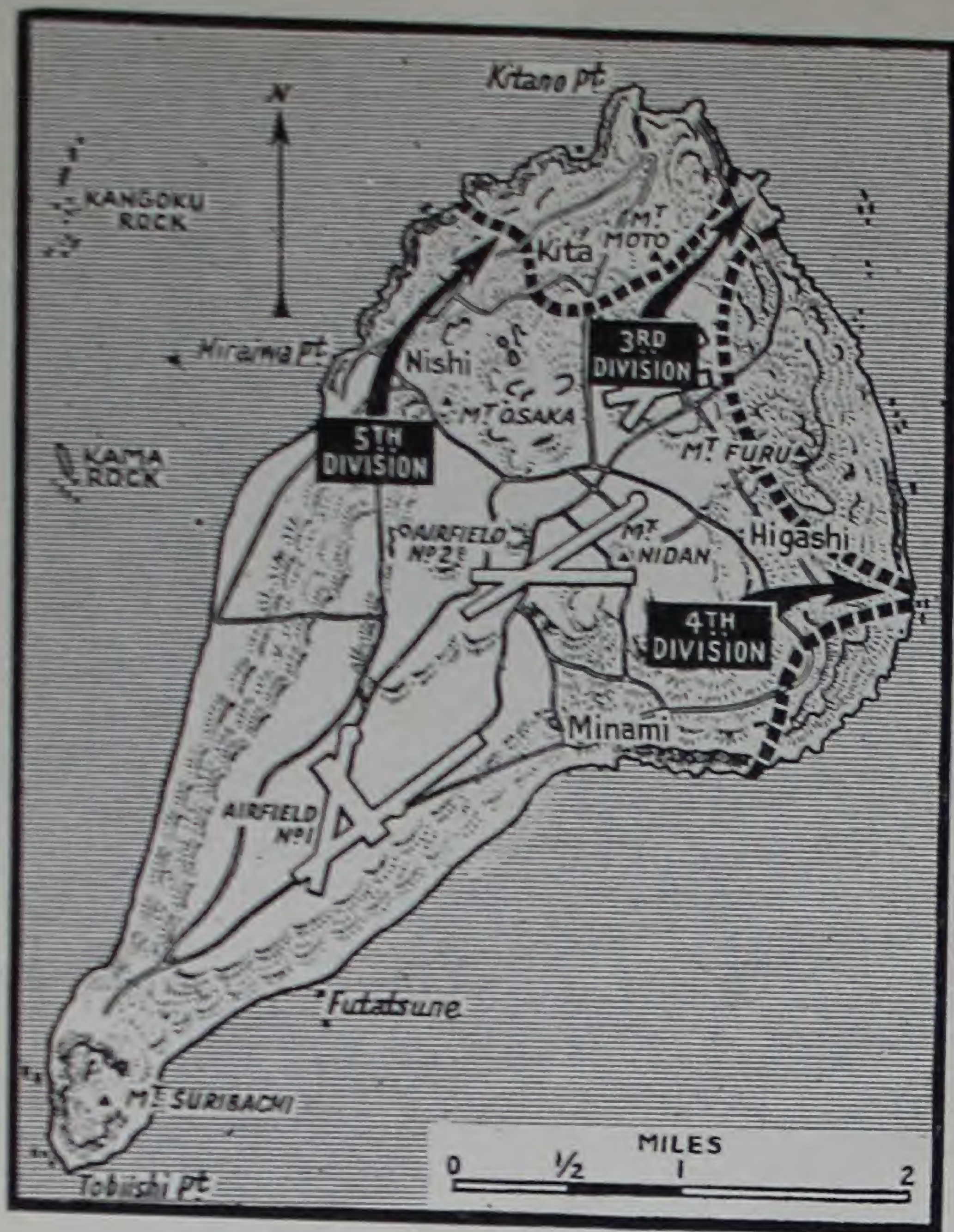
### U.S. MARINES GO ASHORE ON IWO JIMA

Preceded by one of the greatest naval bombardments of the war, lasting three days and directed by Vice-Admiral Spruance, a landing was effected by the U.S. V Marine Corps on the Japanese island of Iwo Jima, in the Volcano group, on February 19, 1945. 1. Marines advance under fire up the beach; Mt. Suribachi is seen in the background. 2. Light ammunition trucks are man-handled ashore from landing craft. 3. Unloading supplies on the volcanic sands a few hours later.

*Photos, Associated Press; Paul Popper*







### JAPANESE FORCES ARE SPLIT

The battle for Iwo Jima, as it appeared on March 10, 1945, six days before the end. The remnants of the Japanese garrison had been split into three groups, the largest being a half-mile-square pocket round Kitano Point, at the north end of the island. The U.S. 4th Marine Division, killing 564 of an enemy force of 750, pushed through to the east coast at Tachiwawa Point.

the Yontan airfield. The landing on April 1 was preceded by a tremendous bombardment from the sea. The Japanese command, hampered by a force too small to defend the enormous indented coastline of the island, was caught "on the wrong foot" by the feints, and the beaches below Yontan were virtually undefended. Under Lieut.-General Simon Bolivar Buckner the U.S. 10th Army swarmed ashore without opposition and almost without loss. By 11 o'clock in the morning they had secured Yontan airfield and the Katena strip. By the end of the first

Buckner had at his command a force very considerably in excess numerically of the Japanese defence, infinitely better equipped with artillery and quick-firing weapons, having at its disposal the strength of almost two armoured divisions, supported by tremendous airpower from the escort-carriers attached to the landing force, with the almost

day they held a depth of more than three miles. As mechanized equipment poured in over the landing beaches, the beach-head rapidly expanded. By Monday, April 2, American Marines had crossed the island, reaching the eastern coast at Nakagusuku Wan. The Japanese defence was cut in two and from that moment the result of the campaign was never in doubt.

It is the more curious, therefore, that almost from this moment a deadlock began which was to last far beyond the estimated duration of the campaign, and was to involve heavy and lamentable casualties.

The 10th Army, under General Buckner, consisted of the XXIV Army Corps and the III Marine Corps. General



### CONQUERORS MEET

On March 14, 1945, the U.S. flag was formally raised over Iwo Jima, a proclamation issued suspending Japanese rule, and Fleet Admiral Chester Nimitz was appointed Military Governor. Here Lt.-Gen. Holland M. Smith (right), commanding the U.S. Marines, and Maj.-Gen. Clifton B. Cates, commander of the U.S. 4th Marine Division, meet within sight of the northern tip of the island.

*Photo, Central Press*

unlimited support of the Fleet carriers behind it, and the immeasurable advantage of the mobile batteries of the Fleet guns which could—as at Iwo Jima—virtually surround the enemy's positions.

It appears to have been assumed largely that the Japanese command would withdraw towards the northern portion of the island to take advantage of the succession of narrow isthmuses and of the increasing ruggedness of the hills. But from the first General Ushi-

### ON THE QUICKSANDS OF IWO JIMA

Only possible landing places on Iwo Jima were the quicksands to the south of the island (see map above). Left, U.S. Marines construct sandbagged gun emplacements on what had once been the enemy's No. 1 airfield; Mt. Suribachi is seen in the distance. Right, urgent U.S. casualties are treated on the beach. Poles in the sand supported plasma bottles for blood-transfusion before casualties were taken off by sea

*Photos, Associated Press*





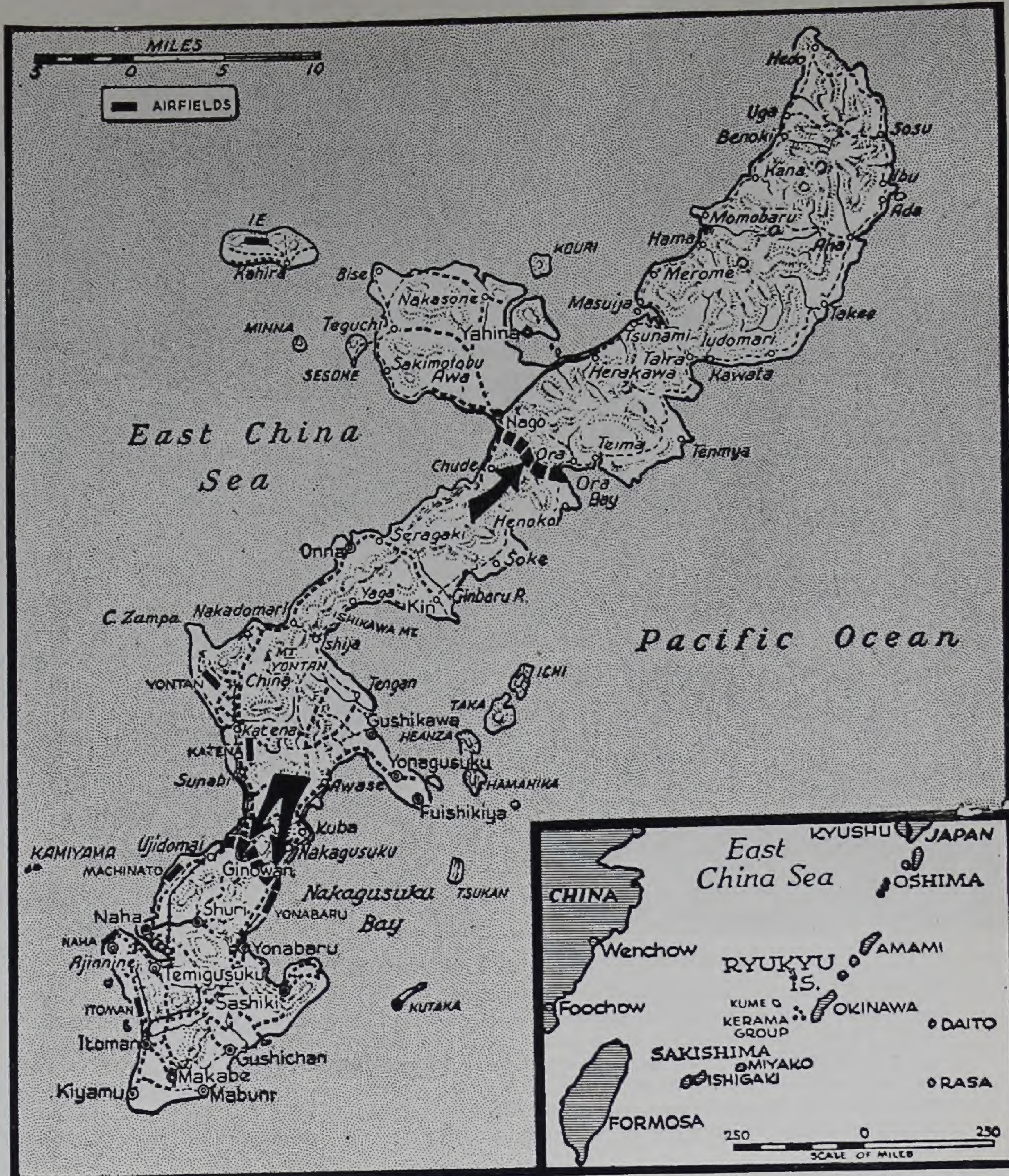
jima concentrated his defence in the south. General Buckner, however, committed the III Marine Corps to a mopping-up operation to the north, and wheeled the XXIV Army Corps against the main enemy force. The wheel was executed slowly and without apparent decision, and General Ushijima had time to improvise defences on a front of some 11,000 yards in width.

The campaign has been compared to that of Iwo Jima. The comparison is incorrect and unfair to the heroic

### Fanaticism Against Strength

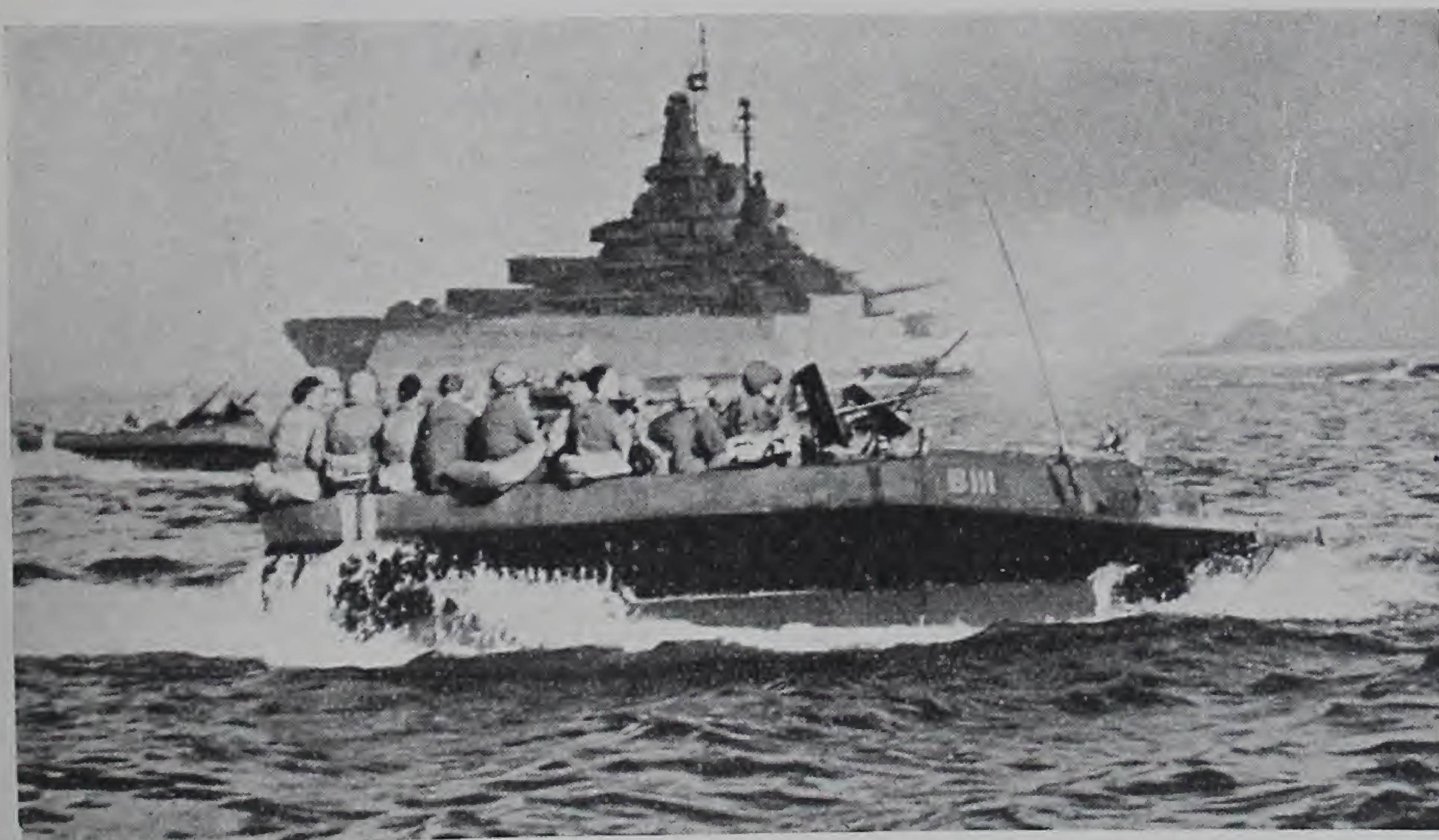
men of the V Marine Corps. The Okinawa terrain had none of the natural defensive qualities of Iwo Jima; the enemy had no previously prepared fixed defences between Yontan and Shuri. Only the incredible fanaticism of the Japanese soldier held the line, and that fanaticism for almost two months was sufficient against an invader who held absolute command of the air, who had the equivalent of two armoured divisions, who to an overwhelming strength in artillery had added the stupendous power of the guns of the Fleet, and who had almost unlimited superiority in men, equipment and supply.

It is easy to over-simplify, but to any serious student of it must appear that there was faulty leadership. In the end General Buckner brought back the III Marine Corps. Instead of attempting to break the deadlock by landing it in rear of the enemy, he committed these troops—the finest amphibious body in the Pacific—on his right flank, crowding two army corps on a front of little more than eight miles, and eventually with-



### AMERICAN HEADWAY ON OKINAWA

Six days after landing near the Yontan airfield in the west of Okinawa, U.S. marines, driving north, on April 7, 1945, reached the vicinity of Nago on the west coast and Ora Bay on the east. Troops of the U.S. 10th Army, pushing south, were meeting stiff opposition as they neared Naha, the capital. Okinawa is one of the most densely populated islands in the world.



### U.S. TROOPS MAKE FOR OKINAWA'S BEACHES

Not a single craft was lost during the landing on Okinawa on April 1, 1945, by troops of the U.S. 10th Army, under Lieutenant-General Simon Bolivar Buckner, in which over 1,400 ships were involved. The left flank of the operation was protected by units of the British Pacific Fleet, under Vice-Admiral Sir Bernard Rawlings. Here, amphibious craft head for the beach as a U.S. battleship fires a broadside.

Photo, L.N.A.

drawing one of his army divisions because of overcrowding. The expedient worked, but at a heavy price in men. The élan of the Marines on the right flank and the fear they inspired in the Japanese command caused a thinning of the Japanese right. Even as the Marines flooded into the waste where Naha had stood, the 7th Division (Army) broke through the gap beyond Yonabaru town and the campaign became a mopping-up operation. On June 21 the American flag was hoisted over Okinawa, four days after the death of General Buckner in action.

Estimated to last approximately forty days, the campaign had taken eighty-two. The casualty figures were equally enlarged. The Americans lost, killed and missing, approximately 12,000 men, with 35,000 wounded. The final figures with regard to the Japanese casualties were given as 101,853 dead, with 7,902 prisoners. It is difficult to accept these figures in view of the fact

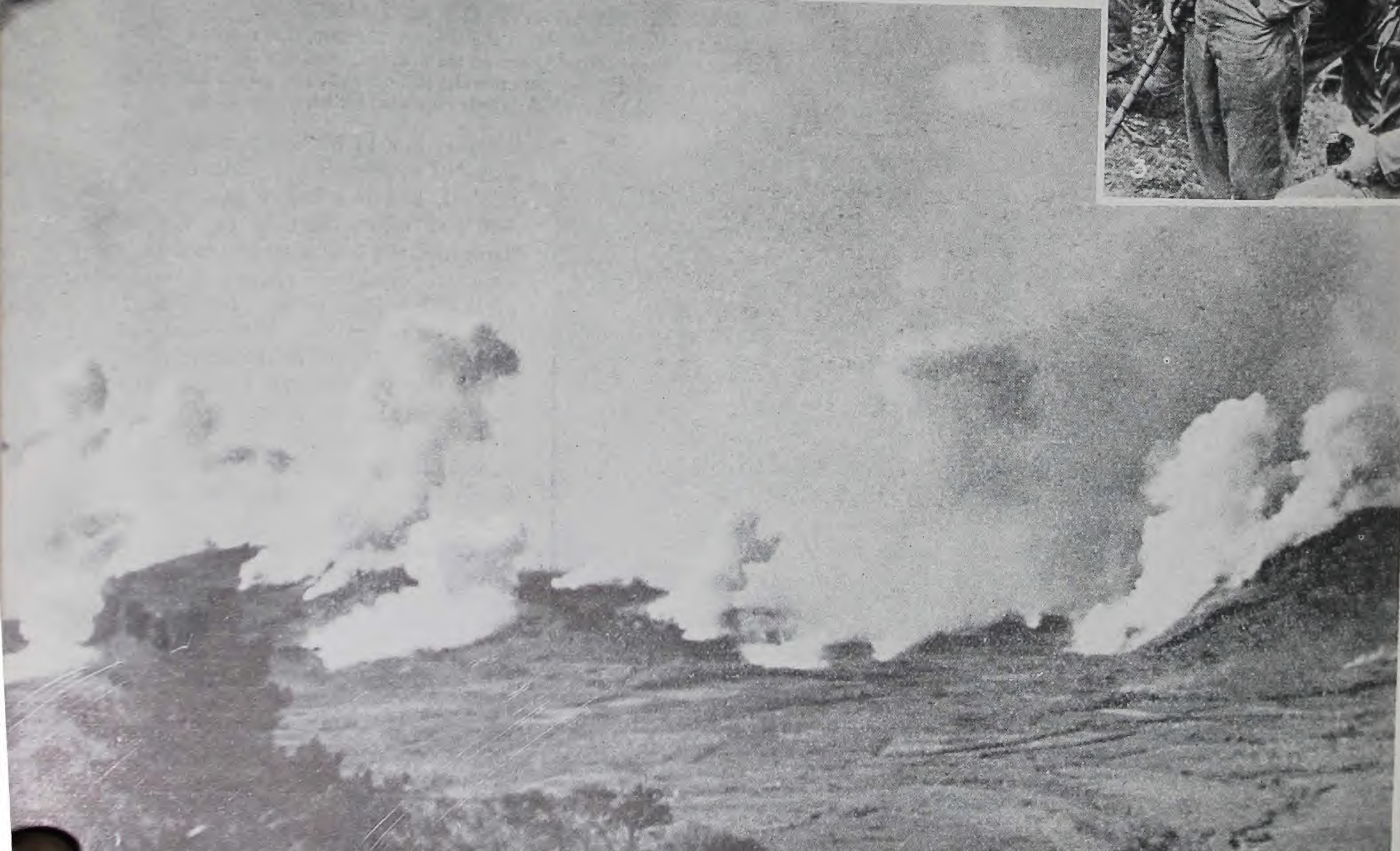




### JAPANESE RESIST FANATICALLY ON OKINAWA

Fiercest fighting on Okinawa raged in the southern section where some 60,000 of the enemy, fighting fanatically, in mid-April 1945 began to oppose the U.S. advance with a heavier artillery concentration than that used in any Pacific island to date. As a result, the campaign, which had been planned to last approximately six weeks, took 82 days. 1. U.S. Marines enter ruined Naha, the capital, on May 27. On the extreme left is a General Sherman tank. 2. Smoke-screened hillside overlooking Naha as U.S. troops advance towards the city under heavy fire. 3. Major-General Lemuel C. Shepherd (left), commanding the U.S. 6th Marine Division, and Lieutenant-General Simon Bolivar Buckner, commanding the U.S. 10th Army, who was killed in action on June 17.

*Photos, Paul Popper ; Fox Photos ; Keystone*







that in mid-May an estimate of 51,000 Japanese dead had been made. If the Japanese had lost the same proportion of men by wounds as had the Americans, this would have meant 200,000 men out of action by mid-May. In point of fact resistance continued strongly for another month, and the only assumption possible is that in the early days of the campaign at any rate, over-optimistic estimates of Japanese dead were made. There seems little evidence to indicate that the size of the Japanese garrison was much in excess of the original Intelligence estimates of 60,000.

These three campaigns were all undertaken with a single objective—to provide bases for the eventual invasion of Japan. They succeeded, however, in doing vastly more than this, for with the crippling of the Japanese Fleet in the Battle for Leyte Gulf, with the sinking of the “Yamato,” the second and last of Japan’s modern battleships, in her abortive sortie against the Okinawa invasion force, and with the almost

innumerable sinkings of minor vessels in connexion with the landings and covering operations, the Japanese Navy as a fighting force ceased to exist.

As with the Navy, so with the Japanese Air Force. The toll taken of the Japanese air in the Philippines, in the covering operations for Iwo Jima and in Okinawa, crippled the striking power and, in the upshot, the defensive power of the

**Japanese  
Air Force  
Crippled**

Japanese Metropolitan Air Force. Only the suicide tactics of the Kamikaze organization kept Japanese airmen in the picture, and even that, by the end of Okinawa, was becoming a diminishing asset. Though the Japanese military forces involved were not, in relation to the actual size of the Japanese armies, large, the loss in military prestige and in material was not to be despised.

Meanwhile the stupendous achievement of American production was beginning to play its full part. The material losses of these three campaigns with the sea losses that accompanied them were far more than made up. The losses of personnel, grievous as they were, were never strategically important. Japan finished up each campaign weaker than before. The Americans finished immeasurably stronger. By the end of Okinawa the Philippines were already a vast base for the forthcoming invasion. Even while the fighting was continuing, the work of preparing Okinawa for its



#### BURNING OUT THE ENEMY AT KUSHITAKE

Driven from their hillside hiding-place, Japanese troops, one carrying a white flag, here surrender to U.S. Marines on Okinawa. Above, U.S. fire-bomb explodes on an enemy stronghold at Kushitake, on southern Okinawa. When the flames subside every Japanese above ground in the area will be burned to death and those underground suffocated, the fierce flames drawing off all oxygen in their path.

*Photos, Keystone; New York Times Photos*





### PRISONERS ON OKINAWA

Fiercest fighting in the Pacific was on Okinawa, in the Ryukyus, where American casualties totalled over 12,000 in dead and missing during 82 days' fighting. Although the initial landing, by the U.S. 10th Army, was on March 26, 1945, the island did not pass into American hands until June 21. The enemy lost almost 8,000 in prisoners alone, some of whom here trek to the beaches for transportation. *Photo, L.N.A.*

eventual role as a staging area for the invasion of Japan was well under way.

The military operations that followed the hoisting of the flag on Okinawa were small and unimportant. They consisted of the seizure and consolidation of other small islands in the chain. But the vital factor in this period was the "build-up," and that proceeded unhampered by the enemy—swiftly, inexorably.

These three campaigns—one vastly easier than had been anticipated, one vastly more difficult, and one made more difficult than it need have been—were, in combination, the greatest successes of the Pacific war. With the earlier capture of the Marianas they made possible, first, the wiping out by incendiary bombing of the great cities of Japan and, secondly, the provision of everything that was necessary for the staging of the eventual descent on the mainland. They, and not the atomic bomb, were the decisive factor in the subsequent Japanese surrender.

### WAR ENDS IN THE FAR EAST

Position in the Far Eastern Theatre of War on the date of Japan's surrender, when very large areas of the territory conquered by the enemy were still in Japanese hands, as can be seen from the key. The Russians continued their Manchurian offensive for some days (see Chapter 367). This map does not show Allied advances in China.

*Courtesy of The Times*



## Diary of the War

JUNE 1945

**June 1.** Chungking announced that Chinese troops had captured Pinyang (Kwangsi) and Suilo. On Okinawa U.S. forces linked up south of Shuri. S.E.A.C. announced formation of 12th Army in Burma. U.S. Army Persian Gulf Command ceased transporting U.S. war supplies to Russia via Persian Gulf.

**June 2.** S.E.A.C. announced heavy defeats of enemy in the Kama bridge-head E. of the Irrawaddy and in the Shan Hills; "staircase" N.W. of Kalaw captured.

**June 3.** Carrier-based aircraft of U.S. 3rd Fleet attacked Kyushu airfields. On Okinawa U.S. troops cut off Chinen peninsula to control Nakagasaki Bay, former enemy naval base. Land Forces Adriatic disbanded. Last convoy reached the Clyde, Scotland.

**June 4.** By day 450-500 unescorted Super-Fortresses bombed Kobe (Japan), dropping 3,000 tons of fire bombs. U.S. Marines landed near Naha (Okinawa). U.S. "Mars" Tank Force transferred from Burma to China theatre. On Tarakan, Australians captured "Margy Hill" and "Hill 102."

**June 5.** Announced that Australians had captured Wewak harbour, last Japanese base in New Guinea. Field-Marshal Montgomery and General Eisenhower awarded Order of Victory, highest Soviet military decoration. Allied Control Commission met in Berlin.

**June 6.** 400 Super-Fortresses inflicted heavy attack on Osaka (Japan). U.S. Marines cleared Oroku peninsula on Okinawa, reached the coast near Itoman. Brazil declared war on Japan.

**June 7.** First Allied cargo-ship to use Wewak (New Guinea) for three years entered the port. King Haakon of Norway landed at Oslo. Last joint statement on the war against U-boats issued by Mr. Churchill and President Truman. King and Queen visited the Channel Islands.

**June 8.** Super-Fortresses heavily bombed Tokyo, Osaka, Nagoya, Kobe and Kyushu areas. Japanese announced formation of People's Volunteer Corps, including every able-bodied man, woman and child, to resist invasion. Field-Marshal Montgomery presented with the freedom of Antwerp by the Burgomaster.

**June 9.** Australians on Tarakan penetrated strong enemy defences in the hills near Djoeta. 14th Army troops in Burma captured Kalaw, pursuing Japanese forces trying to escape into Siam.

**June 10.** Australian 9th Division landed in great strength on Labuan Island, on Mauru, and at Brooketown in British North Borneo, capturing Labuan town. Super-Fortresses heavily attacked

industrial targets on the Japanese mainland, including Yokohama. Australians landed at Matchin Bay, North Bougainville. Guards Armoured Division became an infantry division again.

**June 11.** In N. Borneo Australians, with air support, advanced several miles inland towards Brunei against only light opposition. S.E.A.C. announced that an estimated 108,240 Japanese troops had been killed in Burma since February 1, 1944. General Election in Canada: Mr. Mackenzie King's Government returned again.

**June 12.** Australian columns in N. Borneo reported less than ten miles from Brunei. On Okinawa U.S. artillery, in support of ground forces, put down one of the heaviest barrages of the Pacific war.

**June 13.** Brunei fell, with little opposition, to troops of the Australian 9th Division; airstrip also captured; reported that the Dyaks (head-hunters) were attacking Japanese patrols with blow pipes and poisoned darts.

**June 14.** British officials went ashore in N. Borneo to restore civil administration. Tokyo described Japanese situation on Okinawa as "desperate." Ribbentrop captured in Hamburg. White Paper on India issued.

**June 14 and 15.** Truk, Japanese stronghold in the Carolines, heavily bombarded by British Pacific Fleet and bombed by British carrier-borne aircraft.

**June 15.** Australian 9th Division, well beyond Brunei, drove along the coast towards the Miri oilfields in Sarawak. 520 Super-Fortresses heavily bombed Osaka. Chungking announced that Chinese had recaptured the Ishan airbase in Kwangsi. Victory parade in Rangoon to mark liberation of Burma.

**June 16.** Australians in N. Borneo took Timbalai airstrip. U.S. 10th Army captured three dominating positions on the Yaeju Dake plateau, last enemy defence line before the S. tip of Okinawa.

**June 17.** 450 Marianas-based Super-Fortresses bombed Japanese industrial towns of Omura, Kagoshima, Hamamatsu and Yokkaichi. In S.W. Kiangsi Japanese captured Lungnan and Tingnan. Polish leaders met in Moscow.

**June 18.** Chinese recaptured treaty port of Wenchow on the Chekiang coast. In Burma, British, Indian and Gurkha troops seized hill positions on Toungoo-Mawchi escape road to the Shan Hills. On Okinawa U.S. troops cleared Oroku pocket

**June 19.** Over 450 Marianas-based Super-Fortresses bombed Fukuoka, Toyohashi, and Shizuoka. Australians in N. Borneo reached Tutongi: other

Australians, landing on Brunei Bay, took Weston.

**June 20.** Australian 9th Division troops landed at Lutongon, on Sarawak, others S. of Brunei Bay; R.A.A.F. and U.S. bombers raided Balikpapan (S. Borneo). Carrier-based aircraft of British E. Indies Fleet bombed Sumatra and shipping in Malacca Straits. Liner Queen Mary arrived at New York with 14,000 U.S. troops from Europe.

**June 21 and 22.** Japanese "suicide" aircraft attacked U.S. warships off Okinawa, 59 being shot down.

**June 21.** All organized resistance on Okinawa ceased after 82 days' fighting. Marianas-based Super-Fortresses heavily attacked Japanese industrial targets. Australian 9th Division gained full control of entrance to Brunei Bay.

**June 22.** Australians in Sarawak liberated 150 Sikh and Punjabi troops captured by Japanese troops earlier in the war.

**June 23.** Announced that Australians in Borneo controlled 80 miles of coastline. U.S. forces landed near Aparri, last port left to enemy on Luzon. Rangoon port open to shipping. Prof. Willem Schermerhorn formed new Dutch cabinet.

**June 24.** Announced that Australian 9th Division had captured Seria oilfields (N. Borneo), overcome all resistance on Labuan island and gained full control of Tarakan. Balikpapan (Dutch Borneo) heavily raided by R.A.A.F. and U.S.A.A.F.

**June 25.** Australians captured Miri in Sarawak. Announced that Chinese controlled nearly 200 miles of Chekiang coast. San Francisco Conference ended.

**June 26.** 500 Marianas-based Super-Fortresses bombed Japanese towns, including Nagoya and Osaka; other Super-Fortresses attacked oil refinery at Yokkaichi.

**June 27.** 2,700-ton aircraft-carrier U.S.S. "Bunker Hill" steamed into New York harbour under her own power for repair after having been wrecked, but not sunk, off Okinawa on May 11.

**June 28.** All resistance on Luzon ceased. 450-500 Super-Fortresses from Marianas heavily bombed Nobeoka and Okayama (Japan).

**June 29.** U.S. and Australian bombers heavily attacked Balikpapan oilfields for ninth consecutive day. Tarakan oilfields reported back in production. Tokyo announced evacuation of war industries to Manchuria.

**June 30.** Chinese recaptured Linchow air-base. U.S. troops made unopposed landing on Kume Island, 50 miles W. of Okinawa.



# FAR EASTERN NAVAL EXPLOITS, 1945

*The advance of the American and British navies to the coasts of Japan, an operation closely linked with the air activity described in Chapter 368, and the driving of the enemy from the Indian Ocean are the subjects of this chapter, which concludes the history of Allied naval exploits in the Far East*

**A**MERICAN naval losses in the three years following Pearl Harbor were revealed on December 7, 1944; they amounted to about 230 combat ships, totalling 3,750,000 tons, and included two battleships, nine aircraft-carriers, nine cruisers, 51 destroyers, and 33 submarines; but the United States had replaced these losses many times over: in the same period she had built 42,000,000 tons, and at the beginning of 1945 probably possessed a fleet larger than all the other navies of the world combined.

The year 1945 opened in the Pacific with great naval activity off the Philippines, where the invasion of Luzon (see page 3743) was preceded by bombardment from a powerful Allied fleet, including battleships, cruisers, destroyers and rocket-firing craft—an operation in which, on January 6, Sir Bruce Fraser, commander of the British Pacific Fleet, narrowly escaped death: he was on the bridge of the U.S.S. "New Mexico" as an observer when he was knocked down by blast from a bomb which killed Lieutenant-General Sir Herbert Lumsden, Mr. Churchill's special military representative with General MacArthur, and Mr. W. Chickerling, correspondent of "The Times."

The fleet escorting the invasion armada included an Australian squadron under Commodore J. N. B. Farncomb. Japanese aircraft and light naval forces heavily attacked Allied shipping, both before and during the landings, sinking the escort carrier U.S.S. "Ommaney Bay" for the loss of 79 planes, two destroyers, one midget submarine, and other vessels. The cruiser H.M.A.S. "Australia" was holed five times, and the destroyer H.M.A.S. "Arunta" was damaged, but neither withdrew from action until the operations were concluded.

The landings on Iwo Jima (see page 3746) were preceded by a similar violent naval bombardment, beginning on February 16 and covering the invasion, which was under the overall command of Vice-Admiral Richmond K. Turner, and was supported by a fleet of over 800 warships including the battleships "Tennessee," "Idaho," "Nevada," "New York," "Texas," and

"Arkansas," most of them commanded by Vice-Admiral R. A. Spruance. The U.S. escort-carrier "Bismarck Sea" was sunk, and the 33,000-ton aircraft-carrier "Saratoga" was hit by seven bombs, but not sunk, off Iwo Jima on February 21.

Just over a month later, naval attacks on the Saki group (southernmost of the Ryukyu chain) began on March 26. This was the occasion of the first major Pacific action of the British Pacific Fleet (see page 3402) which, in conjunction with Admiral Spruance's U.S. 5th Fleet and under overall American operational command, was led by Vice-Admiral Sir Bernard Rawlings, with aircraft-carriers under Rear-Admiral Sir Philip Vian. The battleship H.M.S. "King George V" and the aircraft-carrier H.M.S. "Illustrious" were among the vessels taking part. Heavy sea and air attacks on the Ryukyus continued until the landings on Okinawa on April 1 (see page 3754), the British Pacific Fleet continuing to concentrate on the Saki group. Over 1,400 ships, under the overall command of Admiral Spruance, were involved in the Okinawa landings, the left flank of which was protected by the British Pacific Fleet. The enemy developed a strong counter-attack.

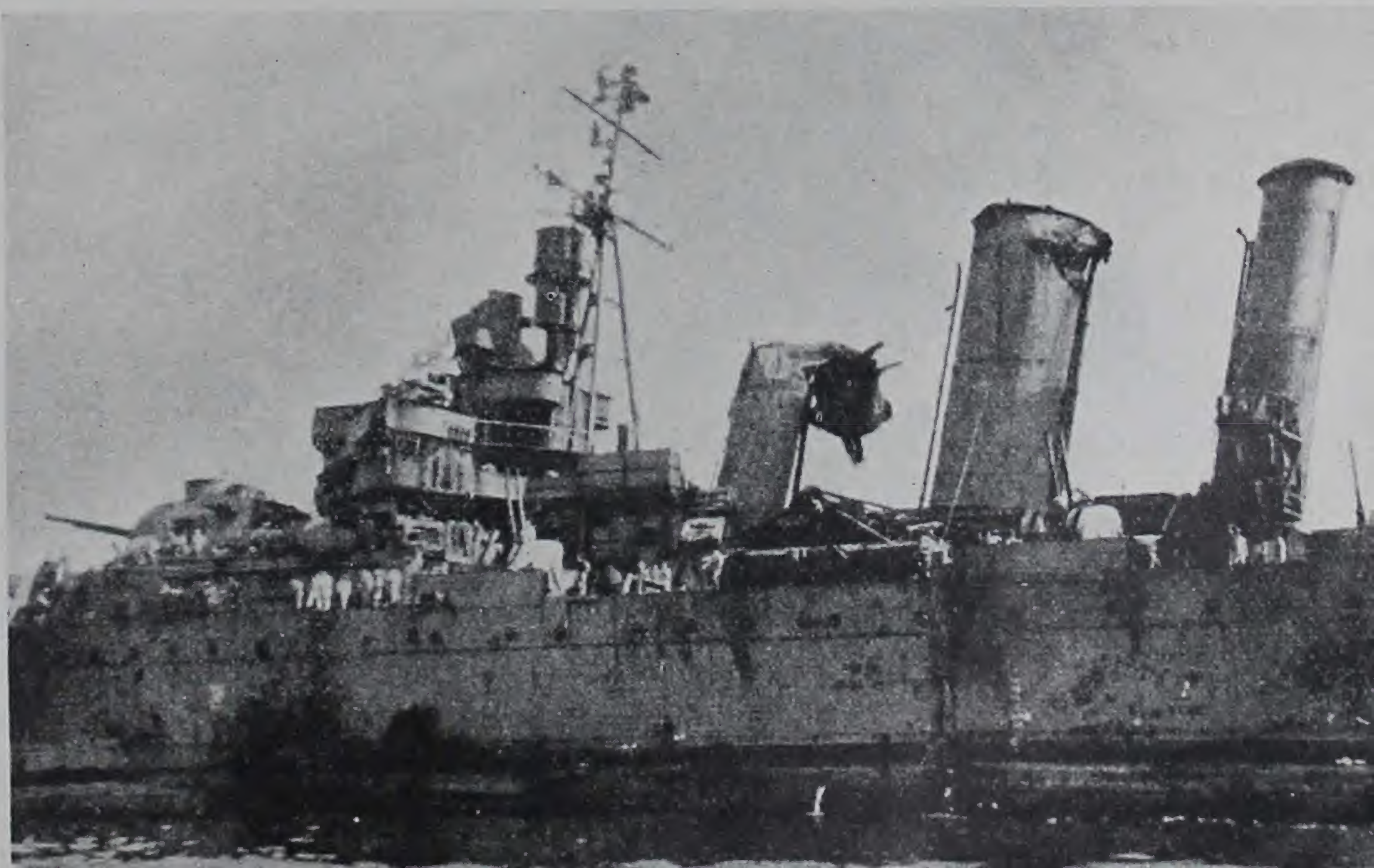
During the evening of April 6, Japanese aircraft attacked U.S. ships and shore installations in force, sinking three destroyers and the U.S. minesweeper "Emmaus," hit by five Japanese Kamikaze (suicide) pilots (see Chapter 368), and damaging several other destroyers and smaller craft, for the loss of 106 machines. Early next day, a considerable enemy surface force, described by Tokyo radio as a suicide force, left the Inland Sea: it was led by the 45,000-ton 16-inch gun battleship "Yamato," the most powerful ship remaining to Japan, and included an Agano class light cruiser. It came under heavy Allied air attack in the middle of the day. No air opposition developed, though the Allied planes encountered heavy A.A. fire. The "Yamato," the Agano class cruiser, and three destroyers were sunk some fifty miles off Kyushu, three other vessels were left burning, and only three escaped. One heavy U.S. unit suffered damage.

Japan's desperate and suicidal attempts to halt the conquest of Okinawa continued. On April 21, Admiral Nimitz's H.Q. announced Allied and enemy losses between March 18 and

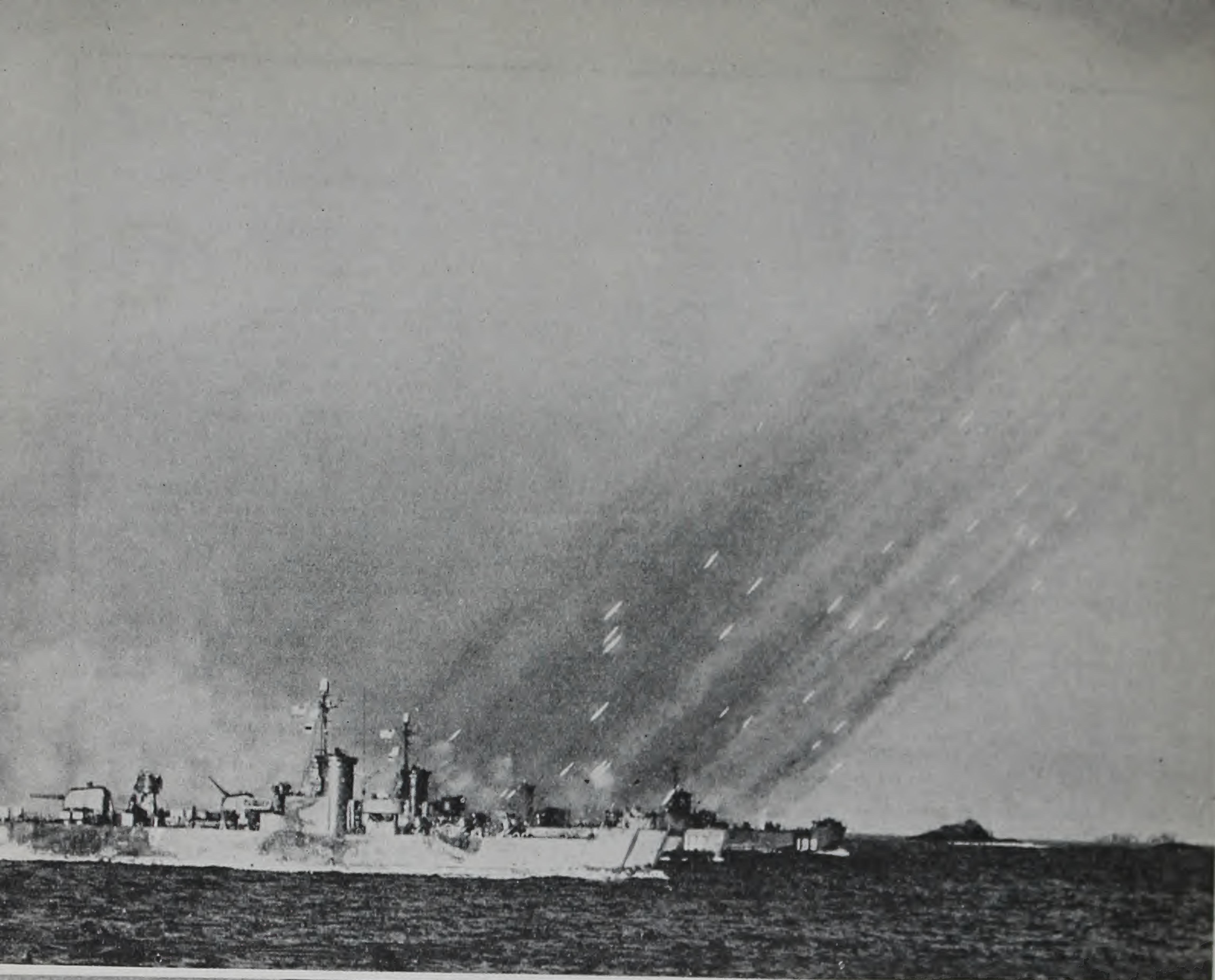
**Allied  
Losses off  
Okinawa**

## AUSTRALIAN WARSHIPS WERE AT LUZON LANDINGS

Among the Allied fleet covering the invasion of Luzon, in the Philippines, on January 9, 1945, was an Australian squadron. This force was heavily attacked by Japanese aircraft and naval units while en route for Luzon on January 5, 6 and 7, when the 10,000-ton cruiser H.M.A.S. "Australia" was holed five times and the destroyer "Arunta" damaged, though both remained in action. Below, the "Australia" after the attack: 3 officers and 41 ratings were killed.







#### NAVAL SUPPORT FOR ISLAND INVASIONS

U.S. landings on Iwo Jima (February 19, 1945) and Okinawa (April 1) were covered by forces of the Allied fleets massed on a scale hitherto unknown in the Pacific. 1. Flame-tipped rockets streak towards Okinawa from U.S. Navy L.S.M. (R)s—Landing Ships Medium, Rockets. 2. Fire-fighting parties on the flight-deck of the 33,000-ton U.S. aircraft-carrier 'Saratoga', hit off Iwo Jima on February 21 by 7 bombs which killed 123 of the crew. 3. U.S.S. 'Tennessee', 32,000-ton battleship, taking part in the naval bombardment of Iwo Jima.





April 18 in the Okinawa operations and associated attacks on Japan. They were as follows: American, five destroyers, one destroyer-transport, two minelayers, one gunboat, four landing-craft, and two ammunition ships; Japanese, one battleship, two light cruisers, five destroyers, five destroyer-escorts, 28 small cargo ships, many torpedo boats and small craft, and 2,569 aircraft.

The Kamikaze pilots did score successes, however. The destroyers "Longshaw" and "Drexler," the auxiliary transport "Bates," and a landing ship were sunk on June 11,

**American Losses** the 2,100-ton destroyers "Twiggs" on June 16 (136 killed or missing

including all her officers) and "William D. Porter" on June 10 (61 wounded). The 27,000-ton aircraft-carrier U.S.S. "Bunker Hill," flagship of Vice-Admiral Marc Mitscher, was wrecked but not sunk on May 11 when three Kamikaze pilots crashed into her, killing 392 men, wounding 264 and destroying 70 aircraft. Mitscher himself had a narrow escape from death. The fires aboard her were got under control, and her commander, Captain George Seitz, with outstanding seamanship took her across the Pacific to Puget Sound for preliminary repairs. She reached New York under her own steam on June 27.

In the twelve weeks from the end of March, three of the newest and most powerful aircraft-carriers in the

#### JAPANESE FAIL TO SINK THE 'FRANKLIN'

One of the worst naval disasters of the war occurred on March 19, 1945, when Japanese aircraft struck at but failed to sink the 27,000-ton U.S. aircraft-carrier 'Franklin' some sixty miles off the south coast of Japan. In the explosions following the attack over 200,000 lb. of the carrier's ammunition and a large quantity of octane spirit blew up, killing over 800 of the crew. Below, the 'Franklin' lists badly as the cruiser 'Santa Fé' comes alongside.

*Photos, U.S. Navy*



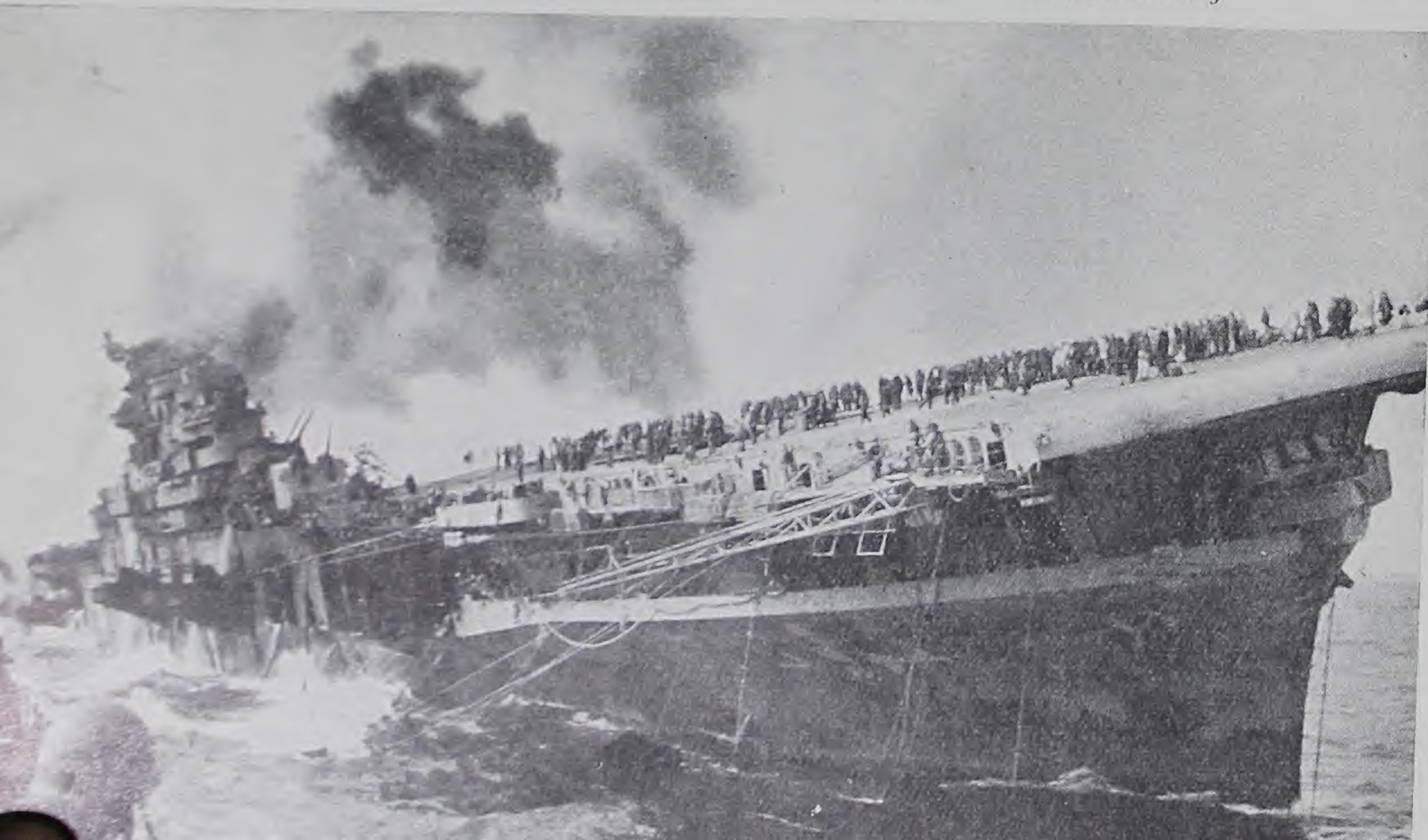
#### END OF JAPAN'S LAST BIG BATTLESHIP

The 45,000-ton 'Yamato', Japan's last remaining modern battleship, was sunk off Kyushu on April 7, 1945, as she led a 'suicide' force heading for Okinawa in support of an enemy counter-attack which had begun the previous day. She here attempts to escape bombs and torpedoes of attacking U.S. carrier aircraft. Fires flame up amidships, while near-misses explode off the port bow. Two enemy cruisers and three destroyers were sunk in the same engagement.

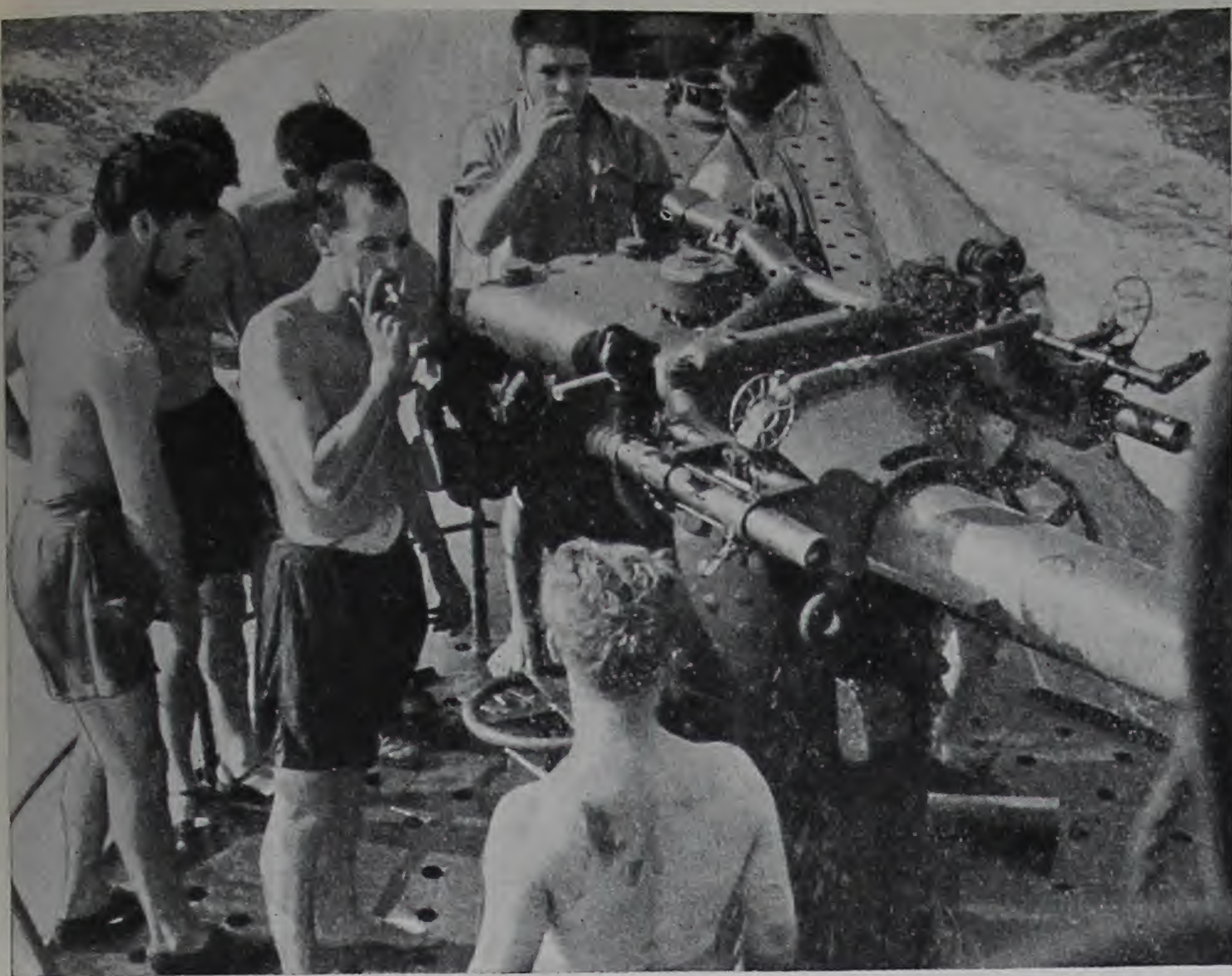
Royal Navy, the "Indefatigable," the "Victorious" and the "Formidable," which were serving with the British Pacific Fleet in the Ryukyus, were hit by five Kamikaze aircraft. Seventy men were killed, 34 seriously wounded, but all the carriers remained in action. The destroyer "Ulster" was

put out of action, however. British naval aircraft accounted for 140 enemy planes destroyed or damaged during these Japanese attacks, which were as fierce as any by the Luftwaffe on the Mediterranean and North Russia convoys.

On July 11, Mr. Artemus Gates, Under-Secretary of the Navy, reported that the U.S. Navy possessed two 45,000-ton aircraft-carriers (the "Midway" and the "Franklin D. Roosevelt"), 27 other first-line carriers of 27,000-tons and 10,000 tons, and 69 escort carriers; and declared that the United States Fleet had gained control of Pacific waters "right up to the Japanese coast." Three days later the truth of his words was demonstrated: the Japanese homeland was bombarded for the first time by Allied warships—a development following on frequent bombings by land- and carrier-based aircraft (described in Chapter 368). The target, the port and industrial centre of Kamaishi (which lies 275 miles north-east of Tokyo) received 1,000 tons of shells in a two-hour bombardment by a force of the U.S. 3rd Fleet under the command of







#### HEROIC STRUGGLE BY BRITISH SUBMARINE

Early in 1945 H.M.S. 'Shakespeare,' while attached to the East Indies Fleet, survived one of the stiffest battles of the submarine war during which she sank a medium-sized Japanese merchant ship and fought off 25 air attacks. A shell from an enemy merchantman tore a hole in her pressure hull, flooding the engine-room; and though four more shells ripped into her, the crew continued to fight the enemy air attacks. Here 'Shakespeare's' gun-crew is standing by during a pause in the action.

*Photo, British Official*

Rear-Admiral J. F. Shafroth and comprising the 35,000-ton battleships "Indiana," "Massachusetts" and "South Dakota," the 13,000-ton cruisers "Chicago" and "Quincy," and four destroyers. No opposition was met from shore batteries, aircraft or warships. Both before and during the bombardment, some thousand carrier-borne aircraft ranged over a wide area of north Honshu and Hokkaido, meeting no opposition. Next day, Muroran, whose population was swollen with refugees from the devastated cities of Honshu (see Chapter 368), was blasted from 1,000 yards range by another task force of the 3rd Fleet, including three of the biggest battleships in the world, the new 45,000-ton "Iowa," "Missouri," and "Wisconsin." Again there was no opposition.

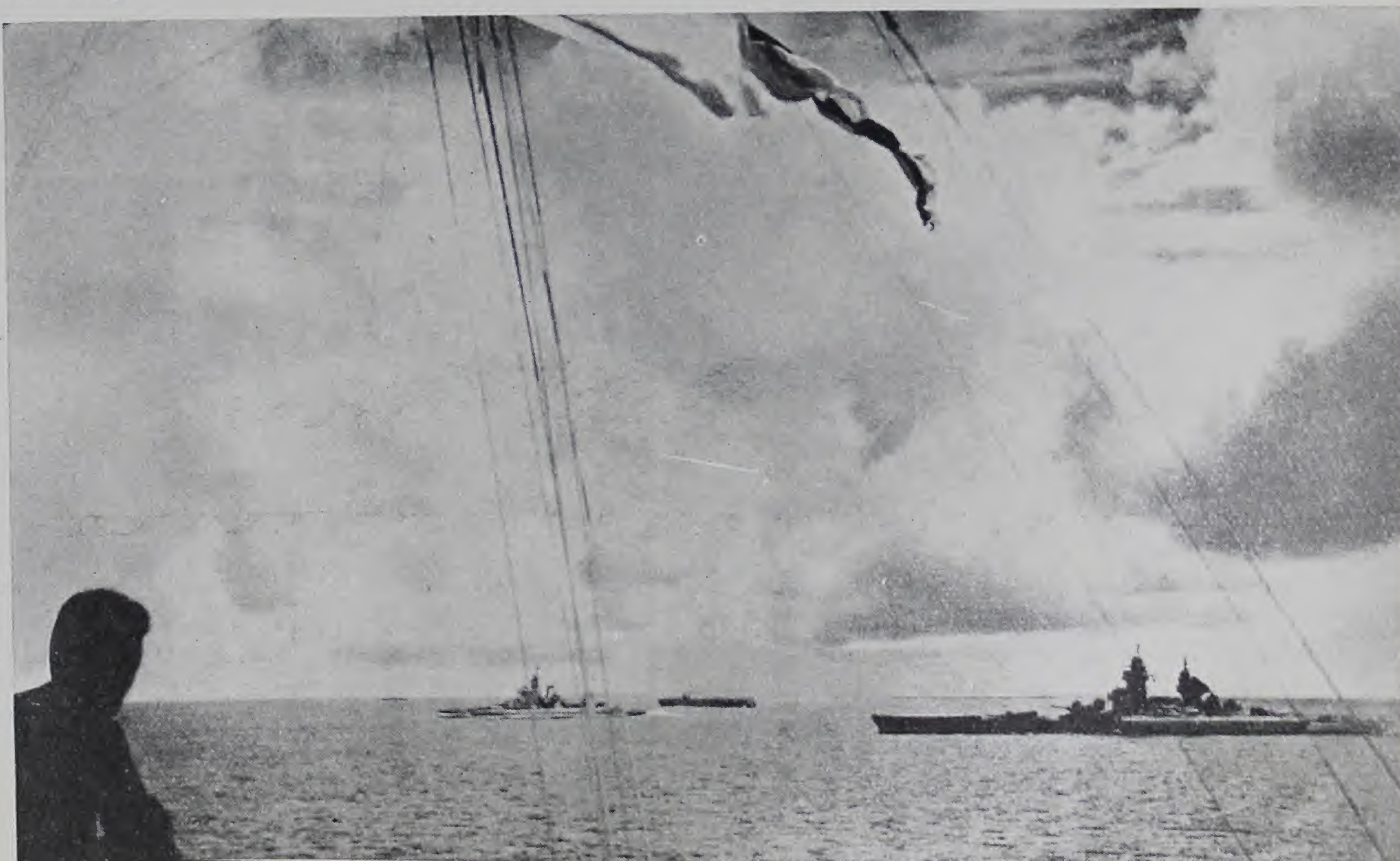
Under cover of darkness, during the night of July 16-17 the U.S. 3rd Fleet and British Pacific Fleet, which had met at a secret rendezvous 500 miles from Japan, carried out one of the heaviest naval bombardments of the war, their target being a 60-80 mile stretch of the Honshu coast

north of Tokyo. Battleships approached to within six miles of the shore, cruisers and destroyers frequently steamed close inshore at high speeds to bombard the targets at very short range. More than 2,000 tons of shells were poured into Japanese industrial centres in that area

#### BRITISH EAST INDIES FLEET ATTACKS SUMATRA

'Softening-up' attacks were delivered against Sabang, off the north tip of Sumatra, Japanese-occupied naval base guarding the northern end of the Malacca Straits, beginning on April 12, 1945. Forces employed were units of the British East Indies Fleet, under the command of Vice-Admiral Harold Walker, including the 30,000-ton battleship 'Queen Elizabeth' (left), and the French battleship 'Richelieu' (right), here seen with an escort carrier (centre) during the operations.

*Photo British Official*



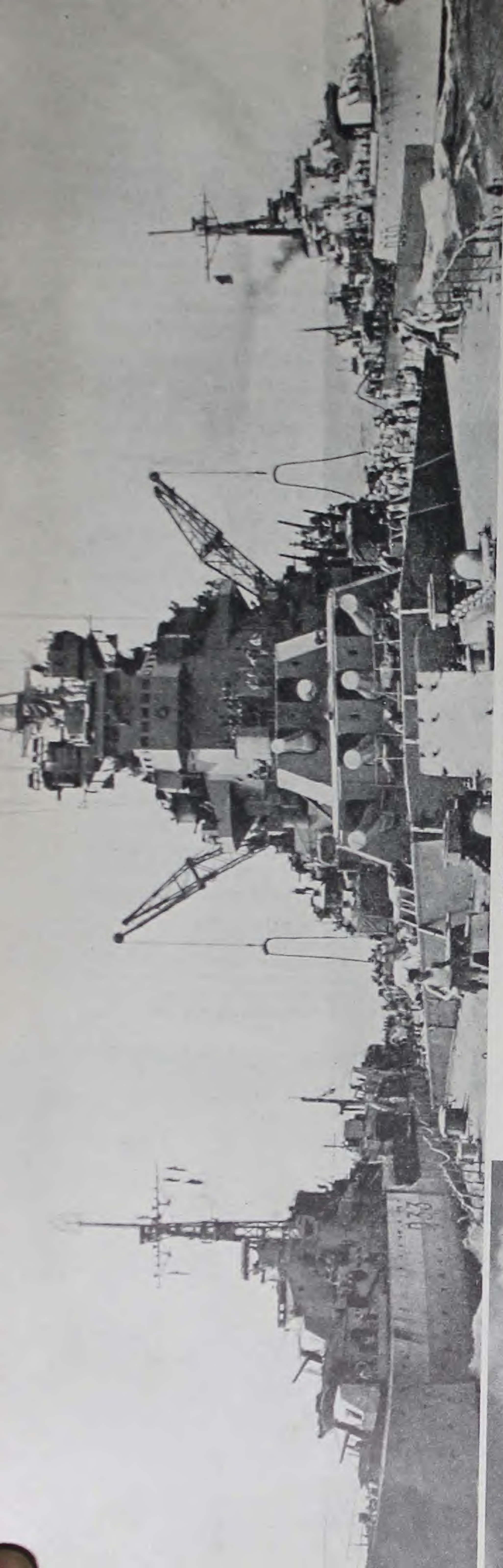
during this attack. Among British warships taking part were the 35,000-ton battleship "King George V," the 23,000-ton aircraft-carrier "Formidable," the cruisers "Newfoundland" and "Black Prince," the destroyers "Barfleur," "Grenville," "Quickmatch," "Troubridge," and "Undine." American ships participating included the "Iowa," which made naval history by broadcasting a running commentary of the action during the bombardment. No opposition of any kind was encountered.

An American cruiser squadron bombarded installations round Cape Nojima, 80 miles south of Tokyo, on the night of July 18-19. Nine U.S. destroyers entered Tokyo Bay and attacked an enemy convoy on the night of July 22-23, and on the 23rd destroyers of the 3rd Fleet swept close inshore in Sagami Bay (south-west of Tokyo Bay). On the 25th a U.S. cruiser and destroyer force under Rear-Admiral J. C. Jones bombarded the Kushimoto seaplane base and other targets at the southern tip of Honshu.

#### Japanese Coast Bombarded

During the night of July 29-30, a powerful Allied squadron, including the battleships H.M.S. "King George V" and U.S.S. "Massachusetts," fired over 1,000 tons of shells from a range of about six miles into the port and industrial centre of Hamamatsu. An Allied destroyer force steamed before dawn on July 31 into Suruga Gulf, on the south coast of Honshu, and carried

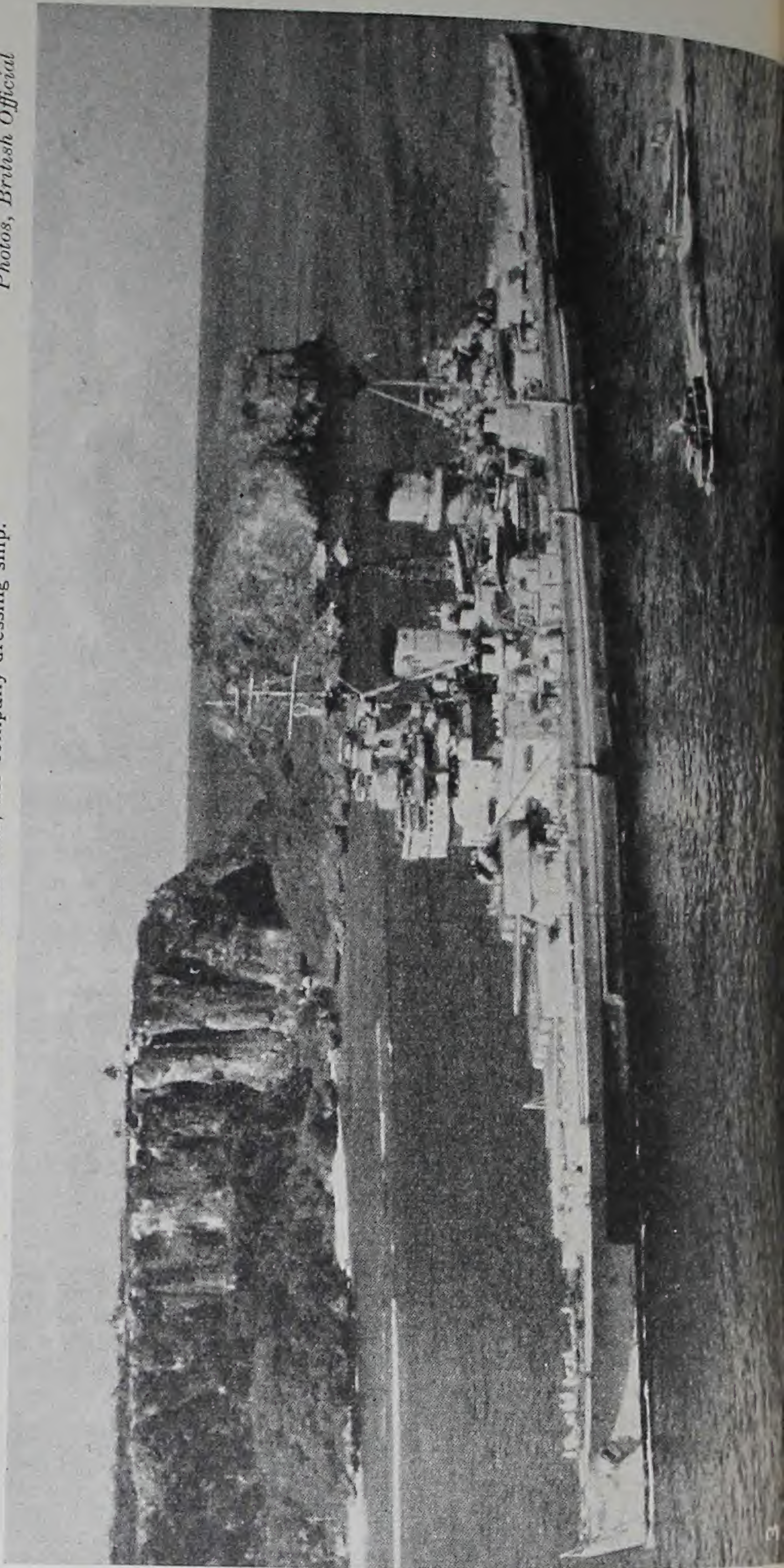




### BRITISH PACIFIC FLEET HASTENS DEFEAT OF JAPAN

On May 28, 1945, Vice-Admiral Sir Bernard Henry Rawlings, K.C.B., K.B.E., commanding a British task force, arrived at Guam on board his flagship H.M.S. 'King George V' for talks with Admiral Chester L. Nimitz, C.-in-C., Pacific Ocean Areas. The 'King George V' and the aircraft-carrier H.M.S. 'Illustrious' had been among units of the British Pacific Fleet which, in conjunction with Admiral Spruance's U.S. 5th Fleet and under overall American operational command, had taken part in their first major Pacific action when they attacked the Saki Islands, in the Ryukyus, on March 26 and 27. 1. H.M. destroyers 'Whelp' and 'Wager' refuel with oil from H.M.S. 'Duke of York' en route for the Japanese mainland in August 1945. 2. Admiral Rawlings and Admiral Nimitz on board the 'King George V' at Guam. 3. H.M.S. 'King George V' steams into Guam harbour, her company dressing ship.

*Photos, British Official*

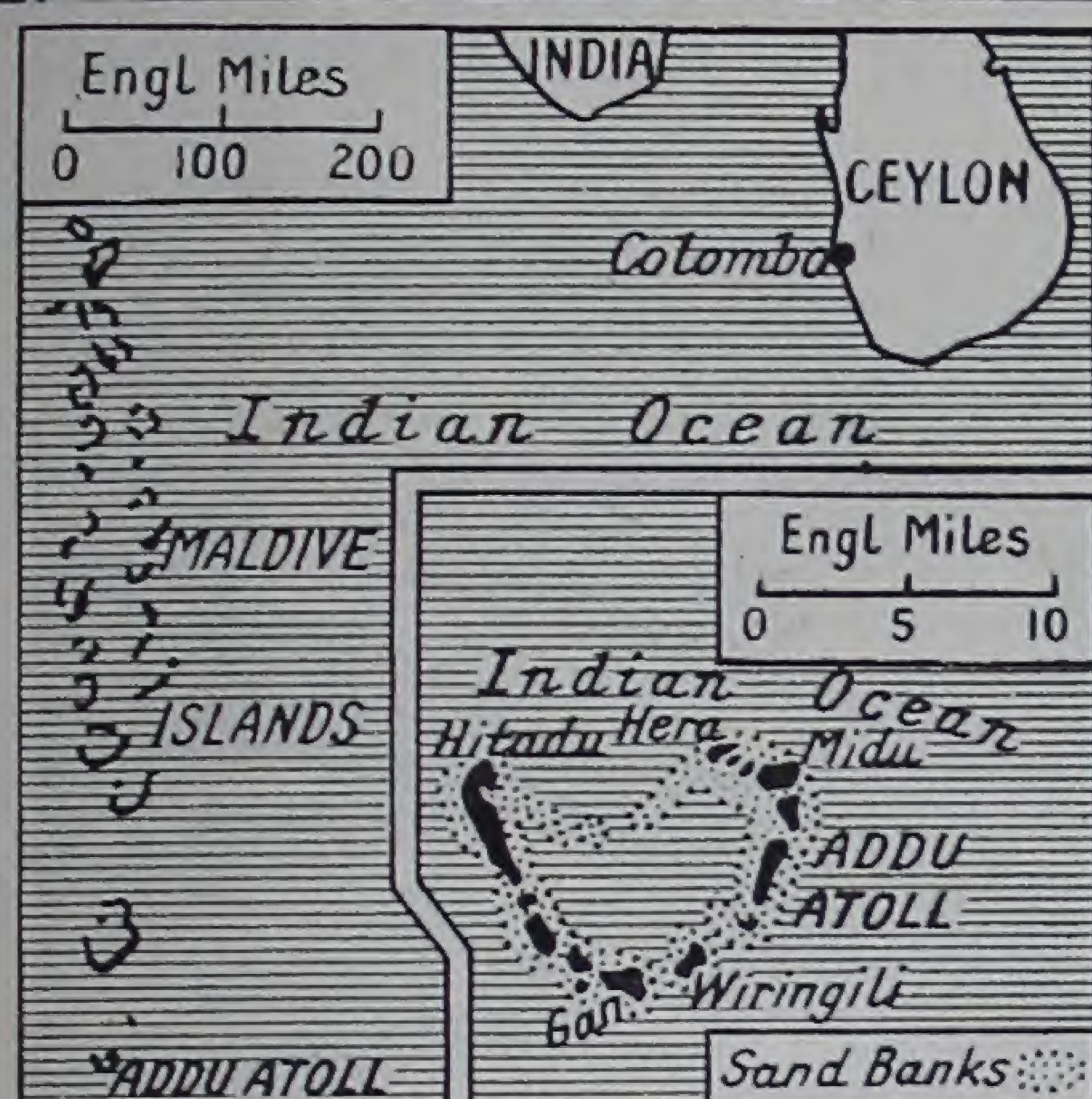






### SECRET NAVAL BASE IN THE INDIAN OCEAN

Details of Port 'T,' a secret British naval base dug out of the jungle by Royal Marines on Addu Atoll, a group of waterless coral islets in the Indian Ocean (see map left), was not disclosed till July 1945. Port 'T' became a vital link on the convoy route to Australia and a base for naval operations in the Indian Ocean. Left, the barrel of a heavy gun is being lowered into position at the port. Above, a well camouflaged gun position. *Photo, British Official*



out a five-minutes bombardment of Shimizu, port and aluminium centre. British cruisers and destroyers forming part of the 3rd Fleet steamed inshore on August 10 to bombard Kamaishi, target of the first naval bombardment of Japan. Paramushiro and other targets in the Kuriles were bombarded from close inshore by the U.S. cruisers "Concord" and "Richmond" on August 13. The next day saw the surrender of Japan.

While powerful United States and British fleets had moved steadily nearer the Japanese homeland, ships of the British East Indies Station were busy in the Indian Ocean and round the East Indies. Operating with the British Pacific and East Indies Fleets were, in addition to warships already mentioned, the battleships "Howe," "Queen Elizabeth," and "Valiant," the French battleship "Richelieu," the battle-cruiser "Renown," the aircraft-carrier "Indomitable," the cruisers "Argonaut" and "Euryalus," and the Dutch light cruiser "Tromp." Destroyers of the East Indies Fleet bombarded Sigli (Sumatra) on March 17; Port Blair in

the Andamans on March 19; and on the 26th, in co-operation with Liberators, sank an enemy convoy of ships escorted by two submarine chasers in the Andaman Sea. During the third week of April, Sumatra suffered naval attack: battleships and cruisers bombarded Sabang, destroyers bombarded Kota Raja, and naval aircraft bombed Padang and Emmahaven. Japanese aircraft rising in defence were repulsed. Battleships, cruisers and destroyers bombarded

airfields on Car-Nicobar in the Nicobar Islands on April 30. Avenger aircraft operating from the escort-carrier "Shah" attacked the 10,000-ton Japanese cruiser "Haguro" in the northern Malacca Straits; a destroyer force consisting of the "Saumarez" and the "Virago" (both of which played a part in the sinking of the "Scharnhorst"—see page 2851), the "Venus," the "Verulam," and the "Vigilant," led by Captain M. L. Power ("Saumarez"),

intercepted and sank her with torpedoes.

Aircraft from carriers of the British East Indies Fleet bombed enemy airfields in Sumatra, and shipping in the Malacca Straits, without loss on June 20. From July 5-10, undisturbed by the enemy, a naval force commanded by Rear-Admiral W. R. Patterson on board the cruiser H.M.S. "Nigeria," and including the escort-carriers "Ameer" and "Emperor," the destroyer "Roebuck" and the 6th Mine-sweeping Flotilla,

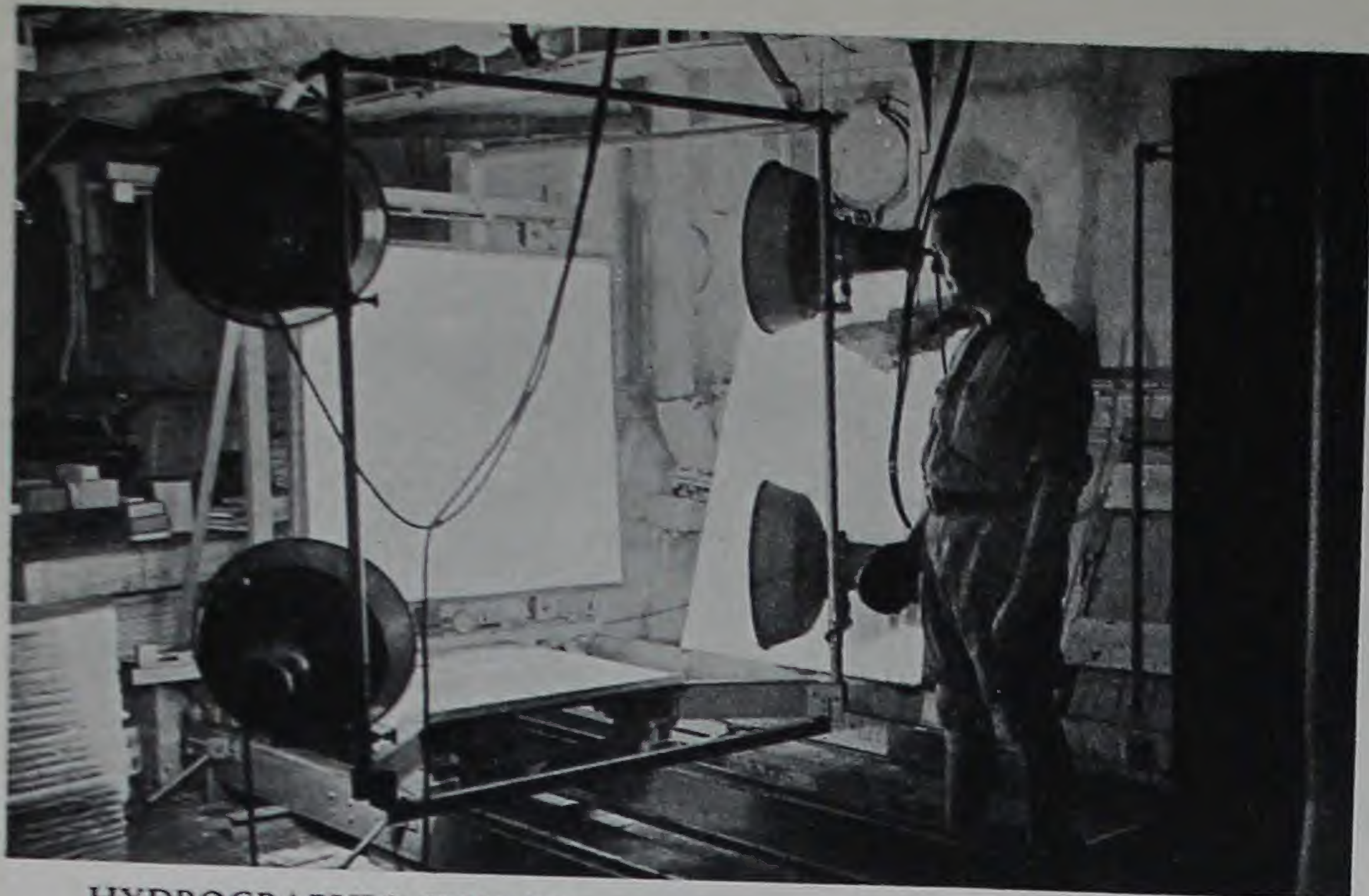


Leading Seaman JAMES MAGENNIS (R.N.)

Lieutenant IAN FRASER, D.S.C. (R.N.R.)

For bravery in the attack by H.M. Midget Submarine XE-3 on the Japanese cruiser 'Takao' in the Johore Straits, Singapore, on July 31, 1945 (see page 3771), Lieutenant Ian Edward Fraser, the commander, and Leading Seaman James Magennis were both awarded the V.C. As there was sufficient depth of water for the XE-3 to place herself for the attack only under the midship portion of the 'Takao,' Lieutenant Fraser forced his craft right under the centre of the cruiser, where her hatch would not open fully; but Leading Seaman Magennis, the diver, managed to squeeze his way out and fix limpet mines to the cruiser's hull, scraping off several years' growth of barnacles. Later, though exhausted and armed only with a spanner, he daringly released one of the mine-carriers which had become jammed against the XE-3's hull. *Photo, Planet News*

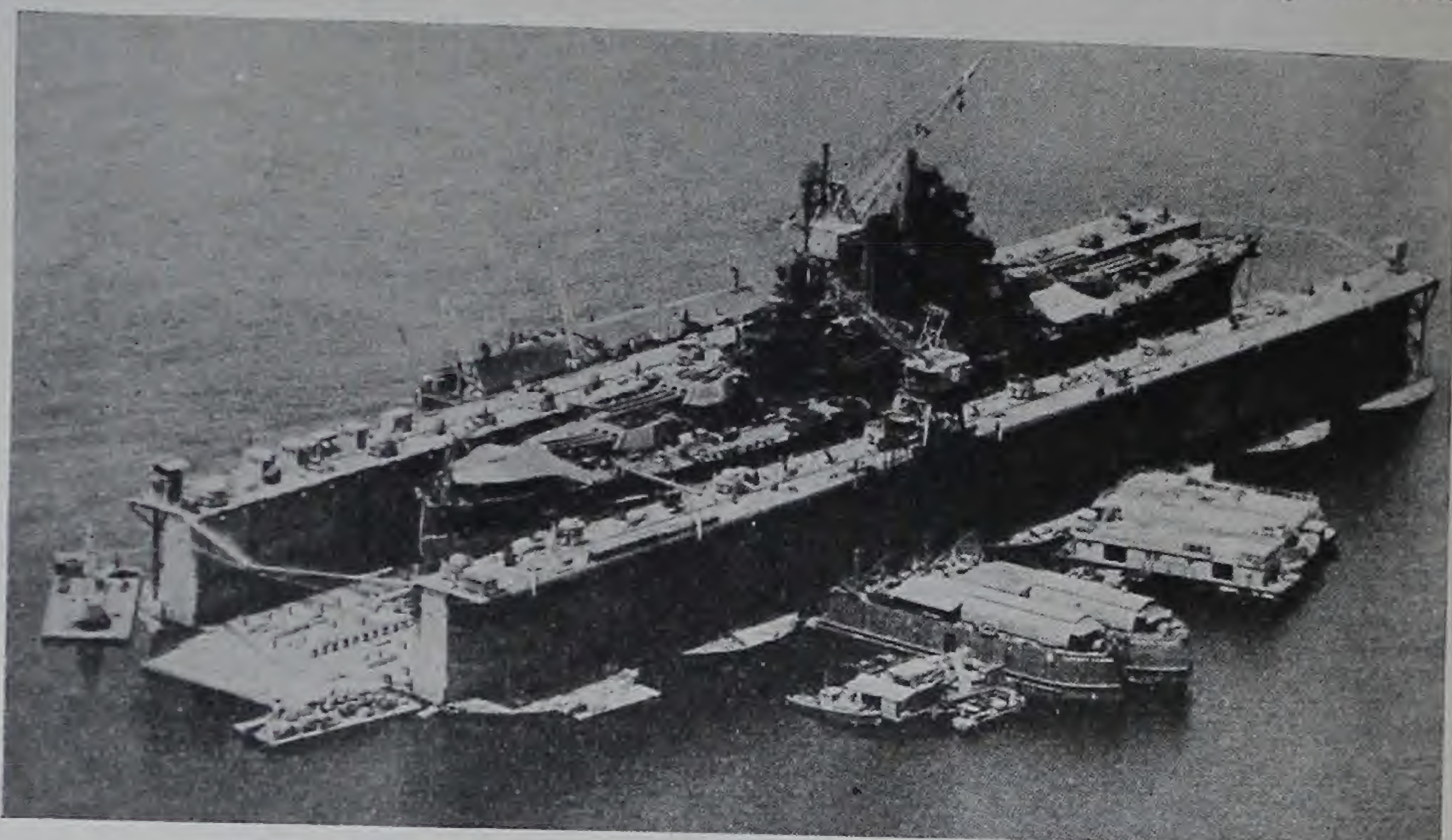




### HYDROGRAPHIC SURVEY

Sergeant of the Royal Marines photographing drawn charts with a huge camera taking plates  $48\frac{1}{2}$  ins. by  $40\frac{1}{2}$  ins. The negative was transferred to a sensitized zinc plate from which copies were printed. This was a task carried out in H.M.S. 'White Bear,' a hydrographic survey vessel serving with the East Indies Fleet and acting as headquarters for smaller vessels able to penetrate narrow creeks and rivers.

was engaged in sustained mine-sweeping operations in the approaches to the Malacca Straits. Simultaneously, a combined air attack and bombardment was carried out against enemy installations in the Nicobar Islands; while carrier-borne planes bombed airfields in north-west Sumatra. No casualties or damage was suffered by



### WARSHIP IN DRY-DOCK AT SEA

After an attack by enemy aircraft, the 33,000-ton U.S.S. battleship 'Mississippi' was towed for repairs to a giant floating dry-dock (see illus. in page 3397) in June 1945 at an anchorage off the port of Guiuan at Samar Island (see map in page 3268) in the Philippines. She was the first battleship in the Philippines area to be serviced in a floating dry-dock.

in the course of the last seven months of the war. Japanese submarine casualties in 1945, all sunk by American ships or aircraft, were 28; Japan's total loss of submarines throughout the war was 130,  $9\frac{1}{2}$  by British attack.

A new American naval command, the Philippine Sea Frontier (under Rear-Admiral James L. Kauffman) was set up at the beginning of 1945 to include all South-West Pacific waters except actual battle areas of the U.S. 7th Fleet: its main task was to facilitate the flow of supplies to the 7th Fleet and to General MacArthur's troops in the Philippines.

In July the existence of a secret British naval base in the Indian Ocean



### PACIFIC FLEET PRINTED ITS OWN NEWSPAPER

Typical example of the Royal Navy's capacity for 'carrying on' was the production and distribution of 'Pacific Post,' the British Pacific Fleet's own newspaper, written and printed by the Navy for the Navy. Its offices were in Sydney, New South Wales, and it had a circulation of almost 40,000. Here, ratings in a Pacific Fleet destroyer read their paper during a lull.

*Photos, British Official; New York Times Photos*





*Photo, Associated Press*

#### AMERICAN FLAG FLIES OVER JAPANESE TERRITORY

After fighting against fanatical enemy resistance every foot of the ascent of 300-ft. high Mt. Suribachi, the volcano commanding the whole of Iwo Jima, U.S. Marines on February 23, 1945, captured it and while still under fire hoisted the Stars and Stripes—with a length of Japanese piping as flag-pole. This was only four days after the initial landings on the island. The enemy had laid down a heavy rain of fire on the beaches from caves in the sides of Mt. Suribachi. Iwo Jima was the first territory of the pre-war Japanese empire to fall to the Allies.





*Photos, British Official*

### JAPANESE 'SUICIDE' PLANES HIT BRITISH CARRIERS

As the Allied navies drew nearer the Japanese homeland, the defeated enemy formed a corps of Kamikaze or 'suicide' pilots for their aircraft. On July 8, 1945, it was reported that during twelve weeks' operations by the British Pacific Fleet in the Saki Islands, three of Britain's newest aircraft-carriers, the 'Indefatigable,' the 'Victorious' and the 'Formidable,' had been hit by five Kamikaze planes. Though damage was caused, 70 men being killed the ships remained in action. Here, firefighters go into action after the suicide hit on H.M.S. 'Formidable.'





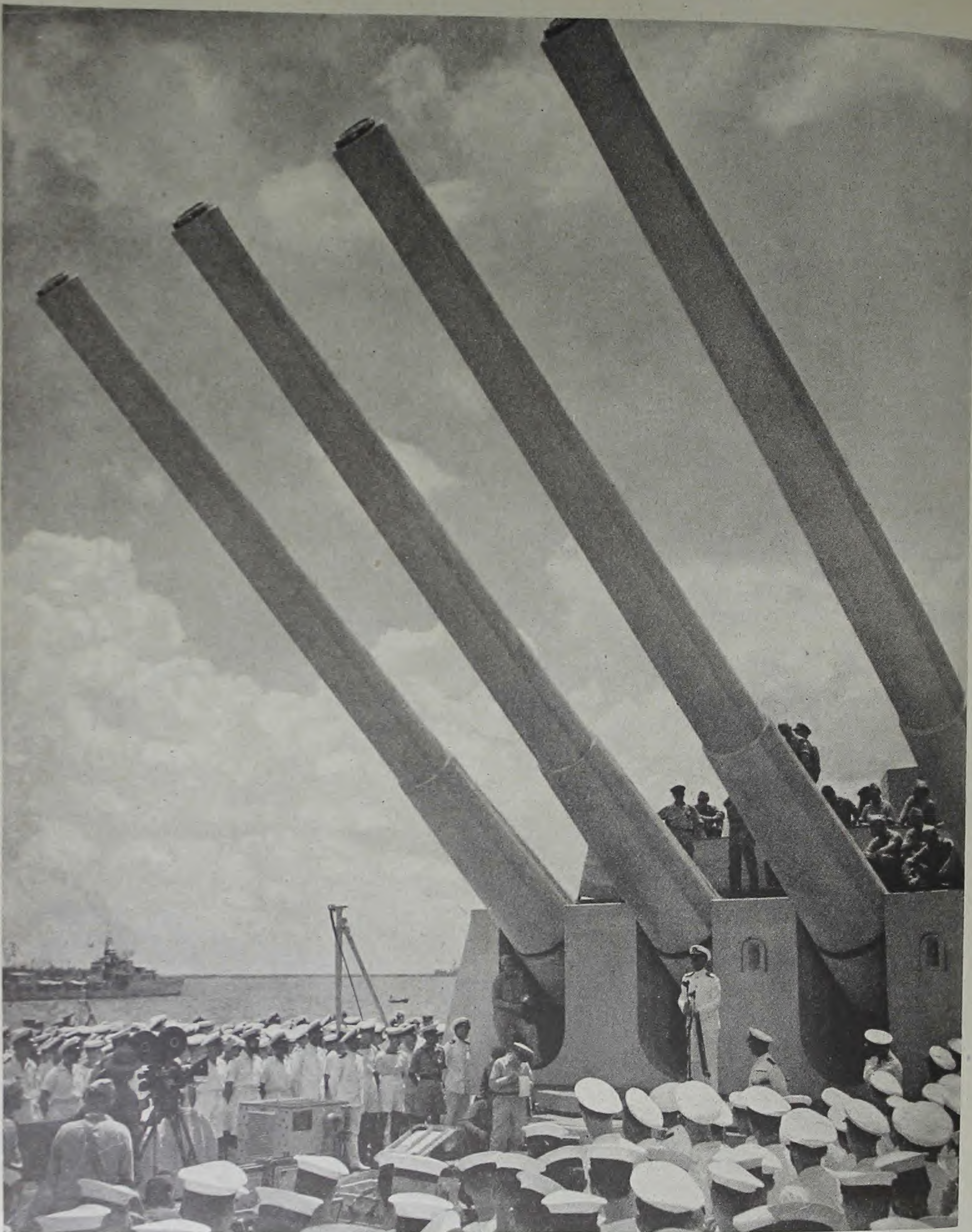
## ENEMY'S BITTER LAST STAND AS OKINAWA FALLS

Some of the fiercest fighting in the Pacific campaign occurred during the 82-days' struggle, begun on April 1, 1945, for the island of Okinawa, in the Ryukyu group and some 750 miles from the Japanese capital. Typical of Okinawa was this desolate battlefield near Shuri (see map in page 3755), peppered with rain-filled shell-craters and dotted with blasted tree stumps, after the U.S. 10th Army artillery had blown the enemy from their positions. The demolished radio tower in the left foreground was one of eleven in this vital nerve-centre of resistance manned by some 80,000 fanatical Japanese. Until they were blown from them, the enemy concealed themselves in caves in the small hill to the left. Below, U.S. Marines crouch at the entrance to a cave after hurling an explosive charge to force out Japanese troops making a desperate last stand.

*Photos, U.S. Army Air Forces  
and Marine Corps*







#### ADMIRAL NIMITZ WELCOMES BRITISH AID IN THE PACIFIC

*Photo, Associated Press*

Full-scale co-operation between the British Pacific Fleet and U.S. naval forces, begun off the Saki Islands, in the Ryukyus, on March 26 and 27, 1945, contributed materially towards hastening the end of the war against Japan. Addressing the ship's company, under the shadow of the 14-inch guns of the British battleship 'King George V' in Guam Harbour in May (see illus. in page 3764), Admiral Chester L. Nimitz, U.S.N., C.-in-C., Pacific Ocean Areas, declared, 'From the very beginning we have welcomed your coming and we will continue to welcome your help.'



was revealed. Work began on "Port T" in September 1941 when the 1st Royal Marine Coast Regiment, under Lieutenant-Colonel (later Major-General) W. B. F. Lukis, went ashore on Addu Atoll, a group of waterless coral islets 500 miles from Colombo and 3,000 from Australia, to establish coastal batteries, searchlights, signal towers, roads, camps and jetties. The hot and humid climate, the difficulty of keeping food fresh, the lack of fresh water, and the resultant fevers and malaria made it necessary to evacuate in the first three months nearly one quarter of the force originally landed.

Four miles of roadway were laid across a swamp infested by giant crabs, the men working thigh-deep in foul mud to lay its foundations. The batteries were in position within six weeks, and "Port T" was ready for use before Japan entered the war. The first convoy of troops, escorted by the cruiser H.M.S. "Emerald," arrived at the base on January 3, 1942. "Port T" remained a vital link on the convoy route to Australia, and for operations in the Indian Ocean, throughout the war. It could accommodate the largest ships—the "Queen Mary" put in there.

Ships serving in the Pacific had to face bad weather conditions as well as the enemy: an announcement of the loss in a typhoon of three American destroyers, the "Spence," the "Hull," and the "Monaghan," was made on

#### THE 'INDOMITABLE' IN HONGKONG BAY

After almost four years, a powerful force of British warships on August 30, 1945, entered Hong-kong harbour (see also illus. in page 3605). Under the command of Rear-Admiral Cecil H. J. Harcourt, it included the battleship 'Anson' and the aircraft-carriers 'Indomitable' and 'Venerable.' Below, the 30,000-ton 'Indomitable' rides at anchor in Victoria Bay, Hong-kong, as a Chinese junk passes nearby.

*Photo, British Official*



#### AMERICAN HOSPITAL SHIP OFF LEYTE

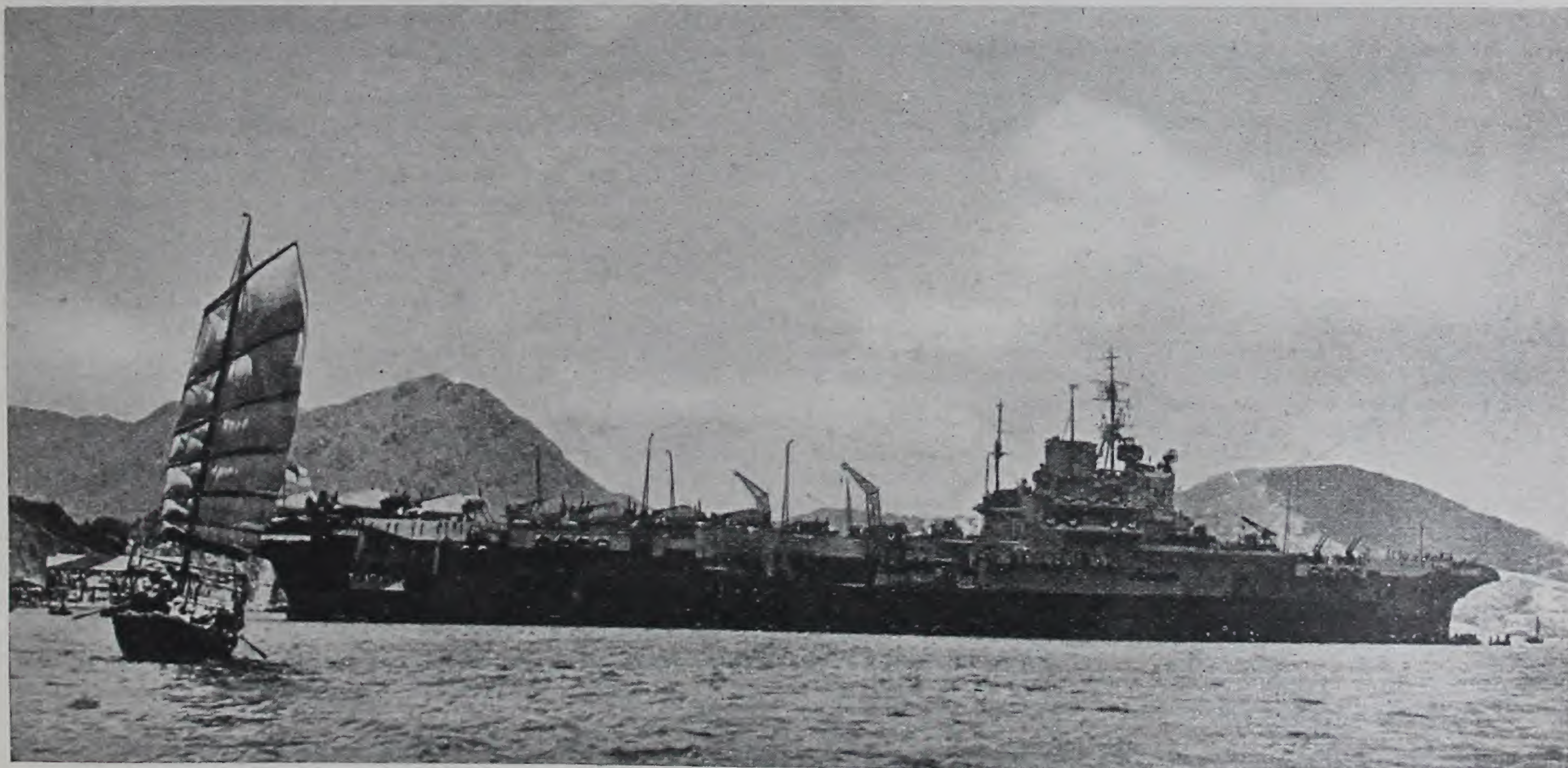
Evacuating wounded by hospital ship from the battlefields of Leyte in the Philippines after the landings on October 20, 1944. Even hospital ships were not immune from attack by Japanese 'suicide' pilots: on April 28, Washington announced that the U.S. hospital vessel 'Comfort' had been hit by a 'baka' suicide glider-bomb (see Chapter 368) as she evacuated wounded from Okinawa, badly damaging her and killing 29.

*Photo, New York Times Photos*

January 10. On June 5 another typhoon damaged 21 units of the U.S. 3rd Fleet, none being sunk on this occasion, however, and most of them back in service some six weeks later.

Great gallantry was displayed on July 31, 1945, in a successful attack by a midget submarine on the Japanese heavy cruiser "Takao." Lieutenant Ian E. Fraser, D.S.C., R.N.R., brought his

craft, XE-3, up an eighty-mile passage, through mined waters, past hydrophone posts, and through an anti-submarine boom to the "Takao," at her moorings in very shallow water in Johore Strait, Singapore. Despite severe exhaustion through lack of oxygen, Leading-Seaman James Magennis, diver on the XE-3, placed "limpet" charges under the "Takao's" keel, damaging the vessel seriously. Lieutenant Fraser then piloted his submarine back to safety. For this exploit both he and Leading-Seaman Magennis were awarded the V.C. on November 13, 1945.





## 'CHINA INCIDENT' ENDS : SINO-SOVIET TREATY, 1945

Here are the surrender terms signed by the Japanese which ended the undeclared war they had waged against China for more than eight years. Extracts from President Chiang Kai-shek's V.J. Day broadcast and the articles of the treaty of friendship and alliance of 1945 between China and the Soviet Union complete the page

### Japanese Surrender to China, September 9, 1945.

THE formal surrender of a million Japanese troops in China, signed at Nanking at 1.04 a.m. (British Summer Time) on September 9, 1945, brought to an end the "China Incident," as Japan called the war which was precipitated by her unprovoked attack on July 7, 1937. The instrument of surrender acknowledged that "the Emperor of Japan, the Japanese Government, and the Japanese Imperial General Headquarters" recognized the "complete military defeat of the Japanese military forces by the Allied forces," and stipulated:

1. All Japanese land, sea, air and auxiliary forces in China (south of the Great Wall, and excluding Manchuria), as well as in Formosa and French Indo-China north of latitude 16 degrees, will cease hostilities and will remain at the stations they now occupy. They are now non-combatant troops, and in due course will be demobilized. They will assemble, preserve from damage, and turn over to forces specified by Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek all arms, ammunition, equipment, supplies, records, information, and other assets of any kind belonging to the Japanese forces.

2. All Allied prisoners of war and civilian internees formerly under Japanese control in the areas named above will be liberated at once, and the Japanese forces will provide protection, maintenance, and transportation to places as directed.

3. Henceforth, all Japanese forces hereby surrendered will be subject to the control of Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek. Their movement and activity will be dictated by him, and they will obey only the orders and proclamations issued or authorized by him or orders of their Japanese commanders based upon his instructions.

4. Local Japanese commanders will be required to implement these orders, subject to drastic punishment for violation of them.

### Broadcast by Chiang Kai-shek, President of the Chinese Republic, on China's V.J. Day (September 3, 1945).

NOW that the war is over we shall brook no further delay in the inauguration of constitutional democracy. The highest ideal of the national revolution is the participation of all the people in national politics. The most important measure for the realization of this ideal is to return the power of government to the people. The convocation of the National Assembly is indispensable to the return of such power to the people. I earnestly hope that the people as a whole and leaders of all walks of life will give sincere support to the Government for the early convocation of the National Assembly and the attainment of democracy.

The successful conclusion of the prolonged war is the time to begin the task of national reconstruction. The Government's administrative policy will be guided by impartiality and sincerity. . . . The Government is prepared to consult all leaders before the convocation of the National Assembly. It is also ready to consider a reasonable increase in the number of delegates to the Assembly and to seek a rational settlement of other related problems.

As a safeguard to the freedoms of the people, the National Government has, besides the enforcement of the law for the protection of personal freedom, decided to abolish the war-time press censorship so that the people may have freedom of speech. It will promulgate a law to facilitate political assembly and organization. . . . Only thus can we tread the path of democracy traversed by the United States and Great Britain and establish a model democratic state in the Far East.

If we want to attain democracy, we must have the rule of law as the foundation of constitutional government, and the Constitution as the safeguard of the people. Disreputable

practices like the employment of armed force in political controversy and the seizure of territory in defiance of Government orders are relics of the days of the war lords. They should not be found in a modern democratic state and could not be tolerated in national rebuilding. Only when domestic problems are peacefully solved by political means, and all shades of opinion observe the law of the country, can we avoid the mistakes made in the early days of the Republic. . . .

The most important condition for national unity is the nationalization of all armed forces in the country. There should be no private army within the country's boundaries, nor should armed forces be kept by any political party. . . . On behalf of the Government I solemnly state that all armed forces, if they submit to recognition by the Government, shall receive the same treatment without discrimination.

### Treaty of Friendship and Alliance between the U.S.S.R. and the Republic of China, signed on August 14, 1945.

1. The high contracting parties undertake jointly with the other United Nations to wage war against Japan until final victory. The high contracting parties pledge themselves to render each other all necessary military and other help and assistance in this war.

2. The high contracting parties undertake not to enter into separate negotiations with Japan and not to conclude an armistice without mutual consent with either the present Japanese Government or with any other Government or authority established in Japan which will not clearly renounce all aggressive intentions.

3. The high contracting parties undertake after the end of the war against Japan to take jointly all the measures in their power to prevent a repetition of aggression and violation of the peace on the part of Japan. If one of the high contracting parties becomes the victim of aggression, the other contracting party will immediately render to the party involved in military operations all military and other aid and support at her disposal. This article remains in force until such time as, at the request of both high contracting parties, responsibility for the prevention of further aggression by Japan is placed in the hands of the United Nations organization.

4. Each of the high contracting parties undertakes not to conclude an alliance of any kind and not to take part in any coalition directed against the other contracting party.

5. The high contracting parties, taking into account the protection and economic development of each country, agree to work together in friendly co-operation after the advent of peace and to act on the principle of mutual respect of each other's sovereign and territorial rights and not to interfere in the internal affairs of the other contracting party.

6. The high contracting parties agree to give each other all possible economic help in the post-war period to speed up the reconstruction of both countries and in order to bring about the well-being of the world.

7. This agreement is drawn up in a way which respects the rights and obligations of the high contracting Powers and all member Powers of the United Nations.

8. This agreement is subject to ratification which is to take place as soon as possible. The exchange of the instruments of ratification will be made in Chungking. The agreement comes into force immediately after its ratification, and will remain valid for 30 years. If neither of the high contracting parties gives notice during this period of its desire to terminate the agreement, it will remain in force for an indefinite period thereafter, subject to each of the high contracting parties being able to terminate the agreement by giving one year's notice to the other contracting party.

[The principal terms of important agreements signed at the same time are published in page 3566.]



# CONTINUING CIVIL WAR IN CHINA

*The year 1945 saw the end of China's eight-year-old struggle against Japan, but not the dawn of peace for her : civil war between the Kuomintang Government under Chiang Kai-shek and the Communist forces of the north under Mao Tse-tung continued throughout that year and on into 1946, despite pertinacious efforts by both Chinese and Allied leaders to compose their differences. The history of China during 1944 is recorded in Chapter 323*

**M**ILITARY operations in China during the last months before Japan's surrender were little more than a pendant to the vastly greater enterprises going forward against the Japanese from the Kuriles to Burma (see Chapters 351, 364, 365, 367, 371). It was in fact in Burma, where they helped to open the Ledo Road, that Chinese troops made probably their most significant contribution to these culminating campaigns (see pages 3277 and 3538).

Within China, the beginning of 1945 found Japan's final great offensive checked (see page 3280), but the enemy was still in possession of most of the important gains he had secured (see map in page 3280).

The vulnerability of these gains, in view of the Allied advance west and north in the Pacific, was already evident when on January 13 carrier-borne planes of Admiral Nimitz's fleet swept over Hongkong, Swatow and Amoy. For years the east China ports had been

useless to the Chinese in face of unchallengeable Japanese sea dominance; now Japan's gains on land in the same area were made valueless by loss of that dominance. Moreover, General MacArthur's campaign in the Pacific was steadily gaining for the Allies a position in which land-based bombers could harass the narrow Japanese communications corridor connecting Manchuria with Indo-China; and although the Chinese were still too weak in heavy arms—and above all too short of mechanized transport—to be likely to mount a large-scale offensive, their continuous small-scale harassing activity over a vast area was a steady drain on Japan's military budget.

After an uneasy winter of seeming stalemate, there came signs that the enemy was being forced to pull out, to leave his southern China conquests to their detached garrisons with the doubtful aid of sedulously sponsored independence movements, and to move his main defence line back to the original limited object of the 1937 attack on China—the line of the Yellow River protecting Manchuria's industries. The

Chinese began to move forward. Their first notable success came in March with the recapture of the airbase at Suichwan in Kiangsi province, East China, abandoned by the U.S.A. 14th A.F. in February. A month later, away to the west, they recovered from their last local setback (loss of the airbase of Lahokow in Hupeh) to launch a general counter-attack in Honan and Hupeh provinces against Japan's north-south corridor. By May full Japanese retreat was evident in the east, the Chinese on the 18th regaining the key port of Foochow on the Fukien coast and sweeping on to capture exactly a month later the port of Wenchow, 150 miles to the north, and only 250 miles south

of Shanghai. On June 25 the Chinese High Command announced that Chinese forces were in control of nearly 200 miles of the Chekiang coast.

From the west, too, pressure was intensified. In Hunan, a drive began in May against the Japanese supply base and communications centre at Paoching. The seriousness of the threat in this quarter

**Chinese  
Sixth Army  
Flown In**

was made clear by the disclosure in Chungking on May 28 that the entire Chinese 6th Army with guns, horses and equipment had been flown by the American Air Transport Command over a thousand miles from Burma into Hunan over the Himalayan "hump." This vast



**CHINESE TROOPS RECAPTURE KWEILIN**

The Chinese High Command announced on July 29, 1945, that their forces, trained and equipped by the U.S. Army, had driven the Japanese from the city and important air base of Kweilin, capital of Kwangsi province in south-west China. Formerly main forward base of the U.S.A. 14th A.F., it had been lost during the Japanese offensive late in 1944 (see page 3279). Here, Chinese troops re-enter the ruined city.

*Photo, Keystone*



air trooping operation—the first in which an entire army had been flown from one operational theatre to another—brought into the central China picture a formidable body of troops, American-trained and equipped, which had proved its merit in the gruelling Burma campaign. For the first time, China was able to bring against the inferior Japanese divisions left in China an army equipped and trained to up-to-date standards.

In the south, where Japan's biggest gains of late 1944 had been scored, the enemy had been deprived of Nanning by May 27, and a few days later the Chinese took Pinyang, sixty miles to the north. By the end of the month, pressing from west and south, the Chinese had reached and recaptured the air-base town of Liuchow, junction of the railways leading north-west to Kweiyang, north-east to Hankow.

Continuing their drive against the retreating Japanese, Chinese troops on July 29 re-entered Kweilin, capital of Kwangsi and until 1944 main forward base in south China of the United States Army 14th Air Force. Despite

the limitations imposed on it by the loss of its forward bases, this Air Force carried out during 1945 attacks of a scale and range which reflected the improved supply position both by air and by road from India. (The Ledo Road, pushed through Japanese-occupied Burma with such audacity—see Chapters 299 and 345—was abandoned on November 1: it was worthless as a peacetime commercial highway.) In one long-range sweep against Tsingtao on the Shantung coast of north China on February 10, Mustangs of the U.S.A. 14th A.F. destroyed 46 Japanese aircraft on the ground. Fighters of the same force destroyed 92 parked planes in attacks on an aerodrome near Shanghai on April 1 and 2.

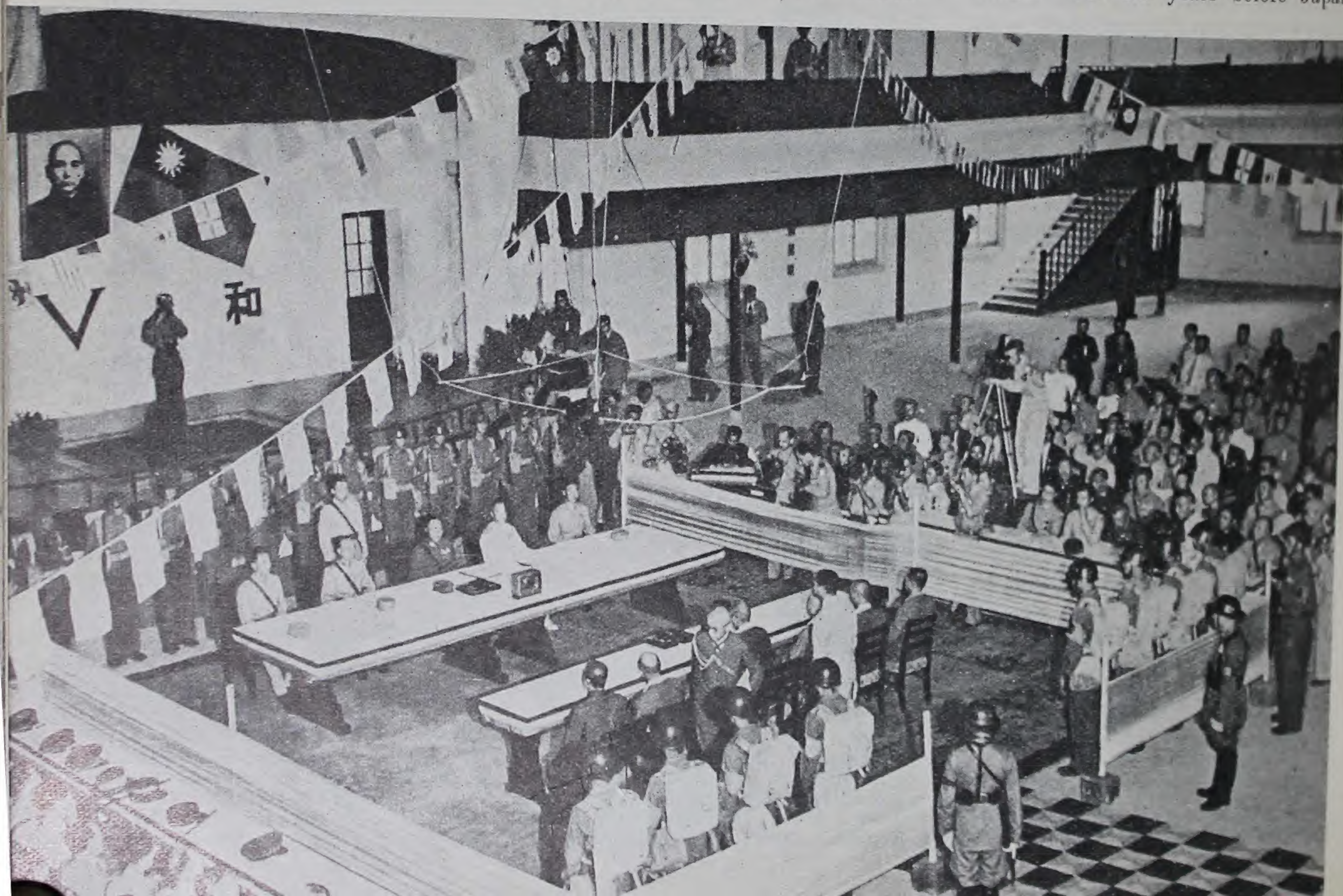
By the end of July, the Japanese were concentrating their forces—then estimated by Chungking at about 1,000,000, with another 1,000,000 “puppet” troops in reserve—at vital centres such as Canton, Hankow, Shanghai, and the Shantung peninsula. Then, on August 9, came the Soviet attack in Manchuria (see page 3780) and, five days later, Japan's capitulation. China was free

from the Japanese threat after eight years and a month of unremitting if sometimes feeble struggle. But the freedom which followed Japan's collapse called for further vast endeavours before it could become the basis of a unified and peaceful sovereign state. China ended the war with a million enemy troops under arms and undefeated in the field sprawled over wide areas of her territory; with the armies of her new Russian ally in occupation of three great provinces which her own troops could not immediately reach; with an autonomous army answerable to a dissident regime intermingled with enemy and Allied troops all over the north.

The major problem, which in the succeeding months prolonged misery and strife in large areas of China, was the quarrel between the Kuomintang-Communist one-party regime of Kuomintang-Quarrel, recognized by the world as the legal Government of China under the Presidency of Chiang Kai-shek, and the Communist-dominated coalition which by stout guerilla fighting throughout the war had extended its authority from a small sparse area of central Shensi province in the north-west to innumerable pockets of resistance and free administration throughout the Japanese-occupied areas of north China. For ten years before Japan

#### JAPANESE C.-IN-C. SURRENDERS IN CHINA

Acknowledging ‘complete military defeat,’ the Japanese in China formally surrendered to the Chinese at an impressive ceremony in the Central Military Academy at Nanking, the pre-war capital, on September 9, 1945. The surrender, which involved about 1,000,000 troops, was made to General Ho Ying-chin, Chinese C.-in-C. (centre at table on left), acting for Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek, by General Okamura, commanding the Japanese Army in China (centre at table on right).







### SOVIET-CHINESE TREATY OF FRIENDSHIP

A treaty of friendship and alliance between the Chinese Republic and the Soviet Union was signed at the Kremlin, in Moscow, on August 14, 1945 (see Historic Document 306, page 3772). Here, Mr. Wang Shih-chieh, the Chinese Foreign Minister, signs the instrument, while Generalissimo Stalin and Mr. Molotov, Soviet Commissar for Foreign Affairs, look on. The agreement was to come into force immediately and remain valid for thirty years. *Photo, Pictorial Press*

attacked there had been open civil war between Kuomintang and Communists, and the uneasy truce of 1937 had been as much a reaction to the threat of Japan as it was an immediate cause of that threat's being translated into action.

Thrown together in apparent collaboration at the outbreak of war, Kuomintang and Communists did not maintain amity long after the stalemate

#### Armed Clashes

which in 1939 followed the bitter campaigns of the first 18 months' resistance to Japan. Armed clashes became increasingly frequent, while the long heritage of bitterness earned compound interest in innumerable accusations by each side against the other of dictatorship, defeatism, corruption, maladministration. It is to the credit of the leaders, both Kuomintang and Communist, that (partly under pressure from the Allies) attempts were made to achieve harmony by discussion; but by the end of the war little progress had been made (see page 3281). Latterly the Communists concentrated their efforts on a demand for a coalition government, refusing to hand over control of their armies to any other regime, while the Kuomintang maintained that it was its duty to retain the substance of power until a new national constitution could be fully put into effect by a unified nation from which such things as local armies not answerable to the High Command had already disappeared.

Either argument can be written reasonably enough; the gap was due less to declared aims than to mutual distrust. The Communists believed the Kuomintang insincere in its plans for transition to democracy and feared the defeat of Japan would be the signal for a renewed attempt to wipe them out

and eliminate their potential influence from the promised constitution-making body. The Kuomintang believed the Communists were ever seeking to extend their territorial control by armed force; indeed, it was indisputable that

#### Government Changes

the great areas of the north claimed as Communist had become so by virtue of Communist military occupation after the withdrawal of the main Chinese forces and the break-up under Japanese pressure of Kuomintang administration. Certainly genuine efforts had been made in Chungking to broaden the central Government: Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek resigned the office of President of the Executive Yuan (Prime Minister) on May 31 (remaining President of the Republic and Generalissimo), and was succeeded by the liberal Dr. T. V. Soong, the Foreign Minister—at that time in San Francisco for the United Nations Conference. Dr. H. H. Kung, brother-in-law of the Generalissimo, resigned the Vice-Premiership, and was replaced by Dr. Wang Wen-hao, Minister of Economics and chairman of the Chinese War Production Board. Dr. Wang Shih-chieh, Minister of Information (see page 3281) and formerly a member of the Permanent Court of Arbitration at The Hague, took over the post of Foreign Minister.

After the defeat of the Japanese it soon became clear that the Communists had every intention of extending their influence by force of arms, claiming, possibly rightly, that they had at least



### CHINA AT JAPANESE SURRENDER TO THE ALLIES

At the Japanese surrender ceremony on board the U.S.S. 'Missouri' in Tokyo Bay on September 2, 1945 (see Chapter 372), General Hsu Yung-chang is here signing on behalf of the Chinese Republic. At the microphone stands General MacArthur, and behind him (left to right) are Admiral Chester L. Nimitz, who signed for the U.S.A.; Admiral Sir Bruce Fraser (for Great Britain); Lieutenant-General K. N. Derevyanko (for the U.S.S.R.); General Sir Thomas Blamey (for Australia); and Colonel Nicholas Cosgrave (for Canada). *Photo, Pictorial Press*



as good a mandate to rule and that they ruled better than their opponents.

During the war, the nature and armament of the Communist forces had prevented them from occupying sizable cities or lines of communication (though

#### Communists Issue Orders to Japanese

six weeks before Japan's surrender they made the remarkable claim that they had captured Tsinan, capital of Shantung province). But at the first hint of total Japanese collapse on August 12 General Chu Teh, Commander-in-Chief of the Communist forces, ordered "all forces in liberated areas to issue an ultimatum to the Japanese and their puppets, giving a time limit for surrender, and to take charge of all administrative affairs in any Japanese and puppet-occupied cities." Had there been previous agreement between Kuomintang and Communists, this order would have been the best way of quickly clearing the enemy from the whole country and restoring free Chinese administration. But there was no agreement: although throughout the year there had been comings and goings between Chungking and Yen-an, proposals and counter-proposals, the atmosphere had deteriorated rather than improved. Chiang Kai-shek telegraphed to the Communist leaders in Yen-an telling them that the Big Four were conferring jointly on the Japanese surrender and ordering Communist forces not to take independent action, but to remain in their actual positions. The Central Government, he said, had made full provision for disarming the enemy, reoccupying enemy-held territory, and ensuring order.

These instructions were much resented in Yen-an, and Chiang was bitterly attacked over the Yen-an radio, Chu Teh at the same time appealing to Britain,

the U.S.A. and the U.S.S.R. for representation at the surrender, "reserving the right to dispute any arrangements or treaties made without my consent." He asked the United States to halt lease-lend shipments to the Central Government "to lessen the danger of civil war," and sent his troops forward against the Japanese, whose chief anxiety here as elsewhere seems to have been to make an orderly surrender as quickly as possible to any formation which demanded it.

From Chungking, however, Chiang Kai-shek showed his desire to reach agreement by telegraphing to the Communist leader Mao Tse-tung on

August 16 inviting him to Chungking. Mao twice refused the invitation, suggesting, however, on the second occasion (August 20) the sending of a representative (past years had seen more than one such representative later repudiated). On the 26th Chiang made a new and generous appeal to Mao "to discuss and formulate our national policies," and two days later Mao arrived in Chungking, accompanied by the U.S. Ambassador, Major-General Patrick J. Hurley (see illus. in page 3282), who had flown to Yen-an with Chiang's third invitation.

The signature in Moscow on August 14 of the Sino-Soviet treaty of friendship



#### MUSIC FOR RELEASED INTERNEES IN CHINA

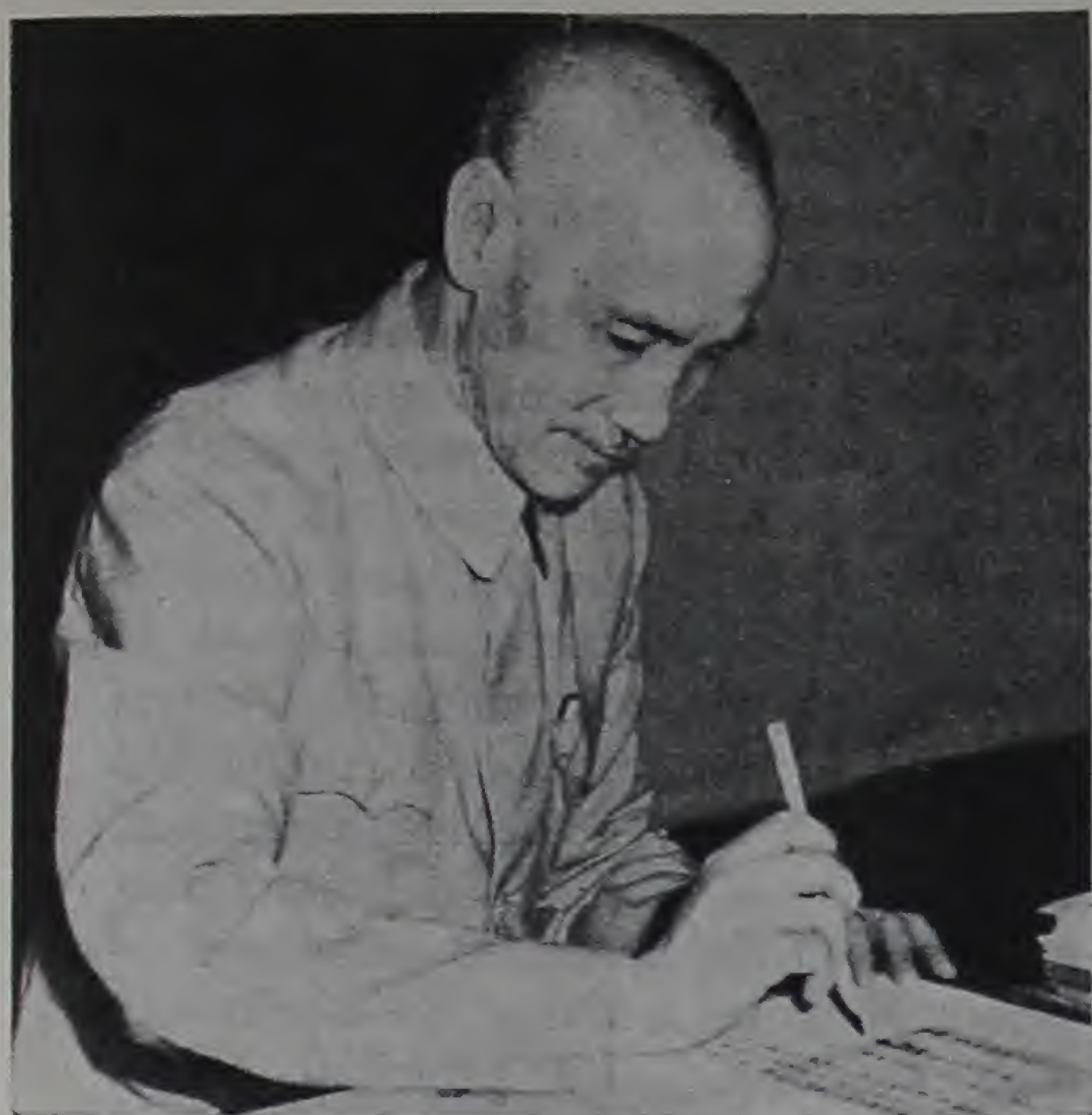
Soon after the cessation of the war against Japan, Allied internees in occupied China began to reach the ports for repatriation. Above, at Tsingtao, on the Yellow Sea (see map in page 3280), these ex-internees, among 1,800 British, Americans, Russians and Italians to be freed in that area, were entertained by the Royal Marines band from the cruiser H.M.S. 'Bermuda.' Below, U.S. armoured forces welcomed by Chinese as they stream into Tsingtao.



and alliance (see Historic Document CCCVI, page 3772)—the outcome of negotiations begun on July 1—by which the U.S.S.R. Recognizes Chiang Kai-shek the Chungking Government as the legal Government of China, had a modifying effect on the Yen-an Communists, whose press ceased its vituperative attacks on Chiang Kai-shek and his Government.

Japanese forces in south China surrendered to the Chinese 1st Army in Canton on August 19. Chinese National troops crossed the Yangtse and entered Nanking, capital of the Chinese Republic, on August 25. V.J. Day was celebrated in China on September 3, when Generalissimo Chiang broadcast on the National Government's aims, and appealed for unity: "If we want to attain democracy





### CHINA AND THE CHARTER

The United Nations Charter, signed on June 26, 1945, at the San Francisco Conference (see Chapter 381), was ratified by China on August 24. Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek, President of the Chinese Republic, using a brush, here signs his name to the document signifying his country's ratification of the Charter. *Photo, U.S. Official*

we must have the rule of law as the foundation of constitutional government, and the Constitution as the safeguard of the people. . . . Only when domestic problems are peacefully solved by political means, and all shades of opinion observe the law of the country, can we avoid the mistakes made in the early days of the Republic and establish a great charter worthy of the heroic efforts of our revolutionary martyrs and the freedom-loving people during the last fifty years." The most important condition for national unity, he said, was the nationalization of all armed forces in the country. There should be no private army within the country's boundaries, nor should armed forces be kept by any political party (see Historic Document CCCV, page 3772).

The formal surrender in China, in which the Japanese acknowledged "complete military defeat," was signed

#### Japan Surrenders to China

at a ceremony in Nanking at 1.04 a.m. B.S.T. on September 9 (see Historic Document

CCCIV, page 3772). It was made by General Yasutsuga Okamura, Japanese C.-in-C., China, to General Ho Ying-chin, Chinese C.-in-C., acting on behalf of Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek. Chinese sovereignty over Formosa, in Japanese possession since 1895, was proclaimed in Chungking on August 30.

Negotiations between Chiang Kai-shek and Mao Tse-tung continued in Chungking until October 11, when a joint communiqué was issued announcing general agreement on broad principles, and Mao left Chungking. Both sides had pledged themselves to avoid civil war by all possible means, and to

co-operate for peacetime reconstruction. It was also agreed that differences should be submitted to a projected "People's Political Commission," whose decisions were to be binding, which was to meet under the chairmanship of Generalissimo Chiang and consist of representatives to be appointed by the National Government, the Communists and other party and non-party groups. (But no method of selecting the persons to sit on this committee, or of registering their decisions, was suggested.) The Kuomintang promised to recognize the equality of all political parties and to guarantee freedom of conscience, of assembly, and of the press. Political prisoners were to be released, and the right of arrest, trial and punishment was to be restricted to the regular police and judiciary. The Communists agreed to allow Government troops to garrison the big cities of north China, though they asked that these should not be allowed into the countryside, where there was danger of clashes with Communist troops already in possession.

The agreement seemed a triumph; but distrust remained, nor had fighting ceased. Two days before the agreement was announced, Yen-an accused Government forces of using Japanese and "puppet" troops against the Communists in central China, Shansi and Kwangtung. The allegations were denied in Chungking. On October 13 it was disclosed that the National Government 92nd Army was being flown from Nanking to Peiping in U.S. Army transport planes to establish Government control in north China. A week later Yen-an announced that it was withdrawing its new 4th Army, up to then stationed in strength in the Shanghai, Nanking, Hangchow, and Ningpo areas, from all areas south of the Yangtse.

But dispatches from both Chungking and Yen-an reported increasingly heavy fighting in north China, involving, it

was estimated, about a million men. By the end of October, fighting centred in four zones: (1) a triangle formed by south Shansi, north Honan, and south Hopei; (2) along the Tatung-Puchow railway in Shansi; (3) in east Suiyuan (Inner Mongolia); and (4) in Shantung, along the Tsinan-Tsingtao railway. General Yen Hei-shan, National Government Commander of Shansi on October 29 reported very heavy fighting in that province, with National Government casualties of 15,000 and Communist losses also severe. The National Government Commander of Suiyuan reported that Communist forces, supported by tanks and field guns, were strongly attacking Tatung and had captured several other towns.

On November 1 it was announced in Chungking that an agreement had been reached at Changchun (Hsinking), capital of Manchuria, between the National Government and the Soviet High Command

#### Red Army Leaves Man- churian Ports

whereby Government forces were to land troops in Manchuria by sea and air, the Red Army withdrawing, in implementation of the Russo-Chinese treaty, to Vladivostok, Korea and Port Arthur. On October 30 and succeeding days, Government troops arrived at Hulatao, Yingkow and other Manchurian ports on board U.S. transports. They found that the Russian garrisons had withdrawn, but that strongly armed Chinese Communist forces of the 8th Route Army were in the areas round these ports in such strength as to make landings difficult or impossible. Landings were effected at Chinwangtao (Hopei Province), however, and a drive inland began against strong opposition.

Heavy fighting continued in other areas: in Shansi the Communists took Tatung and gained control of most of the province. In south Hopei they gained a considerable victory in the Tzehsien area, claiming the capture of

### FREE AGAIN

Left to right: Sir Percy McElwaine, Chief Justice, Straits Settlements; Sir Charles Shenton Thomas, Governor and C.-in-C., Straits Settlements; Sir H. Trusted, Chief Justice, F.M.S.; Sir Horace Seymour, British Ambassador to China, who met the prisoners; Sir Mark Young, Governor and C.-in-C., Hongkong (see Chapter 199); and Mr. C. R. Smith, Governor of British North Borneo, released at Mukden, arrive at Chungking on August 28, 1945.







tions Committee, of pro-Communist activities on the part of various State Department officials. General George C. Marshall, formerly Chief of Army Staff, appointed the President's special envoy to the National Government, reached Chungking on December 23. On January 5, 1946, the National Government and the Communists agreed to appoint delegates to confer with General Marshall for an immediate end of the civil war. Five days later a communiqué was issued announcing a definite agreement which the delegates undertook to recommend to Chiang Kai-shek and Mao Tse-tung. Its principal points were: (1) immediate cessation of hostilities on both sides; (2) cessation of

70,000 Government troops. Extensive rail sabotage by them was reported.

On November 10 Government troops began an all-out assault on a 35-mile front to break through into Manchuria. After a battle lasting over a week, Government troops stormed the walled town of Shanhaikwan, drove through the

#### Advance by Government Forces

Great Wall, and fanned out into Manchuria. Widespread guerilla activities and destruc-

tion of communications by the Communists continued. The fall of Hulutao was reported on November 25 in Chungking, and Government forces reached Jehol and made advances in other areas. Advancing along the Manchurian railway from Shanhaikwan, Government troops entered Mukden without incident (reported December 13); and on December 27 at a joint Russo-Chinese ceremony Changchun (Hsinking), the capital, was formally taken over by Chinese airborne troops. See map in page 3781.

Meanwhile, Yen-an radio alleged that American troops in Manchuria were collaborating with the Kuomintang in attacks on the 8th Route Army—allegations which Lieutenant-General Wedemeyer, C.-in-C. of the American forces in the China theatre, declared to be unfounded. U.S. Army Air Force planes were accused of machine-gunning Communist troops, and U.S. ground forces were involved in several local skirmishes along the north China railways, which they were guarding, and on the Yangtse.

By December 1 there were 53,000 U.S. Marines in north China, 35,000 U.S. Army personnel elsewhere in the country. Those in Communist areas



#### CHINESE GOVERNMENT IN CONTROL OF MUKDEN

When Chinese Government troops in October 1945 reached ports in Manchuria to take over areas evacuated by the Russians, they found strongly-armed Chinese Communist forces in control. But on December 13 they were reported, after an overland advance through the Great Wall, to have entered Mukden without incident. Here, Government troops stand on guard at H.Q., Mukden. Above, train with refugees crowding into Mukden for safety. Photos, L. N. A.

were regarded by Yen-an as advance agents of the Kuomintang. General Wedemeyer declared that he was ignoring Communist protests about their presence and employment "because I am instructed to deal only with the Central Government," and stated that "in a few isolated clashes the Americans had in no case taken the initiative."

General Hurley's resignation as U.S. Ambassador was announced on November 27; he made charges, investigated and dropped by the U.S. Foreign Rela-

destruction of lines of communication; (3) the setting up of an Executive Headquarters in Peiping to carry out the agreement for the cessation of hostilities; (4) necessary instructions and orders to be issued by the Executive H.Q. in the name of the President of the Republic. A truce was signed, to come into effect on January 14; and Chungking announced the end of the civil war. But the announcement was premature: spasmodic fighting, with brief truces, was continuing many months later.



**July 1.** Australian 7th Division landed in strength near Balikpapan (Borneo) after 15-days' bombing and bombardment by Allied aircraft and warships. Announced in Chungking that Chinese commando forces had crossed Indo-Chinese frontier.

**July 2.** Nearly 600 Super-Fortresses from the Marianas heavily attacked targets at Shimonoseki, Kure, Ube, Kumamoto and Shimotsu (Japan). Australian 7th Division held 3-mile stretch along shore of Macassar Strait (Borneo). Announced that British submarine "Trenchant," operating in the S.-W. Pacific under U.S. command, had sunk the Japanese cruiser "Asigara."

**July 3.** 500 Super-Fortresses dropped 3,000 tons of incendiaries on Japanese industrial towns of Himeji, Tokushima, Takamatsu and Kochi. In S.-E. Borneo Australians captured Sepinggan airfield. Australian 6th Division in New Guinea took Mt. Tazaki, overlooking Wewak. On Bougainville Australian 3rd Division secured the line of the Mibo River.

**July 4.** Australian 7th Division captured Balikpapan; other Australian forces took Manggar airfield on Macassar Strait (Borneo). In Burma Japanese forced the Sittang River east of Pegu

**July 5.** General MacArthur announced the liberation of the whole of the Philippines. Allied 15th Army Group in Italy disbanded. Provisional (Lublin) Government of Poland recognized by Britain and U.S.A. General Election in Great Britain. Death of Mr. Curtin, Australian Premier.

**July 6.** Over 400 Super-Fortresses bombed Shimotsu, Kofu, Akashi, Chiba and Shimizu (Honshu, Japan). U.S. Navy bombers heavily attacked Korea and sank enemy shipping in Yellow Sea and round Japan.

**July 7.** Australian 7th Division landed at Penagam, in control of Balikpapan Bay (Borneo). U.S. Navy Privateer planes attacked enemy shipping in Korean and Japanese waters.

**July 8.** North of Balikpapan, Australians cut all enemy escape routes in area of Pandarasi oilfield (Borneo). U.S. aircraft attacked airfields in Osaka and Nagoya regions (Japan). Announced that over 5,000,000 tons of war supplies had been sent to Russia since 1941 by Persian Gulf route.

**July 9.** Heavy damage inflicted by 550 Super-Fortresses from the Marianas on Japanese towns of Gifu, Sakai, Wakayama, Sendai and Yokkaichi. Commonwealth Air Conference opened in London.

**July 10.** 2,000 carrier-based aircraft from U.S. 3rd Fleet heavily attacked Tokyo without opposition except from A.A. fire; Okinawa- and Iwo Jima-based U.S. aircraft struck at wide area of Honshu (Japan). Liberators of Eastern Air Command bombed Bangkok, capital of Siam, wrecking vital bridge. German submarine U530 surrendered at Mar del Plata, near Buenos Aires.

**July 11.** Australians made unopposed landing at Jinabora, Balikpapan, captured Pandarasi oilfield (Borneo). In

New Guinea, Australians, with bayonets and flame-throwers, captured important ridges inland from Wewak.

**July 12.** Australian 7th Division launched powerful offensive on Mt. Batochampar (S.-E. Borneo). 550 Marianas-based Super-Fortresses by night bombed targets at Nagoya and Tokyo Bay (Japan). Admiral Lord Louis Mountbatten and General MacArthur met at Manila for two-days' conference.

**July 13.** All resistance ceased in Brunei Bay (N. Borneo). At midnight S.H.A.E.F. was disbanded, General Eisenhower becoming Commander of American forces in Europe and Military Governor of the U.S. zone in Germany.

**July 14.** For the first time in the war Japanese mainland bombarded by Allied warships when units of the U.S. 3rd Fleet and carrier-borne aircraft attacked industrial centre of Kamaishi (Honshu). At Regensburg, Germany, U.S. troops unearthed Reichsbank's gold reserve.

**July 15.** 1,000 U.S. carrier-based aircraft again heavily attacked Japan, concentrating on Muroran on south coast of Hokkaido, where U.S. warships devastated the port; U.S. bombers from Iwo Jima and Marianas bombed Kyushu and Honshu airfields. Australians captured Mt. Batochampar (Borneo). Liberators of Eastern Air Command bombed Siamese port of Singora. Announced that Australian 6th Division captured Prince Alexander Range, overlooking Wewak (New Guinea). Italy declared war on Japan.

**July 16.** Some 500 Marianas-based Super-Fortresses made heavy attack with fire bombs on Oita and other targets in Japan, this being the first raid under the strategic command of General Spaatz.

**July 16-17 (night).** U.S. 3rd Fleet and British Pacific Fleet poured over 2,000 tons of shells into enemy industrial centres on the Honshu coast, north of Tokyo, in one of the heaviest naval bombardments of the war.

**July 17.** Some 1,500 British and U.S. naval aircraft took up the previous night's attack on the Japanese coast, concentrating on air bases round Ishinomaki Bay, against only A.A. opposition. Singora (Siam) bombed again. Berlin (Potsdam) Conference opened.

**July 18.** Carrier planes of U.S. 3rd Fleet attacked Japanese warships at entrance to Tokyo Bay. In S.E. Borneo, Australian 7th Division captured oil centre of Sambodja, N.E. of Balikpapan.

**July 19.** Over 600 Super-Fortresses, biggest force to date sent against Japan, struck at Choshi, Hitachi, Okazaki, and Fukui. Over 200 U.S. bombers and fighters attacked Shanghai. In Burma Gurkhas recaptured Laya station. Australians in N. Borneo occupied Marudi. U.S. Senate ratified Bretton Woods agreement.

**July 20.** U.S. Mustangs attacked Nagoya, Okazaki, and Toyohashi areas of Japan. Announced from Chungking that Japanese forces in China were withdrawing from less important positions.

**July 21.** U.S. naval aircraft attacked enemy shipping in the Tsushima Straits,

between Japan and Korea; Thunderbolts raided Truk (Carolines), Yap, and other enemy-held positions in the Pacific.

**July 22.** Super-Fortresses bombed Ube (Honshu); at night U.S. destroyers, entering Tokyo Bay, attacked an enemy convoy. U.S. Okinawa-based bombers raided Shanghai airfields. Australians landed at Tempadeong (S.E. Borneo).

**July 23.** Heavy air and naval attacks on enemy convoy in Sagami Bay, S.W. of Tokyo Bay. Reported that Australians had gained control of virtually all navigable waters in Balikpapan Bay (Borneo).

**July 24.** Between 1,000-1,500 U.S. and British carrier-borne aircraft of the U.S. 3rd Fleet struck heavily at remnants of the Japanese fleet at Kure in the Inland Sea; Super-Fortresses bombed Osaka and Nagoya. Far East Air Force bombers raided Shanghai.

**July 24-26.** British East Indies Fleet attacked installations and airfields off the W. coast of Malaya.

**July 25.** British and U.S. carrier planes renewed attacks on Japanese warships near Kure and Kobe. French 1st Army dissolved.

**July 26.** Over 350 Super-Fortresses bombed industrial targets on Kyushu and Honshu, including Omuta, Matsuyama and Tokuyama. Ultimatum to Japan issued by Great Britain, China, and the U.S.A. from Potsdam. Labour Government formed in Britain.

**July 27.** Super-Fortresses dropped 60,000 leaflets over 11 Japanese war-production centres, warning them that they would be destroyed from the air, and urging the inhabitants to evacuate. Disclosed that the newly-formed British 12th Army in Burma in its first action had defeated enemy forces trying to cross the Sittang River into Siam from the Pegu Yomas.

**July 28.** Six of the 11 Japanese towns marked out for destruction were heavily bombed by some 600 Super-Fortresses from the Marianas; British and U.S. carrier aircraft made concentrated raid on remnants of Japanese fleet in Inland Sea; U.S. aircraft from Okinawa attacked Kagoshima (Kyushu). U.S.A. ratified United Nations Charter. Mr. Attlee, new British Premier, and Mr. Bevin, new British Foreign Secretary, in Potsdam.

**July 29.** Chinese recaptured Kweilin, capital of Kwangsi province, lost in the 1944 Japanese offensive. British 8th Army disbanded. Secret list of German war casualties discovered at Flensburg.

**July 29-30 (night).** U.S. and British warships intensively bombarded Hamamatsu (Japan) for 70 minutes.

**July 30.** Over 1,000 British and U.S. carrier-aircraft heavily attacked Tokyo and Nagoya regions. Mediterranean Allied Air Force, created in 1943, dissolved. Allied Control Council met in Berlin.

**July 31.** Allied destroyer force bombarded Shimizu, 80 miles S.W. of Tokyo; Far Eastern Air Force from Okinawa bombed Nagasaki; leaflets dropped on 12 more Japanese cities. 12th Army Group disbanded. Field-Marshal Alexander appointed Governor-General of Canada.



# SOVIET CAMPAIGN IN MANCHURIA

*In fourteen days from the Soviet declaration of war against Japan, on August 8, 1945, forces of the Red Army and the Red Navy conquered and occupied the greater part of the Chinese province of Manchuria, held by the Japanese since 1931. In this chapter, the Military Editor, Major-General Sir Charles Gwynn, records that lightning campaign. The return of the province to Chinese rule is described in Chapter 366*

ON August 6, 1945, President Truman announced that the first atomic bomb had been dropped on Hiroshima. The Soviet Government's declaration of war on Japan two days later was, however, not connected with that epoch-making event. Although General MacArthur, presumably aware of the imminence of the declaration, may have decided to use his new weapon in anticipation of Russia's action, it is improbable, on the other hand, that the Russians were fully informed as to what was about to happen; and we have it on Mr. Churchill's authority that their action was in punctual fulfilment of an undertaking made at Yalta, to declare war on Japan three months after V.E. Day. Furthermore, it is evident that at the time the undertaking was given, no one was in a position to estimate definitely when the atomic bomb would be ready, what its effects would be, or what progress the American operations might make in the three-month period. The undertaking must have been based on

campaign had been carefully worked out. How far the Japanese had adequate forces to meet the attack is more doubtful. They undoubtedly over a long period had expended much energy on perfecting their defensive precautions. Their strategic road and railway system had been greatly developed, strongly fortified zones had been prepared on the lines of probable invasion, war industries on a large scale had been established in Manchuria, and their Kwantung army (see illus. in page 3288) was reputedly

substantial numerically and composed of their best troops. On the other hand, it was known that some divisions had been withdrawn to meet the American offensive in the Pacific. At least one division of the Kwantung army had been identified on Leyte Island. Others were believed to have been withdrawn to the home islands, in view of the threat of an American landing. Japan was in fact paying the penalty for the gross over-dispersion of her resources resulting from her original aggressive campaign; and with almost complete destruction of her navy and her loss of air power even the short lines of sea communication with Manchuria were no longer secure.

The form the Russian offensive took was well designed to exploit fully, by convergent drives from exterior lines, both superior Soviet numbers and the shape of the Manchurian frontiers. Three main attacks were launched simultaneously, all initially in the direction of Harbin: (a) by the 1st Far Eastern Army under Marshal Meretskov westwards from the southern end of the Maritime Province north of Vladivostok (b) by the 2nd Far Eastern Army under Army-General Purkayev across the Amur southwards up the Sungari valley, and (c) by the Transbaikalian Army under Marshal Malinovsky eastward from Manchuli along the Chinese Eastern Railway. In addition, subsidiary operations were undertaken from the Blagoveshchensk region across the Amur, and across the Ussuri at Hulin, both clearly of a defensive character to protect the Trans-Siberian Railway from Japanese counter-strokes based on railways which



**RUSSIA'S FAR EAST WAR CHIEFS**

On August 8, 1945, the Soviet Union declared war on Japan. Here, at Darien, are, left to right, Marshal Malinovsky, commanding the Transbaikalian Army; Marshal Meretskov, commanding the First Far Eastern Army; and Marshal Vasilievsky, Commander-in-Chief. Russia's 2nd Far Eastern Army was under Army-General Purkayev.

the time interval calculated to be required for the reinforcement of the Soviet forces in the Far East by transfers of troops and material from the European front, and for the completion of preparations for the invasion of Manchuria. Although the Russian forces in the Far East were at all times of substantial strength, their role had been defensive, and much reorganization was necessary before they could undertake a major offensive campaign.

When, on August 9, Soviet troops crossed the frontiers it soon became clear that the offensive was on a massive scale, and that the plan of



led to these points. General Purkayev, who appears to have been the peacetime commander in the Far East, was also responsible for operations undertaken for the conquest of the southern half of the Island of Sakhalin. Admiral Ivan Yumashev, Commander of the Soviet Pacific Fleet, was in charge of amphibious operations to capture ports on the east coast of Korea, and Japanese bases in the Kurile Islands. His river flotillas also co-operated with Purkayev in the latter's Amur and Ussuri operations.

All these far-reaching operations were under the supreme command of Marshal

**Russian** Vassilievsky, who had become commander of **Commanders** the 3rd White Russian Army following Army-General Chernyakhovsky's death in February 1945 (see page 3560). Before that, Vassilievsky was Chief of Red Army Staff and for long Stalin's principal strategic adviser. Malinovsky and Meretskov had made great reputations on the European front, the former in the Ukraine and in Rumania, the latter on the Leningrad front and in Finland.

Although the three main attacks were all delivered against well fortified areas and encountered strong opposition, they met with immediate success, achieving an average advance of ten to



#### MALINOVSKY'S MEN IN HAILAR

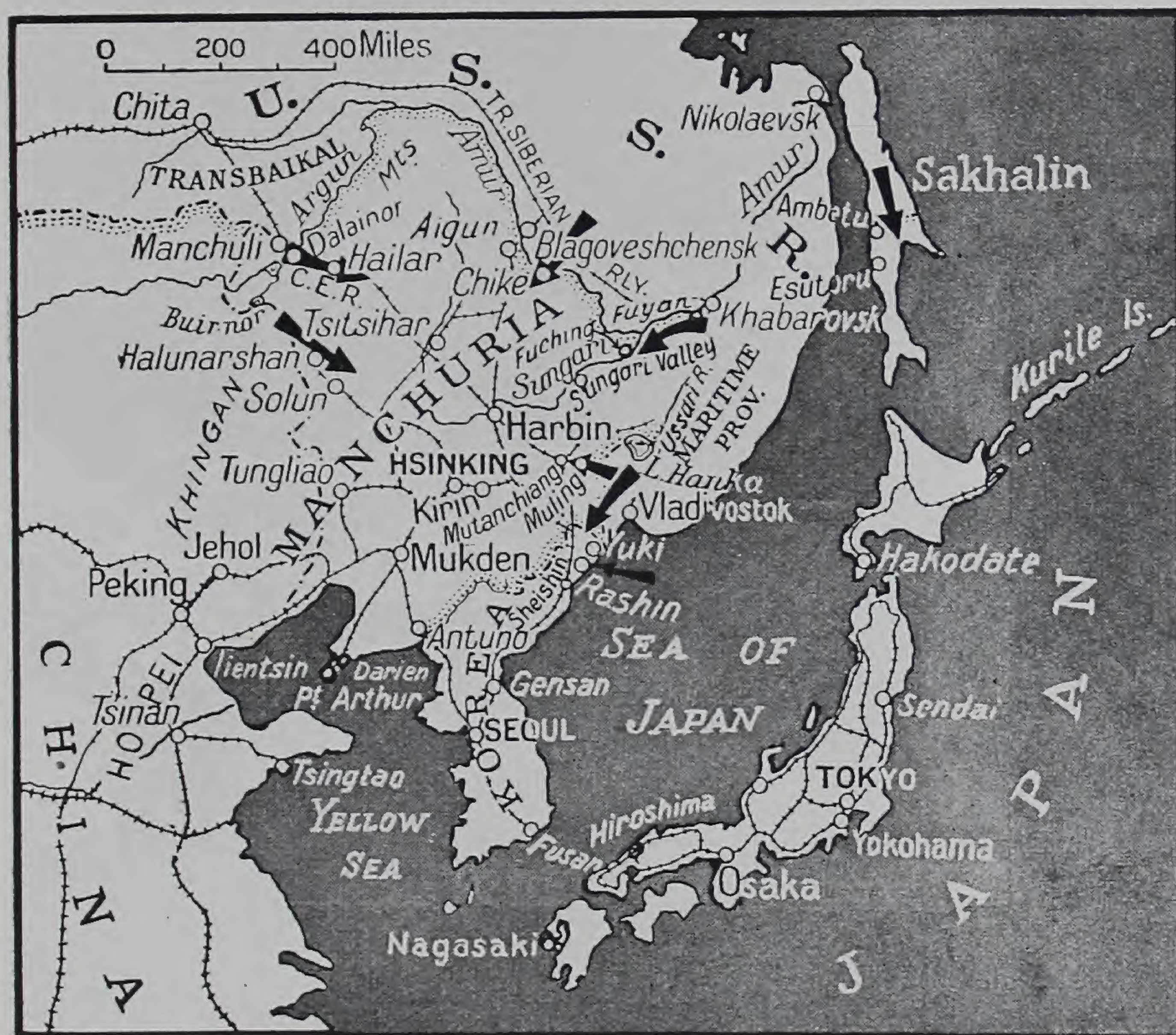
By August 10, 1945, second day of Russia's campaign in the Far East, the Red Army had made important gains on all sections of the Manchurian front. The most dramatic advance was by Marshal Malinovsky's armoured troops which swept forward a hundred miles to capture the important road and rail centre of Hailar (see map below). A Soviet patrol here probes a deserted street in Hailar. *Photo, Pictorial Press*

fifteen miles on August 9. On the Transbaikal front Manchuli and Dalainor in the strongly fortified zone covering

the railway were captured; and farther south, in the Lake Buirnor area, where the Japanese had not expected attack, an important advance was made through difficult country. On the main front not only had the fortified zone to be pierced but beyond it lay the Khingan mountains. The thrust from Lake Buirnor had, however, the effect of turning the fortified zone, and opened a line of advance which led through mountain tracks, outflanking Hailar. This town was a strong centre of communications in the western foothills of the Khingan range, blocking the main pass through it.

On the Khabarovsk front the Russians crossed the Amur and Ussuri and captured Fuyan, on the right bank of the Amur. In the Maritime Province, Meretskov **Bombing of Communications** advanced ten miles in heavily fortified, difficult country. Intense bombing attacks were also started on August 9 against the chief centres of the Japanese lines of railway communication, and millions of leaflets were dropped urging the Japanese to petition the Emperor to end the war. The second atomic bomb fell that day on Nagasaki.

Progress on August 10 was unchecked. The main Transbaikal force advanced some twelve miles, capturing Argun and other important points; while mobile troops, apparently those from the Buirnor area, made an astonishing bound of a hundred miles, striking



#### SOVIET ADVANCE IN MANCHURIA

The Soviet Armies' chief lines of penetration into Manchuria during the short Russian war with Japan are indicated here. While some troops of the 2nd Far Eastern Army forced the Amur and Ussuri rivers, others advanced into the southern (Japanese) half of Sakhalin. Marshal Malinovsky's forces seized Hailar and Tsitsihar. Pushing west and south from the Maritime Province, Marshal Meretskov's troops reached Mutanchiang and Yuki. *By courtesy of The Times*





### SOVIET NAVAL FLOTILLA REACHES HARBIN

Troops of the 2nd Far Eastern Army, under General Purkayev, on August 20, 1945, occupied Harbin, large city and vital communications junction in central Manchuria: Japanese at Harbin here lay down their arms at the feet of a Soviet soldier. Below, citizens welcome forces of the Russian Amur Naval Flotilla which had approached Harbin by river and entered the city with the first infantry detachments.

*Photos, Pictorial Press*

into the foothills south of Hailar and capturing that town, which lies 60 miles inside Manchuria. The 2nd F.E.A. extended its hold on the south bank of the Amur and on the west bank of the Ussuri, where Hulin was captured. The Amur Soviet Naval and Air Assault was also forced in Blagoveshchensk region and Aigun taken. The 1st F.E.A. advanced a further 18 miles, taking a number of towns on the Chinese Eastern Railway at its eastern end. On August 10, too, Russian naval units joined in the attack on Japanese shipping in the Korean ports of Sheishin and Rashin started by Soviet bombers the previous day.

On August 11 the advance was still more marked. On the Transbaikalian front mobile troops, crossing the Khingan mountains, advanced another fifty miles, while the main force captured a number of towns west of the range. The 2nd F.E.A., attacking vigorously, advanced 20 miles, took Fuching on the Sungari and Hsiaokiao west of the Ussuri. The 1st F.E.A., still operating in mountainous and wooded country, covered from ten to fifteen miles and







#### AT PORT ARTHUR

Airborne troops of the Transbaikal Army landed at Port Arthur on August 22, 1945, and disarmed the Japanese garrison. Later, Marines of the Red Navy hoisted the Soviet naval flag (above). By an agreement, signed on August 14, 1945 (see page 3566), Port Arthur, captured by the Japanese in their war with the Russians in 1905, was to be used jointly by China and the U.S.S.R. for thirty years. The monument on Hakuyoku-zam hill commemorates the Japanese dead of 1904-5. *Photo, Pictorial Press*

captured many towns including Muling.

The Tokyo broadcast on August 10 announcing that the Japanese Government was ready to accept the Allied ultimatum of July 26 with the proviso that the sovereignty of the Emperor was maintained (see Chapter 372), although it did not bring the cessation of hostilities, probably affected the determination of Japanese resistance.

On August 12, the fourth day of the Soviet offensive, steady progress was made on all fronts and

Soviet many important towns  
Advance were occupied. The powerful Japanese naval base of Rashin in Korea, 15 miles from the Soviet frontier and fifty sea miles from Vladivostok, was stormed by Russian troops, landed and supported by the Soviet Pacific Fleet.

On August 14 Japan surrendered unconditionally, but, the Emperor having

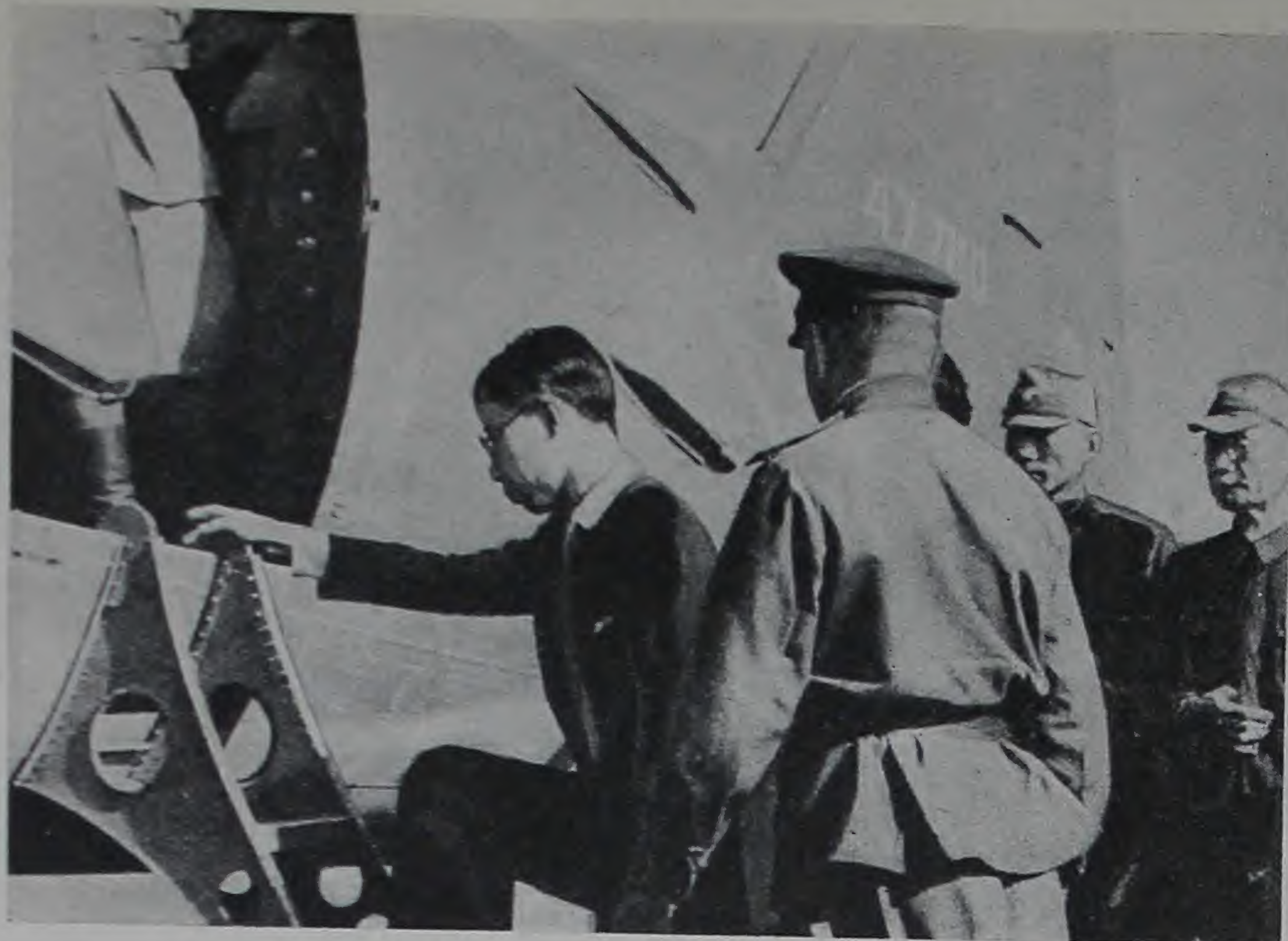


#### MARSHAL MALINOVSKY'S TROOPS ENTER MUKDEN

Scene of Japan's final victory over the Tsarist forces in 1905 and the capital of Manchuria until 1932, the important city of Mukden, with a peacetime population of over half-a-million, was occupied by troops of Marshal Malinovsky's Transbaikal Army on August 20, 1945. Here a group of Chinese watch from the kerbstone the Russian troops as they swing into the town.

*Photo, Pictorial Press*





### PUPPET 'EMPEROR' ARRESTED

As troops of Marshal Malinovsky's Transbaikalian Army entered Mukden on August 20, 1945, they found at the airport P'u Yi, the Chinese-born 'Emperor' of the Japanese puppet-state of 'Manchukuo' (Manchuria). He and his suite were arrested and interned. Here, the puppet 'Emperor' is escorted on board the aircraft which took him to Soviet General Staff H.Q.

*Photo, Keystone*

as yet given no order to the armed forces to cease resistance, fighting continued. By that day Malinovsky's force was operating in strength east of the Khingan mountains, and was advancing rapidly. Purkayev, having cleared the salient south of the Amur between the Ussuri and Sungari, had made considerable progress up both banks of the latter river. Meretskov, who was probably meeting the stiffest resistance since his advance constituted the most

immediate threat to Harbin and Hsinking (Changchun), had reached and crossed the Mutan river, capturing the important railway junction of Mutanchiang from suicide detachments fighting to the end. The Soviet Pacific Fleet had also captured Sheishin on the

Korean coast after heavy fighting. On Sakhalin Japanese frontier defences had been penetrated. Between August 9 and 13 some 8,000 prisoners had been taken—an unusually large number for Japanese armies to lose, but not enough to indicate a general willingness to surrender.

On August 15 further progress was made on all fronts, but on the following day on all three main fronts and at Sheishin in Korea the Japanese attempted a counter-offensive. It was, however, an abortive effort which failed even to bring the Russians to a temporary halt.

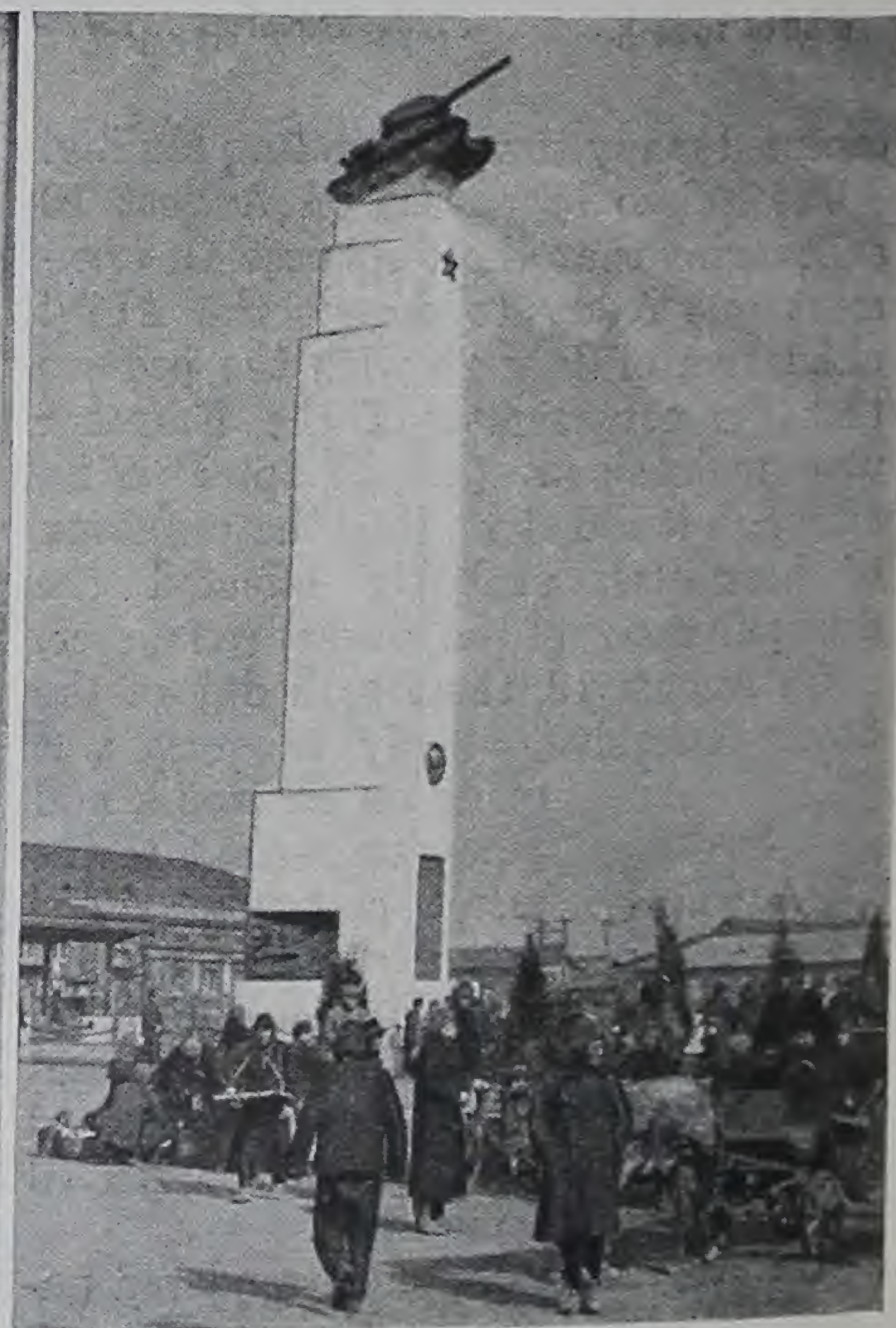
On August 16 the Japanese Emperor issued a rescript to all his troops to surrender, and on the 17th Marshal Vassilievsky, in reply to a proposal to cease hostilities made by the commander of the Kwantung army, suggested mid-day of August 20 as the time-limit by which Japanese H.Q. should order its forces to lay down their arms. As the Japanese surrendered their arms, he said, the Soviet troops would discontinue war operations.

**End of the  
Kwantung  
Army**

The Emperor's order on August 17 brought the war to an end; but owing to the difficulty of communicating the order in a confused situation, fighting continued for some days, and the Russian armies pressed on towards their original objectives. On August 18

### RUSSIAN ACTIVITY IN MANCHURIA

The Soviet armies, after occupying industrial areas created by the Japanese in Manchuria, removed large quantities of factory equipment. Left, gutted interior of the Ten-ho weaving and dyeing factory in Mukden, after the Russians had blasted a wall and removed the machinery. Right, Memorial to Soviet tank-troops erected in Mukden and surmounted by a real tank.







## SURRENDER OF JAPANESE IN MANCHURIA

On August 23, 1945, after fourteen days' fighting, Generalissimo Stalin announced that the Red Army had occupied the whole of Manchuria and Southern Sakhalin and that the Japanese Kwantung army had surrendered. Here, Marshal Vassilievsky, C.-in-C., Soviet troops in the Far East (centre), and Marshal Meretskov, commanding the 1st Far Eastern Army (left), meet Lieutenant-General Hata, Chief of Staff of the Kwantung forces.

*Photo, Pictorial Press*

in some sectors resistance was still met, but in others troops had begun to surrender in thousands, among them the encircled garrison in a fortified zone in the area of Hailar, which laid down its arms, yielding 5,000 prisoners headed by Major-General Nomura: it was symptomatic of the Japanese acceptance of defeat that General Nomura did not feel compelled to commit suicide.

During the following days the number of Japanese surrendering increased—on August 19, 100,000 prisoners were counted—but the

### Airborne Troops Occupy Towns

Russians were taking no chances and continued to advance, refusing to accept the risk of giving fanatical elements an opportunity to organize die-hard opposition. On the 19th Malinovsky's army occupied Tsitsihar, while airborne troops landed at Harbin, Kirin, Hsinking (Changchun) and Mukden, at all of which places they found the garrisons ready to surrender. Next day Malinovsky's troops, presumably mobile spearheads, occupied Mukden and Changchun; Purkayev occupied Harbin, Meretskov Kirin. Resistance ceased in the southern (Japanese) half of Sakhalin. The prisoners this day included four generals commanding Japanese armies in the combat areas.

On August 22 Soviet airborne troops landed at Darien and Port Arthur and proceeded to disarm the garrisons there. Facilities at these two ports, the lease of which by China to Tsarist Russia was perhaps the main cause of the Russo-Japanese war of 1904, were granted to the U.S.S.R. by an

### Sino-Soviet Treaty

agreement (*see page 3566*) with China signed simultaneously with the Soviet-Chinese treaty (*see Historic Document 306, page 3772*). Their recapture by Soviet arms obliterated the memory of disastrous defeat. The ambitions of the Russian Navy were further satisfied by the occupation of the northernmost of the Kurile islands, leading to permanent possession of the group.

Marshal Stalin's Order of the Day addressed to Marshal Vassilievsky and his army and naval commanders on August 23 announced that they had completed their task. By that date virtually the whole of Manchuria had

been occupied and P'u Yi, the unfortunate puppet emperor of Manchukuo, had been captured at Mukden and interned.

The task as originally set had been by no means an easy one, for the Kwantung army was a formidable force and for years had been engaged in perfecting defensive arrangements. To reach the decisive objectives long distances had to be covered, and much of the country to be traversed was highly defensible. In the event, determined resistance was encountered only in the fortified zones on the frontier, and by the time they had been forced it must have become clear to all Japanese commanders that their government had accepted defeat, and in the final phases, while the Emperor's order to cease resistance was awaited, it is not surprising that disorganization and loss of morale set in.

Nevertheless the conduct of the campaign afforded another striking demonstration of Russian military efficiency. The transfer of troops from west to east and the completion of preparations for an offensive on a great scale in the time available after the collapse of Germany were in themselves remarkable feats. The strategic plan of campaign was admirably suited to the circumstances, and its tactical execution showed how thoroughly the lessons of the German war had been absorbed. The frontier defences were crushed by the weight of artillery fire, centres of resistance were bypassed, and mobile armoured forces broke through, thrusting boldly and at great speed into the comparative vacuum behind the defensive zones.

The use of air power to disrupt the enemy's rearward communications and finally the employment of airborne troops to secure points which might become centres of resistance, all followed the pattern of the most striking features of the final phases of the war in Europe.

Malinovsky's handling of the situation on the Transbaikal front was outstand-

ingly skilful. He was confronted with a highly fortified zone behind which lay the densely wooded and formidable Khingan mountains, offering a second defensive position. His attack from the Buirnor area, which evidently took the Japanese by surprise, was a bold and well executed solution of his problem, reminiscent of his manoeuvre to outflank the Iron Gate defile in Rumania and his passage of the Little Carpathians to enter the Morava valley in Austria (*see pp. 3479, 3625*). He took risks in committing his mobile armour to an advance by difficult mountain tracks, but the bypassing of the strong garrison near Hailar cut the supply line of the Japanese in the fortified frontier zone.

The latter part of the campaign developed into little more than the advance of armies of occupation, and it is doubtful how far the Japanese fought with real determination even in the initial encounters.

### Eighty-one Generals Captured

The weight and vigour of the Russian attack did not give them much chance; but there is no definite indication of low morale. Once the Emperor's order to cease resistance was given there was, however, little show of unwillingness to obey it, and neither mass nor individual suicides were reported. The Russians undoubtedly expected displays of fanaticism, and the rapidity of their final advance was presumably dictated by determination to crush any signs of such developments. The rate at which prisoners were collected—before the end of the month the figure of 513,000 including 81 generals was reached—gives proof of the completeness with which the surrender was carried out. It is rather curious, however, that the amount of material captured was comparatively small: between August 9 and 28 only 587 planes, 347 tanks, 955 guns of all calibres, 711 mortars, 3,355 machine-guns and 1,789 lorries was the record of booty collected; more may have been secured later.



# ALLIED AIR SUPREMACY IN THE EAST

*Air strength was the chief factor in the Allied reconquest of Burma, and, with naval power, gave the Allies victory in the Pacific. This Chapter, by Capt. Norman Macmillan, M.C., A.F.C., which covers air activities in the East during 1945, continues the record from Chapter 306. Air operations in the west during 1945 are described in Chapter 346*

**T**HE complicated plan of operations that led to the advance through central Burma and victory at Rangoon (see Chapters 345 and 371) could not have been developed without air transport. The size of General Slim's force for the move south to Rangoon had to be fixed by the air delivery rate over the roadless divide between the sea and the lower Irrawaddy valley—and what air transport could achieve can be gauged by Eastern Air Command's announcement on April 20 that in the year ending March 31, 1945, over 550,000 tons of arms and supplies (a cargo that would have filled 55 Liberty ships, and ranged from ammunition and rations to bulldozers and pneumatic hammers) had been flown into Burma. Eighty percent was landed at forward airfields, the rest parachuted or dropped to troops at the front. Of this total, 250,000 tons was flown in between January and March, during which time, in addition, Eastern Air Command flew in 236,000 men and evacuated over 70,000.

On January 3, 1945, the Allies occupied Akyab, and on January 21

landed on Ramree Island (see page 3536). Sea transport built up the supplies on Ramree, air transport lifted them over the divide to the selected zone in the Irrawaddy valley, and road transport fed the army's needs from the air landing bases.

Although it was British policy to spare Mandalay as much as possible, heavy bombers attacked it on January 12 and 13. Fort Dufferin held out for twelve days after tanks entered the city on March 8, and fighter-bombers breached the fort walls with bombs before its capture (see illus. in page 3539). The 14th Army secured the main airfield at Meiktila on March 31, and supplies poured in by air from Ramree. While military columns moved on Rangoon from the north, Indian parachute troops were dropped at Elephant Point, on the west bank of the Rangoon river, on May 1 (see Chapter 371). The city fell on May 3. From the battle of Imphal (see page 3004) to the fall of Rangoon, the R.A.F. alone flew nearly a quarter of a million sorties in Burma.

On May 31, S.E.A.C. announced that all U.S.A.A.F. units had been withdrawn from Eastern Air Command,

which then again became solely a Royal and Royal Indian Air Forces formation. Major-General George E. Stratemeyer, appointed in July overall commander of U.S. Air Forces in China, was succeeded as head of E.A.C. by Air-Marshal W. A. Coryton.

Air attacks on the Japanese escape routes to Siam continued. Bridges over the Mekong river were bombed and broken. The Andaman and Nicobar island groups and Sumatra came under increasing air attack from naval aircraft with the British East Indies Fleet (see page 3765) and the R.A.F.

India-based Super-Fortresses sank the 50,000-ton King George V graving dock at Singapore on February 1—scuttled in 1942, it had been raised by the enemy. They bombed Singapore again on March 11, and the railway yards at Kuala Lumpur on March 10. Royal Australian Air Force Liberators

## AIR 'WAR' AGAINST MALARIA IN BURMA

An important factor making for Allied victory in Burma was the marked improvement in methods of combating tropical disease. In 1943, three Allied soldiers in every thousand fell sick of malaria every day. By 1945, the incidence was reduced to one in every four thousand. R.A.F. Hurricanes, spraying the potent insecticide D.D.T. in the form of white vapour (below), destroyed the malaria-spreading mosquitoes in their swampy breeding-grounds.



### SQUADRON-LEADER SCARF

For 'supreme heroism' against 'tremendous odds,' Squadron-Leader Arthur Stewart King Scarf, R.A.F., was awarded the V.C. posthumously, it was announced on June 22, 1946. After a Japanese attack on the R.A.F. station at Butterworth, Malaya, on December 9, 1941, his was the only aircraft to survive, yet he pressed on to bomb the enemy air base at Singora, Thailand, as sole remaining member of a sortie already arranged. Over the target he was mortally wounded.





#### AMERICA'S SHIPBUILDERS HELPED TO WIN THE WAR AT SEA

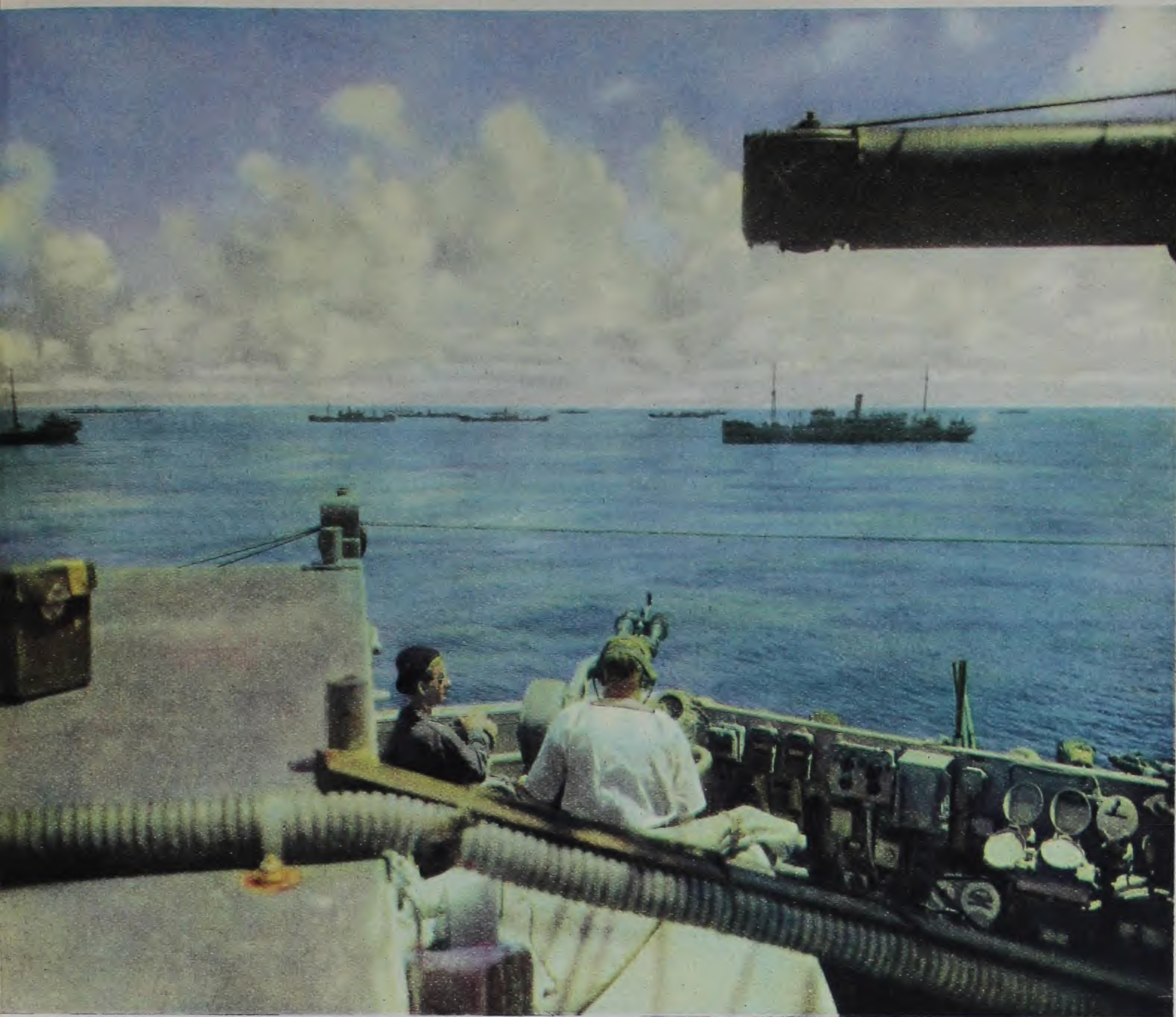
A vital contribution to the ultimate victory of the Allies at sea was the prodigious output of the American shipbuilding yards. Early in 1940 some 100,000 workers were employed; by the peak year of 1943 the number had risen to well over 700,000, fourteen per cent being women. Output increased from 1,100,000 deadweight tons of merchant shipping in 1941 to 8,000,000 tons a year later and then to 16,500,000 in 1943. Workers, many of whom are wearing protective headgear, are here leaving one of the shipyards of the South, where several new shipbuilding works were established.

*Direct colour photograph by Pictorial Press*









### BRITAIN'S CONVOYS SIGNIFIED ATLANTIC VICTORY

**I**N the House of Commons on October 4, 1944, Mr. A. V. Alexander, First Lord of the Admiralty, declared: 'We have now reached a stage at which most of our shipping problems appear to be over.' Eight months later, on June 6, 1945, President Truman and Mr. Churchill issued their last joint statement on the war against the U-boats. They described it as 'a long and perilous struggle, demanding not only the utmost courage, daring and endurance, but also the highest scientific and technical skill.' 781 German submarines had been sunk, though at the peak of the battle in 1941 and 1942 'the issue hung in the balance.'

The Convoy System played an important part in the struggle, notably in the Atlantic and on the Murmansk route to Russia. In five years and eight months 75,000 merchant ships were escorted in or across the Atlantic in 2,000 ocean convoys, the largest of which totalled 167 ships—all covered by escorts of the Royal Navy. The total number of ships lost was 574, equivalent to one in every 131 that sailed. Nearly 1,500 merchant ships were escorted by the Royal Navy in 75 convoys to and from North Russia, and 173,000 in some 7,700 British coastal convoys. The photographs in this and the facing page were taken during a two-day attack by enemy bombers on a British convoy in the Bay of Biscay in September 1943. Though U-boats joined in, both they and the bombers were driven off, without loss to shipping. Left, crew man A.A. guns during the air attack. Above part of the convoy.



IN WAR AND PEACE WE SERVE



GWR • LMS • LNER • SR

Lend a hand  
on the land



#### LAST OF THE WAR-TIME POSTERS

In early summer 1945 British Railways (top left), and London Transport (centre) issued striking Victory posters. Earlier in the year British citizens were still being exhorted—by means of other posters shown here—to continue their war-time duties. This selection completes the series of representative war posters of the Second Great War begun on page 551.

ARMY  
CADET  
FORCE

LEARN TO LEAD



STILL MORE  
**PAPER RAGS BONES**  
WANTED FOR SALVAGE



... BUT WE'VE GOT TO BEAT  
THE JAP FIRST



KEEP ON SAVING

YOU KNOW A VITAL SECRET  
**KEEP IT DARK**





made a thousand-mile daylight flight on January 27 to bomb the Mandalin-Simon hydro-electric plant in Java, a visit repeated on February 11; R.A.F. Kittyhawks and Beaufighters from Morotai attacked Tohohon in Celebes on February 14. The preliminary strategic air assault for the reconquest of Malaya and the Netherlands East was just beginning when Japan surrendered.

The invasion of Luzon (January 9, 1945—see page 3743) was preceded by air attacks on bridges, tunnels and roads, and dummy parachutists were dropped to create a false impression as to the actual points of Allied attack. Subsequent operations were supported by strategic bombing here, as in other campaigns.

Air operations over a wide area supported the attack on Luzon: carrier-aircraft of the U.S. 3rd Fleet attacked Formosa and Okinawa, largest of the Ryukyu Islands, on January 2 and 3 (this was the first attack on the Ryukyus), and reconnoitred without interference 540 miles of the Chinese coast from Formosa to Hongkong, destroying 111 Japanese aircraft, damaging 220, sinking 27 enemy ships and damaging 68. The rail system and 24 airfields on Formosa were heavily bombed again by carrier-aircraft on the 7th. On the 11th, carrier-aircraft sank 25 enemy ships and damaged 13 in four convoys off Indo-China, and destroyed 39 flying-boats and seaplanes in Indo-China harbours. The area was attacked again next day, when 16 more ships were sunk, and 15 more damaged. In the two days 112 aircraft were shot down, all the operations being carried out at a cost of 16 U.S. planes.

On January 13 carrier-aircraft attacked Hongkong, Swatow, and Amoy. China-based Super-Fortresses hit targets in Formosa, including Okoyama and the Toko seaplane base, on January 16 and 17. Carrier-aircraft attacking the same island on the 20th and 21st shot down 47 Japanese planes, destroyed 102 and damaged 162 on the ground. From the reoccupation of the Philippines to June 17, Allied aircraft based in the Pacific dropped 10,000 tons of bombs on Formosa, and heavy attacks continued. Off Formosa on May 21 a single U.S. plane destroyed a convoy of three transports and two freighters aggregating 17,000 tons.

After bombardment since January 23, during which 3,128 tons of bombs were rained on the two-and-three-quarter-square-mile island of Corregidor (which commands the entrance to Manila Bay),



#### R.A.F. GROUND CREWS IN ACTION IN BURMA

Since the reconquest of Burma in 1945 depended largely on air power and supply, R.A.F. ground staff were keymen. 1. Unloading a L-5 Sentinel liaison aircraft from an invasion barge on the Arakan coast. These light machines were much used to transport wounded, etc. In Central Burma: R.A.F. fitters recondition Merlin engines for Spitfires at a forward airfield (2); and (3) an improvised 'control tower,' made from strips of white cloth stretched on bamboo frames, in action.

*Photos, British Official*





men of the 503rd Parachute Regiment dropped on to the island on February 16 from two long trains of Army C-47 transport planes and, with infantry landed on the beaches, began its reconquest. **Air Patrols Over South China Sea** Princessa on Palawan Island (west Philippines) was captured

with its two airstrips on March 1: these airfields controlled the Sulu Sea, and also the sea-lanes of the South China Sea between Japan and her conquests in south-east Asia and the East Indies. Thereafter U.S. Navy Liberators based on the Philippines and Morotai maintained daily patrols over the South China Sea.

On April 1 the U.S. 10th Army landed on Okinawa (see page 3754) under an air "umbrella" of 1,500 naval planes. The violent sea-air battle which followed is described in page 3761. (By the end of the first week of the invasion U.S. Marine fighter aircraft were in action from Yontan airfield.) In the struggle for Okinawa, Allied aircraft losses exceeded 1,000, and heavy naval losses were suffered from enemy air attack, particularly by "Kamikaze"



**BY AIR TO RANGOON**  
Indian parachute troops of the 14th Army were dropped on May 1, 1945, at Elephant Point, not far from Rangoon, two days before the Burmese capital's capture by powerful forces of infantry landed from ships of the Royal Navy on May 2 (see Chapter 371). Here, Indian parachute troops are aboard a Dakota aircraft on their way to Rangoon.

pilots. Although these suicide pilots, belonging to the Kamikaze (suicide) Corps, were first encountered during the Battle for Leyte Gulf (see page 3402) in October 1944, they were not mentioned in official communiqués until April 1945.

Their object was to crash their planes on the decks of Allied ships, immolating themselves in the process, and their sacrifice achieved a certain amount of success: the 27,000-ton aircraft-carrier U.S.S. "Ticonderoga" was heavily damaged on January 21 (144 killed or missing, 193 wounded) by two suicide planes off Formosa; the

plane off Negros (Philippines) on December 13 (133 killed, 190 wounded). Other instances are given in page 3762.

Over Okinawa, Kamikaze attacks became more bitter and better organized: 111 were shot down by ships' guns and U.S. fighters during the nights of May 27-28 and 28-29 alone. There also the "baka," first mentioned on April 28 when one crashed into the U.S. hospital ship "Comfort," also made its appearance; it was a small, wooden-built, piloted, rocket-assisted glider bomb, carried to its launching point slung under a master aircraft. During its dive the pilot accelerated to about 650 m.p.h. by using his rockets, and steered his glider on to the target—usually a ship—perishing in the crash. The warhead contained more than a ton of explosive.

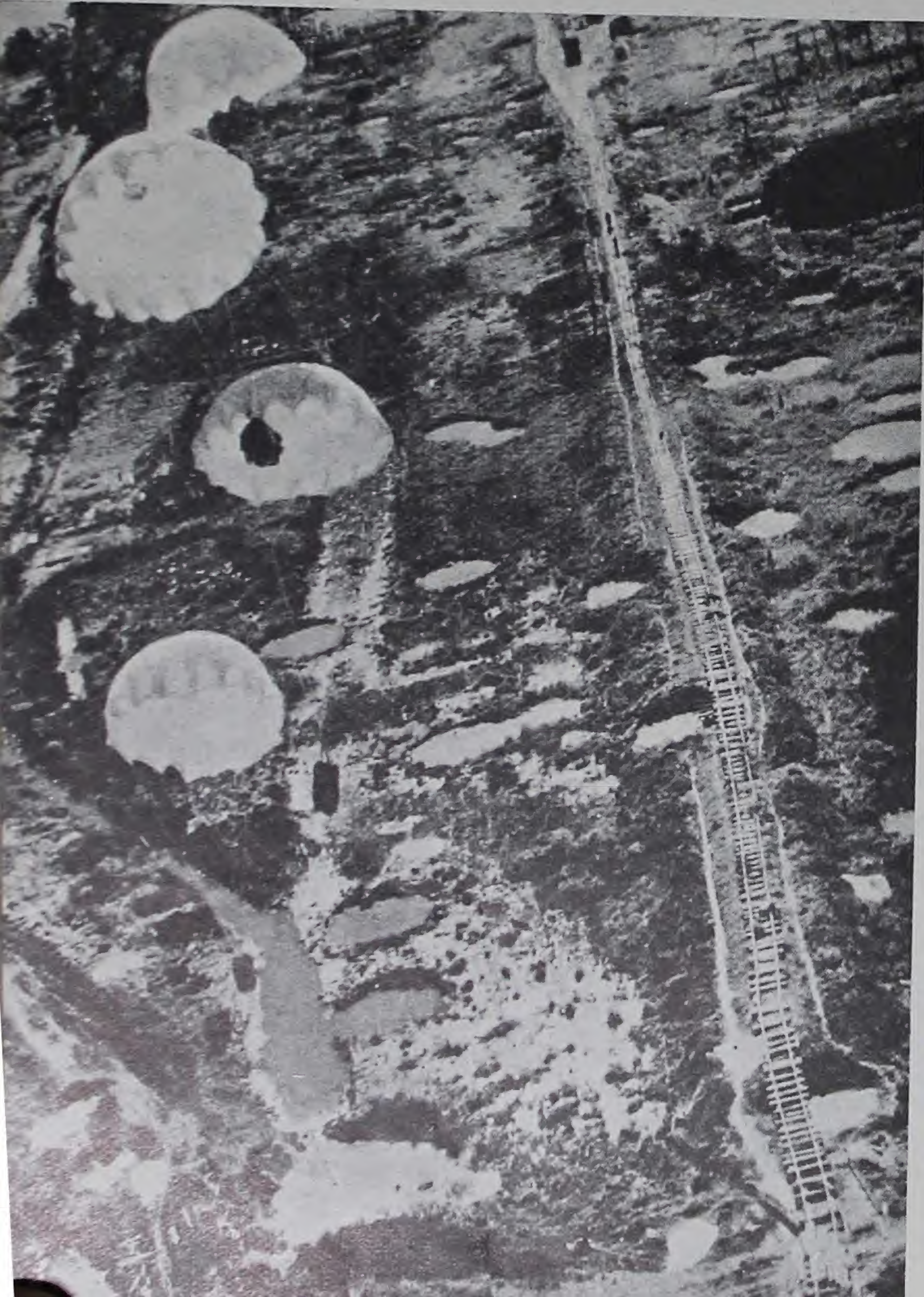
Okinawa, captured on June 21, was soon almost covered by airfields for Allied combat aircraft in preparation for the final all-out assault on Japan proper. From these airfields, interdiction of the

**Okinawa as Allied Air Base**

#### FAMOUS RAILWAY

The advance of the British 36th Division down the Myitkyina-Mandalay 'railway-corridor' (see page 3543) was one of the great exploits of the fighting in Burma in 1944-45. Over a section of the line in an area heavily pitted with shell-holes, aircraft of the U.S.A. 10th Air Force are (left) parachuting food, ammunition and medical supplies to advancing troops.

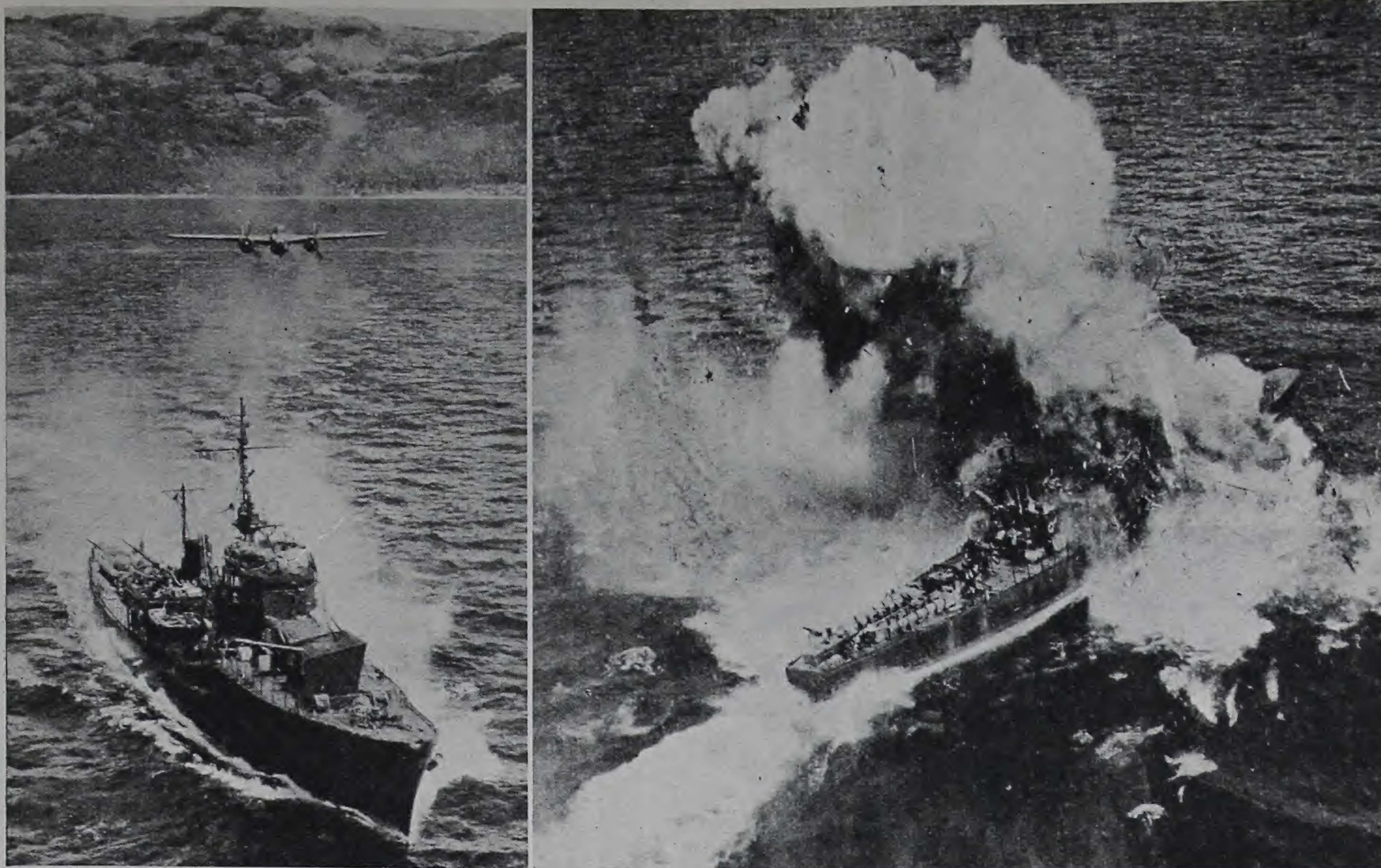
Photos, British Official



enemy sea-lines between Japan and Korea and the north-eastern China ports became practicable: in 49 days Allied aircraft sank 50 supply ships and damaged 64 others in the Tsushima Strait; Shanghai was attacked by over 200 bombers and fighters from Okinawa on July 18 and 19, by 300 on the 24th.

The Australian 9th Division landed in Brunei Bay, north-west Borneo, on June 10 (see page 3601) and seized the naval anchorage and airfields. These new facilities completed a chain of strategic bases from which Allied land-based and seaborne aircraft could cover the coast of the Asiatic mainland from Korea to Singapore. The Japanese were now hemmed in to the west of a





#### END OF A JAPANESE DESTROYER OFF LEYTE

The fate of an enemy destroyer, part of a convoy attempting to reinforce the Japanese base at Ormoc, Leyte (taken by U.S. troops on December 10, 1944), is vividly shown here. Left, a B-25 of the U.S. Far East Air Force flattens out over the destroyer which is vainly trying to escape. Right, a few seconds later the target is struck with a direct hit amidships which caused her complete destruction.

*Photos, U.S. Navy*

Tokyo: the target area was brilliantly illuminated, and three square miles were burnt out by 4,500 tons of incendiaries (about 750,000 bombs). In another heavy attack three days later,

line from the northern Kuriles to Victoria Point, and the pockets of their forces (e.g. on Bougainville and at Wewak) to the east and south were completely cut off.

While all these widespread operations were going on, the air attack on the Japanese mainland, shared by land-based and carrier-borne machines, was

**Attacks on Japanese Mainland** mounting steadily. Super-Fortresses from the Marianas attacking Tokyo, most frequent

objective in Japan, on January 27 met the strongest opposition they had encountered. On February 10 Tokyo suffered an earthquake, and an hour later the Kanto factory area, embracing both Tokyo and Yokohama, was hit by Super-Fortresses. By 7 a.m. on February 16 a very powerful force of the U.S. 5th Fleet under Vice-Admiral Mitscher, and including 15-20 aircraft carriers, had moved up to within 300 miles of the island of Honshu; during that day Tokyo and Yokohama were subjected to incessant bombing for nine hours by 1,500 carrier-borne aircraft. The attack continued next day, and ended in a decisive victory: 332

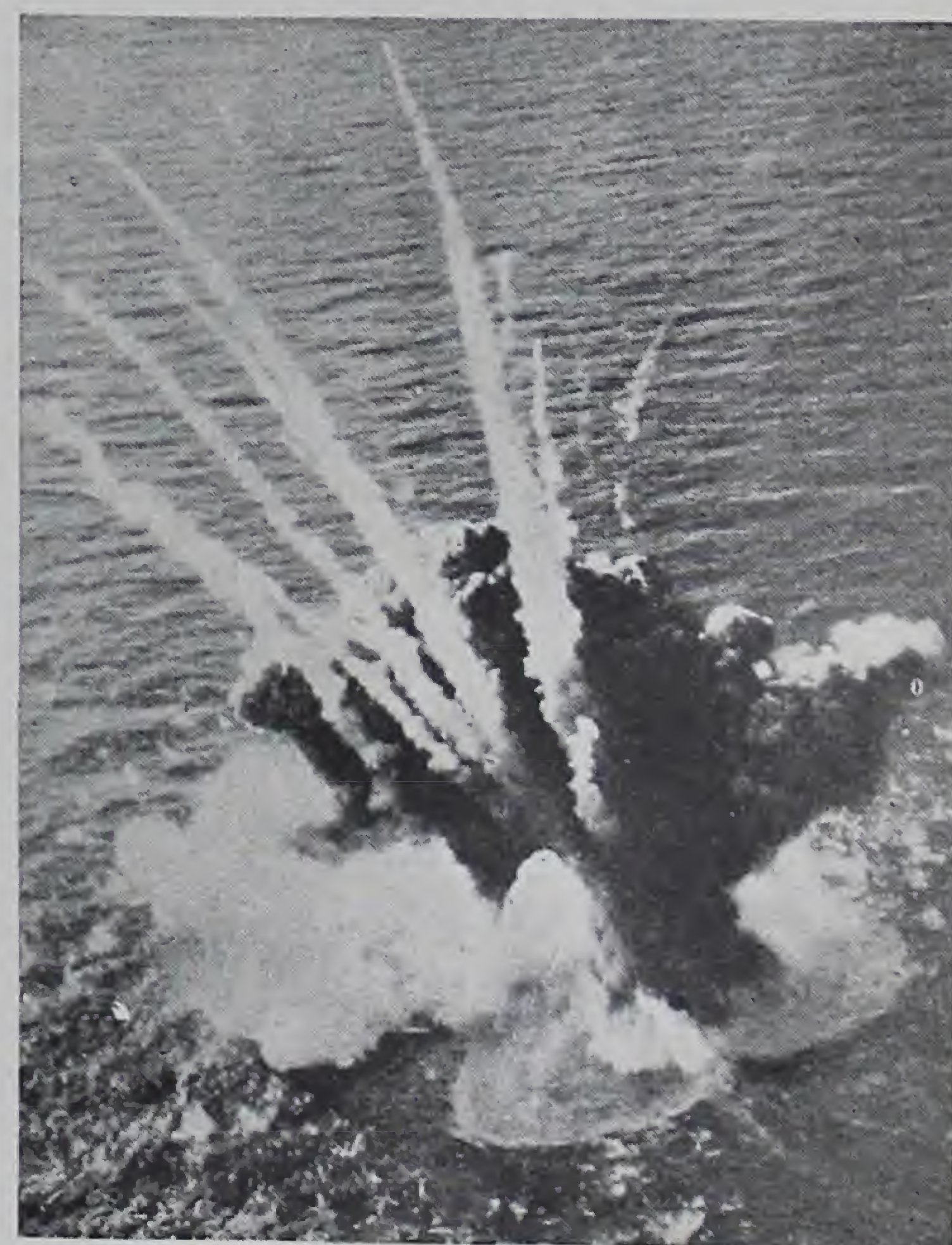
Japanese planes were destroyed in combat, 177 on the ground, and at least another 150 probably destroyed on the first day; an unknown number were brought down on the second. An escort carrier was left down by the bows, ablaze and sinking, at Yokohama, 13 other vessels were sunk, 22 damaged. The cost was 49 U.S. planes, 30-40 pilots.

On February 25 aircraft of the 5th Fleet, which attacked Tokyo and Yokohama throughout the day, were joined by over 200 Super-Fortresses from the Marianas; together they devastated 667 acres of the industrial centre of the Japanese capital.

Over a thousand tons of a new type of incendiary—a 6-lb. bomb filled with jellied petrol and dropped in 500-lb. clusters—dropped on Tokyo on the night of March 9 razed over 15 square miles of the city. By March 21 Mustang and Black Widow (see illus. in page 3394) fighters were reported in operation from Iwo Jima; on April 7 Mustangs from Iwo Jima escorted Super-Fortresses from the Marianas in an attack on Tokyo and Nagoya. Pathfinders preceded an attack from 3.0 to 4.45 a.m. on May 23 on the congested Shinagawa district of

#### UP IN SMOKE

First of many attacks on the Japanese mainland by carrier-based aircraft was made on February 16-17, 1945, when Tokyo and Yokohama were incessantly pounded, resulting in the destruction of enemy shipping and 332 Japanese aircraft. Below, struck by a carrier-based U.S. Navy bomber, an enemy destroyer blows up off Kyushu. The nature of the explosion suggests that her magazine was hit. *Photo, U.S. Navy*







### JAPANESE SUICIDE GLIDER-BOMB

The 'baka,' a new Japanese 'suicide' glider-bomb, first reported in action against shipping off Okinawa on April 28, 1945, was later used against Super-Fortresses attacking the Japanese mainland. With wooden wings and fuselage, it was carried to within close range of the target by a master aircraft, whence it was rocket-assisted and directed by a pilot killed when it exploded. This 'baka' was found intact on Yontan airfield, Okinawa. The warhead weighed over a ton.

when the fires were fanned by a 70 m.p.h. gale, the Imperial Palace was damaged.

Nagoya was attacked almost as often as Tokyo: a force of Super-Fortresses which bombed targets there on January 23 met strong opposition and fought running battles up to a hundred miles out at sea, both approaching and leaving. In five incendiary raids during March by forces of 250 and 300 Super-Fortresses, Nagoya was hit three times, Osaka once, when six square miles of it were burnt out, and Kobe once.

Between March 27 and May 11 Super-Fortresses based on Tinian carried out mine-laying operations aimed at sealing off the three entrances to the Inland Sea of Japan; by August 3 every important harbour in Japan itself and along the coast of Asia from Korea to the Soviet frontier had been mined.

The first attack on Japan by aircraft other than Super-Fortresses or carrier planes was made on April 19 when Mustangs from Iwo Jima hit Utsugi naval air station which lies 25 miles

south-west of Tokyo. Between April 21 and May 9 the airfields on Kyushu Island, used by the enemy planes attacking Allied shipping off Okinawa, were the principal object of attack.

Aircraft plant on Honshu was attacked by Super-Fortresses on May 6; the main fuelling centre of the Japanese army and navy at Tokuyama and other oil centres on May 9; the seaplane plant at Fukae on the 10th. Over 500 Super-Fortresses dropped 3,500 tons of fire bombs on Nagoya from a low level on May 16; the port, docks and industrial plant of Yokohama received 3,200 tons of fire bombs on May 28.

On May 30 Major-General Lemay, Commanding General of the 21st (Super-Fortress) Bomber Command, said at Guam (announced as Pacific Ocean Areas Advanced H.Q. on February 14) that raids to date on Tokyo had cost fifty Super-Fortresses, 550 airmen; in Washington Mr. Forrestal, the Navy Secretary, said that the overall strength of the Japanese air force had been reduced by thirteen per cent as a result of losses inflicted in April alone.

Leaflet raids began during May—from May 5 to June 3, between 500,000 and 1,000,000 emphasizing the futility of continued resistance were dropped on Japanese cities.

In a raid on Kobe on June 4 (3,000 tons of fire bombs) one at least out of eight Super-Fortresses lost was brought down by "baka" bombs launched from



### SENTINEL AT OKINAWA

A U.S. L-5 Sentinel liaison aircraft flies over blazing Okinawa to observe the effects of Allied artillery and mortar fire. Nicknamed 'Jungle Angels' in Burma, these light monoplanes, powered with a single 6-cylinder engine developing 185 h.p., and with a wing-span of 34 feet, were used for many purposes, including transport of supplies and wounded, artillery-spotting and the directing of troop movements in the jungle.

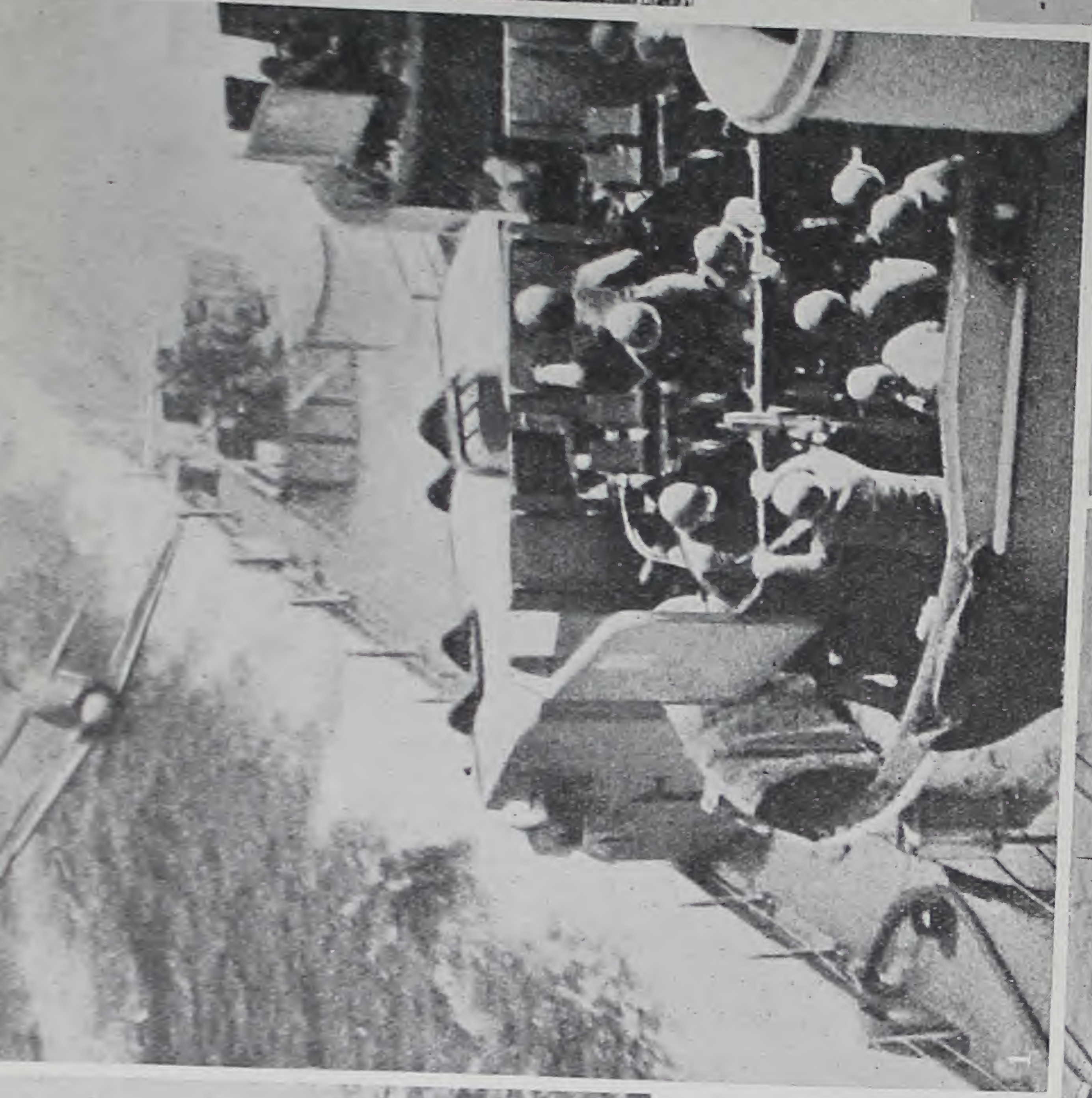
Photo, Central Press



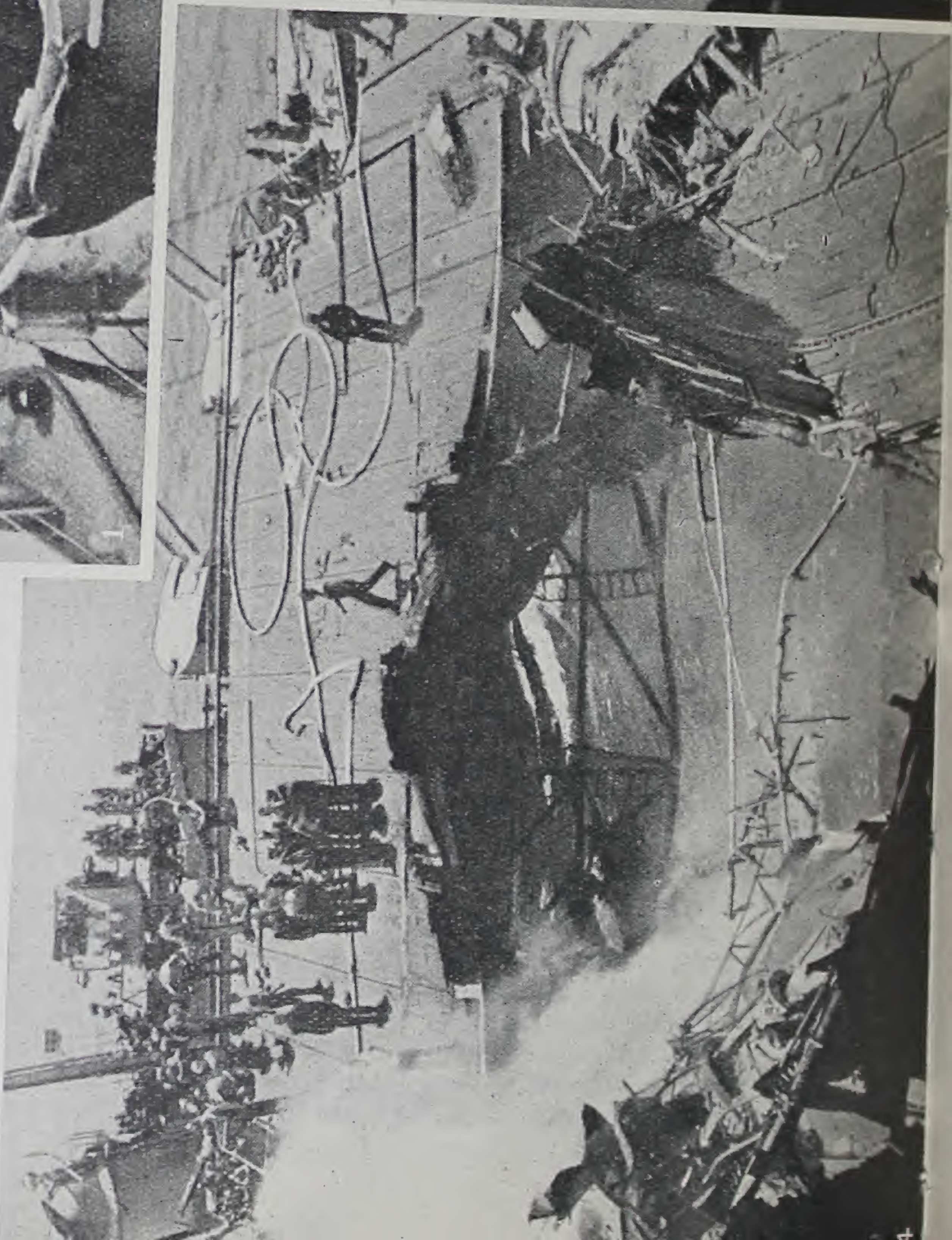


#### 'KAMIKAZE' AIRCRAFT ATTACK—

1. Japanese 'Zeke' ('Zero') 'suicide' aircraft desperately tries to manoeuvre on to the deck of a U.S. Pacific Fleet warship before crashing into the sea. Another—a twin-motored type—is hit by A.A. fire, and with its engines belching flames (2), strikes the sea with a terrific splash (3), after an unsuccessful attempt to dive on a U.S. carrier.



—U.S. WARSHIPS IN THE PACIFIC  
4. Hole made by a 500-lb. bomb, dropped by an enemy 'suicide' aircraft, on the flight deck of the U.S.N. carrier 'Bunker Hill' off Okinawa on May 11, 1945 (see page 3762). 5. 'Kamikaze' aircraft flies low over a U.S.N. escort-carrier, its port engine and wing-tips aflame after direct hits by the carrier's guns from which smoke still drifts.





Japanese fighters in the attempt to ram the American bombers. Osaka was bombed by instruments through thick cloud on June 6. A number of industrial towns were hit on June 17 (when one, Kagoshima, was left entirely ablaze), 19, and 21. Seventy of a force of about 450 Super-Fortresses which bombed Nagoya, Osaka and other towns on June 26 were forced by adverse winds and heavy rain to land on Iwo Jima on the return journey. The naval station of Sasebo and two other towns received 3,000 tons of incendiaries on June 28. Next day Tokyo announced the mass evacuation of war factories to Manchuria. On July 9 it was announced in Guam that as a result of the first 41 incendiary raids on Japan, 30 Japanese cities had been virtually reduced to ashes, the total burnt-out



#### BORNEO BOMBED

Liberator and Beaufighter aircraft of the Royal Australian Air Force gave valuable support to troops of the Australian 9th Division both before and after the landings in Brunei Bay, north-west Borneo, on June 10, 1945. Above, R. A. A. F. crews being briefed by Australian Army liaison officers before taking off from Palawan in the Philippines. Left, Brunei after bombing by the R. A. A. F. It was captured on June 14.

*Photos, British Official*



area being estimated at 130 square miles. Naval and transport bases, industrial towns, oil installations, airfields continued to be relentlessly attacked.

A U.S. Navy Department announcement of February 27 stated that since December 1, 1944, carrier-based planes of the U.S. 3rd and 5th Fleets had destroyed 1,610 Japanese planes, damaged 1,078, sunk 187 ships and probably sunk or damaged another 402 for the loss of 178 aircraft.

On March 18 and 19 naval planes attacked the Japanese fleet sheltering in the Inland Sea of Japan: six freighters were sunk, 200 aeroplanes shot down, 275 destroyed on the ground, and damage

#### Damage in Japanese Waters

was done to a battleship of the new 45,000-ton "Yamato" class, as well as to a number of other war vessels. Attacks over and near Japan by naval aircraft were intensified during July: on the 6th, Navy planes made extensive raids in Korea, and in the waters round Japan and in the Yellow Sea damaged or left ablaze ten enemy ships; on the 7th Navy Privateers sank or damaged many small ships in the same areas and round the islands of the northern Ryukyus. On the 10th a powerful task force of Admiral Halsey's 3rd Fleet commanded by Vice-Admiral J. F. McBain approached Honshu to within





### R.A.F. IN COCOS ISLANDS

The Cocos or Keeling Islands, a group of some 20 small coral-islands in the Indian Ocean, 700 miles south-west of Sumatra and annexed to Singapore in 1903, provided bases for R.A.F. aircraft of South East Asia Command. Here, Spitfires of No.136 (Fighter) Squadron are lined up on a Cocos airstrip. This top-scoring squadron was credited with 100 'kills,' besides 150 'probables' and 'damaged.'

*Photo, British Official*

fifteen miles' flying distance of Tokyo Bay: some 2,000 carrier-aircraft attacked targets round Tokyo. Not a single Japanese aircraft or warship gave battle.

The first bombardment of the Japanese mainland came on July 14 (see page 3763). On the 15th 1,000 carrier-aircraft attacked

**British Aircraft Join in Assault** Japan. Again there was no opposition, though 24 planes were lost through bad weather. In the two days' attacks 129 locomotives were destroyed, 82 planes were destroyed or damaged on the ground, 374 small ships were sunk or damaged, and heavy damage was done to installations. British carrier-aircraft joined in the assault at dawn on the 17th—there was no opposition except A.A. fire. A British-American force of carrier-aircraft attacked Japanese warships at Yokosuka on July 18; at Kure on July 24 U.S. carrier-planes heavily damaged the 30,000-ton battleships "Ise" and "Hyuga," left burning the heavy cruiser "Tone" and the light cruiser "Oyodo," and damaged a large aircraft-carrier and the heavy cruiser "Aoba," while British planes sank an escort carrier of the "Kobe" class and five cargo vessels and destroyed 12 grounded aircraft. Another British-American attack on July 28 left "Hyuga" and "Ise" beached and burning; the cruisers "Tone," "Aoba" and "Oyodo" out of action, 54 enemy ships sunk, 90 others with the escort carrier "Kaiyo" and the aircraft-

carriers "Amagi" and "Katsuragi" damaged; and extensive damage was done to land installations in spite of strong opposition and very heavy A.A. fire. Twenty-one enemy planes were destroyed in combat, 271 on the ground for the loss of 27 American and British aircraft.

While carrier-planes were concentrating mainly on shipping in their July attacks, Super-Fortresses continued their attacks on land objectives: on the 12th, some 500 dropped more than 3,000 tons of high explosive and incendiary bombs at night on Ichinomiya, a munitions centre nine miles north-



### FIRST 'SEAFIRE' OVER JAPAN

As the Allied navies drew nearer the Japanese mainland against diminishing opposition in 1945, carrier-borne fighter aircraft began to make increasingly frequent sorties over enemy territory. Here, a 'Seafire' of the Fleet Air Arm (see page 3391 and illus. in page 3392), carrying out escort duties for the first time over Japan, flies above a heavily-bombed area. These naval equivalents of the 'Spitfire' first went into action over the Normandy beaches in June 1944.



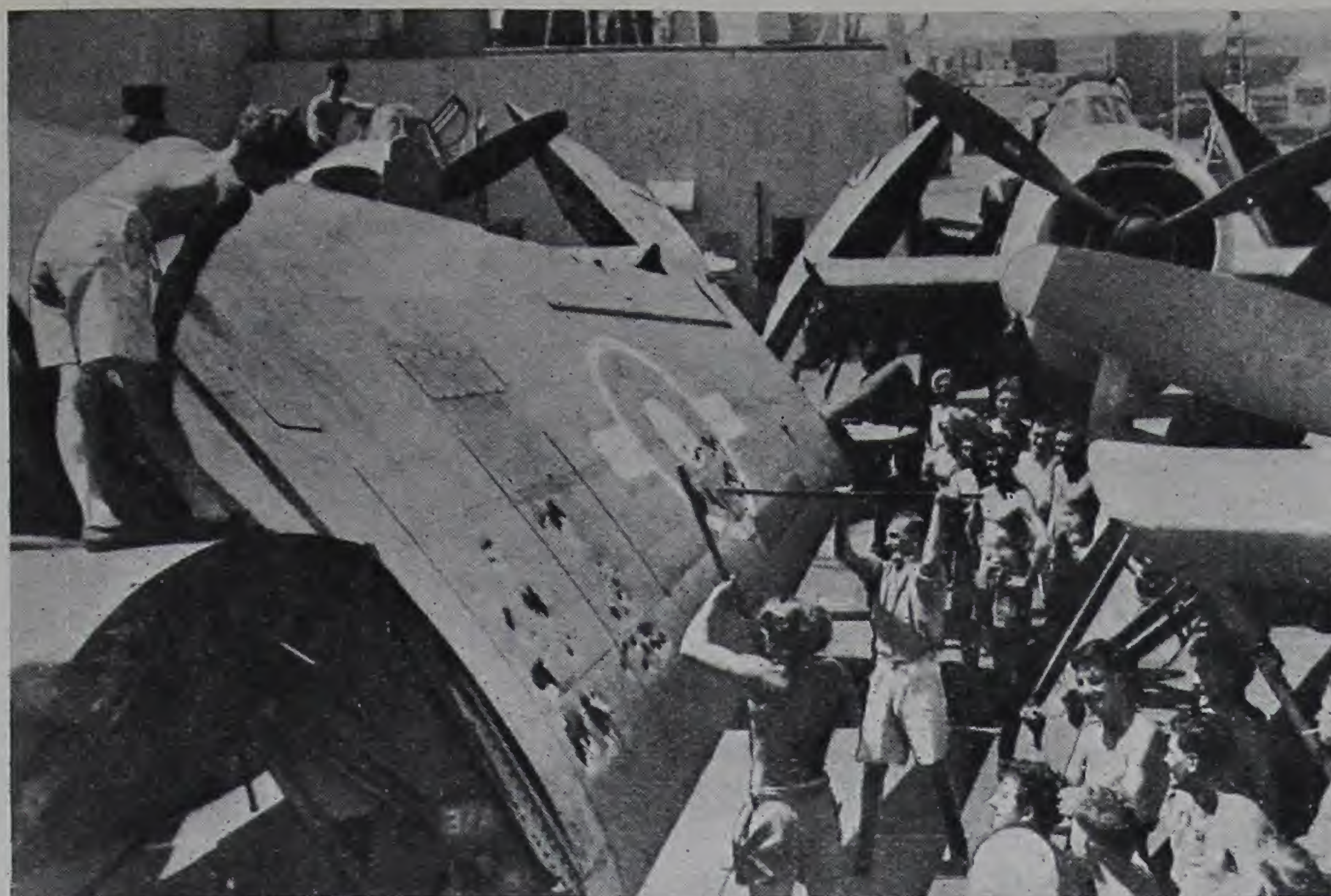


### TOKYO IS 'SCORCHED TO THE GROUND'

On May 26, 1945, after a raid by 500 Super-Fortresses dropping 4,000 tons of incendiaries, the Japanese radio admitted that Tokyo was 'literally scorched to the ground,' the Imperial Palace severely damaged and that 'what was once the world's third metropolis' was 'virtually laid waste.' On June 9, the enemy announced that in raids on the capital 3,100,000 had been rendered homeless. Destruction in the (1) Asukasa, (2) Sumida river industrial districts. 3. U.S. B-29's head for Tokyo.







### CONDEMNED AIRCRAFT DUMPED AT SEA

Some 300 Fleet Air Arm aircraft were taken on board Royal Navy escort-carriers in Sydney Harbour, New South Wales, in late 1945, and dumped at sea. Including U.S. 'Corsairs,' 'Hellcats,' 'Avengers,' and British 'Barracudas,' stripped of all useful equipment, they were described, though some were new, as 'surplus, obsolete, and of no value to anybody.' Above, loading condemned planes on board the carrier 'Pioneer.'

*Photo, Planet News*

west of Nagoya, and other places; before dawn on the 16th some 450 attacked Oita, a port in the north-east of Kyushu, and other towns with 2,500 tons of fire-bombs; on the 19th more than 600 struck heavily at dawn at Choshi, the biggest fishing port on the east coast of Honshu; on the 24th more than 600 dropped 4,000 tons, including 4,000-lb. bombs, on Osaka, Nagoya and satellite industrial towns. Also on the 24th several hundred Liberators and Mustangs, from Iwo and Okinawa, bombed and strafed wide areas of south Honshu. Smaller forces attacked the coal liquefaction plant at Abel (Honshu), oil refineries at Kawaraki on Tokyo Bay, chemical centres and oil refineries at Omuta and elsewhere.

On July 27 Super-Fortresses dropped 60,000 leaflets on eleven towns—centres of war production or transport—warning them that

**Towns Warned in Leaflet Raids** they would be targets for heavy air attacks, urging their inhabitants to leave them immediately, and appealing to the Japanese to overthrow their militaristic government, make peace, and thus save their country from destruction. (The announcement of this raid at Guam was accompanied by the statement that a million and a half leaflets were being dropped by Super-Fortresses on Japanese cities every day.) On the 28th six of the warned towns were heavily bombed. Twelve more cities received 720,000 leaflets on July 31; four of them were attacked on August 1 by a

record force of 820 Super-Fortresses which dropped 6,632 tons of H.E. and incendiaries—a bomb load exceeding any dropped by the R.A.F. or U.S.A.A.F. in a single raid on Germany.

In operations designed to cut off supplies of food, raw materials and fuel, bombers and fighters based on Okinawa destroyed or damaged 250 enemy vessels totalling 250,000 tons between July 3 and August 1.

A statement issued from Guam on August 5 said that 31 towns had been warned, ten of which had been destroyed; in the past 35 days Super-Fortresses had dropped nearly 50,000 tons of bombs on Japan, as well as 3,000,000 copies of the

surrender ultimatum issued at Potsdam on July 26 and signed by Mr. Churchill, Mr. Truman, and Generalissimo Chiang-Kai-shek. In addition, every Monday morning U.S. planes were dropping over Japan a million copies of a miniature newspaper called "Rakusen" (Parachute News), made up like a typical Japanese daily, and containing articles, pictures and cartoons.

On August 6 President Truman announced, "Sixteen hours ago [i.e. at 8.45 a.m. on the 6th] an American aeroplane dropped one bomb on Hiroshima. That bomb had more power than 20,000 tons of TNT and more than 2,000 times the blast-power of the British 'grand slam', which is the largest bomb yet used in the history of warfare." The first bomb charged with the power of atomic fission (*see* Chapter 379) had fallen. On the same day four towns on the "death list" were hit by 580 Super-Fortresses with 3,850 tons of H.E. and incendiaries. A second atomic bomb, even more powerful than the first—described as already obsolete—was dropped on the shipbuilding and arms centre of Nagasaki on August 8: it was 48 hours before the pall of dust and smoke permitted effective aerial reconnaissance. Also on August 8 the Soviet Union declared war on Japan (*see* page 3780).

The ordinary air offensive was maintained in strength: the very day of the surrender (August 14) (*see* Chapter 372) saw a force of 800 Super-Fortresses drop 6,000 tons of high explosive and incendiaries on Honshu targets. Battered from the air, cut off by Allied air and sea power from contact with the riches of the immense empire she had conquered with such apparent ease, Japan could no longer hold out.

### R.A.F. TRANSPORT COMMAND FLIES OUT EX-PRISONERS

Repatriation from South-East Asia began on August 18, 1945, organized by R.A.P.W.I. (Recovery of Allied Prisoners of War and Internees), which in two months evacuated 18,500 Allied nationals from Siam alone. Here at Bangkok, the Siamese capital (occupied on September 12), ex-prisoners, some on crutches, wait to embark on a R.A.F. Transport Command aircraft for Rangoon, first stage on the long way home.

*Photo, British Official*





# ALL GERMANY IN ALLIED HANDS

*In this, the final chapter describing the campaign in western Europe, the Military Editor, Major-General Sir Charles Gwynn, traces the advance of the United States Armies and the French 1st Army from their crossings of the Rhine to the final unconditional surrender of all German land, sea and air forces at Rheims on May 7, 1945. For 21st Army Group advance, see Chapter 357*

**W**HILE Field-Marshal Montgomery's armies were preparing for their crossing of the Rhine (see Chapter 357) and General Patton's U.S. 3rd and General Patch's U.S. 7th Armies were clearing the Saar pocket, General Hodges's U.S. 1st Army was occupied in consolidating and expanding the footing it had, on March 8, so surprisingly gained across the Rhine at Remagen (see pages 3572-73). At first it seemed improbable that his bridge-head would provide an opening for a major thrust, on account of the difficult nature of the country to the east; but it would in any case be a source of anxiety to the Germans and cause dispersion of their reserves.

The footing originally gained was very small and all communication to it depended at first on the captured Ludendorff railway bridge, which had suffered some damage and was exposed to observed artillery fire and air attack (see illustrations in page 3572). Nevertheless the success was exploited with great energy, and, before German

resistance solidified, high ground overlooking the bridge was captured. Bridging equipment was also rapidly brought forward, and before the railway bridge collapsed on March 17 several temporary bridges were in operation.

Bitter fighting continued with German reinforcements constantly arriving, especially on the north side of the bridge-head, from which it was evidently expected that a thrust towards the Ruhr might develop. By March 25 the bridge-head had, however, been expanded to a width of thirty and a depth of ten miles, and although on its northern flank the enemy had by then consolidated a strong defensive position on the line of the Sieg river, Montgomery's crossing had produced a new and more serious menace to the Ruhr.

The expansion of the Remagen bridge-head in depth had cut the main Frankfurt-Cologne motor road (March 16), increasing the enemy's difficulties of maintaining north-south communication, and now General Hodges brought off a surprise coup which caught the

Germans on the wrong foot. Having deceived them by maintaining heavy pressure on the Sieg front, on March 26 he used his main force to break out of the bridge-head to the south-east. His armour drove to Limburg, seizing a bridge over the Lahn river, and raced along the highway towards Frankfurt. Other armoured columns were directed eastward, and, covering forty miles a day, reached Marburg and Giessen by March 28. From there they swung northwards through the hill country west of Kassel, one of the most important centres of strategic communication in western Germany.

By this time the U.S. 3rd Army had also come into the picture across the Rhine. On the night of March 22-23, one of its formations (XII Corps commanded by Major-General Manton S. Eddy) effected a brilliant surprise crossing

**U.S. 3rd Army Across the Rhine**

with improvised material at Oppenheim, south of Mainz. By the 24th this bridge-head was expanded to a width of fifteen miles, and on the 25th the 4th Armoured Division led a breakthrough to a depth of 27 miles, seizing an undamaged bridge over the river Main. In the confused movements entailed by mopping up the Saar, columns of the U.S. 3rd and U.S. 7th Armies had criss-crossed each other; but admirably quick Staff work sorted out the tangled lines of communication, and there was little delay or loss of momentum in the further exploitation of the unforeseen capture of the Oppenheim bridge-head. Part of the 3rd Army crossed the Rhine at Mainz to deal with the German group between Mainz and Frankfurt, which had been by-passed by the first armoured thrust, while the remainder of the Army drove north-eastward towards the line of the Fulda river and Kassel, making contact on their left with the right of General Hodges's 1st Army. During the last week of March, therefore, these two armies had embarked on a massive drive into the heart of Germany.

Farther south the U.S. 7th Army had also crossed the Rhine on a fifteen-mile front between Gernsheim and Mannheim; and, taking the latter city, had advanced 27 miles eastward. On its right the French II Corps also crossed

## BADGES OF ARMY GROUPS UNDER AMERICAN COMMAND

Below are badges of Allied Army Groups and Armies in the central and southern sections of the Western Front at the time of the surrender in May 1945. The 6th Army Group, commanded by General Jacob L. Devers, comprised the U.S. 7th Army (Lieutenant-General Alexander M. Patch) and the French 1st Army (General Jean J. de Lattre de Tassigny). The 12th Army Group, under General Omar N. Bradley, consisted of the U.S. 1st (General Courtney H. Hodges), U.S. 3rd (General George S. Patton, Jr.), U.S. 9th (Lieutenant-General William H. Simpson), and U.S. 15th (Lieutenant-General Leonard T. Gerow) Armies.



**6TH ARMY GROUP**  
[White on Red]



**12TH ARMY GROUP**  
[Red, White & Blue; Black Border]



**1ST ARMY**  
[Black on Khaki]



**3RD ARMY**  
[White on Blue; Red Ring]



**7TH ARMY**  
[Red Triangle with Yellow Border on Blue]



**9TH ARMY**  
[White on Red]



**15TH ARMY**  
[White & Red; Khaki Border]





### FAMOUS BRIDGE COLLAPSES INTO THE RHINE

On March 17, 1945, nine days after its sensational capture by a lieutenant of the U.S. 1st Army (see illus. in page 3572), the Ludendorff bridge spanning the Rhine at Remagen, south of Bonn, collapsed into the river, many U.S. engineers working on it losing their lives. But by this time temporary bridges had been built and were in use.

*Photos, Associated Press*

near Germersheim, made contact with the U.S. 7th Army south of Heidelberg, and on April 1 established a bridge-head for the French Army at Philippsburg.

The Rhine had ceased to be an obstacle, and an offensive on an immense scale had begun to develop east of the river. The enemy's defence had been completely shattered and the speed with which the offensive had been pressed, combined with the disruption of his transport system and shortage of motor fuel, left him quite incapable of co-ordinating a new defensive system on any sector

of his front. He continued to offer bitter resistance at isolated points, but these were by-passed by armoured columns and left to be mopped up later. The U.S. 15th Army, commanded by Lieutenant-General Leonard T. Gerow, was at this time brought forward to occupy, organize and govern the parts of Germany already conquered, and so to give the leading armies greater freedom of action in their surge eastwards; in particular, by holding the line of the Rhine on the Ruhr front, it enabled the U.S. 9th Army to press boldly forward, and on April 1 to make contact with the U.S. 1st Army near Lippstadt, west of

Paderborn, thus, as recorded in page 3661, completing the encirclement of the Ruhr and a large area south of it.

On April 6 General Eisenhower was able to write to General Marshall: "As you can see from the reports, our plans have been developing almost in exact accordance with original conceptions. You must expect, now, a period in which the lines on your map will not advance as rapidly as they did during the past several weeks because we must pause to digest the big mouthful that we have swallowed in the Ruhr area. It should not take too long and, of course, in the meantime maintenance will be pushed to the limits to support our next main thrust. My G2 [Major-General K. W. D. Strong, of the British Army] figures that there may be 150,000 German soldiers left in the Ruhr, but a number of them will change into civilian clothes before we liquidate the whole thing. He is confident, however, that we will capture 100,000. The enemy has been making efforts to break out of the area, but our persistent policy of knocking out his communication to the eastward, and his lack of mobility within the pocket both make it very difficult for him to launch a really concerted attack. I am confident that he can do nothing about it."

**Eisenhower  
on 'Digesting'  
the Ruhr**



### C-IN-C., U.S. FIFTEENTH ARMY

A new army, the U.S. 15th, under Lieutenant-General Leonard T. Gerow, entered into the line of the 12th Army Group on the Western Front, on March 30, 1945, giving the U.S. 1st and 9th Armies more freedom to increase the weight of their offensive into Germany. The C-in-C. of the new army was born in 1888.





### VICTORS AND VANQUISHED IN GERMANY

Infantry of the U.S. 3rd Army crowd on board an assault-boat raft, carrying also a tank-destroyer, about to be ferried across the Rhine. General Patton's forces broke through to the river near Coblenz on March 9, 1945. Below, German prisoners march listlessly to captivity along the grass-covered centre strip on the Frankfurt motor-road near Giessen (taken by the U.S. 3rd Army on March 29) as vehicles of the U.S. 6th Armoured Division head for Kassel.



That sums up the situation at this stage admirably, and seldom has so good an opportunity been afforded of looking into the mind of a commander at a given moment and receiving his appreciation of the situation based on the information available at the time. In the event the Ruhr pocket was to yield 300,000 prisoners; elements of eighteen German divisions from the 1st Parachute, 5th Panzer and 15th

Armies had been enclosed by skilfully conceived and rapidly executed manoeuvres, in what General Eisenhower describes as the "largest double envelopment in history."

The pause envisaged by General Eisenhower proved to be hardly perceptible. Leaving strong forces to deal with the Ruhr pocket, the 1st and 9th Armies (the latter now having rejoined General Bradley's 12th Army Group)

soon started to press eastward. The 9th Army advancing from the Weser to the Elbe, with its armour covering twenty to thirty miles a day, met little or no resistance. By mid-April it had reached the Elbe near Wittenberge and Magdeburg and had established bridge-heads across that river. The 1st Army similarly drove eastward to the Mulde, south of Dessau, bypassing Leipzig and a somewhat aggressive enemy group in the Harz mountains.

The Elbe-Mulde line represented the limits of the advance in accordance with agreement reached with the Russians. The by-passed pockets at Leipzig and in the Harz mountains were speedily reduced, but the liquidation of the Ruhr was a more serious affair. Not only did the Ruhr lie right across the Allied lines of communication, but a force of the size contained in the pocket might have been difficult to hold if it had made a well co-ordinated and determined attempt to break out; even to break down stubborn defence might entail heavy sacrifice. Liquidation without delay was therefore essential.

Extensive operations developed during the first week after the encirclement, infantry and armour of the 1st and 9th Armies driving into the area from north, east and south while the 15th Army guarded the west side. With all communications to the east cut, and deprived of mobility within the pocket by persistent air attack and shortage of petrol, the Germans, who were commanded by Field-Marshal Model, were given few opportunities of taking co-ordinated action, and the attack made steady progress. Ninth Army troops entered Essen on April 9, to find that no work had been done in the huge Krupp armament factories since the R.A.F. raid of March 11 (see illus. in page 3550). Dortmund fell on the 13th, and with the capture of Düsseldorf (where cheering civilian crowds greeted the entry of troops of the U.S. 1st Army) on April 18, resistance in the Ruhr virtually ended a week before patrols of the 273rd Regiment, 69th Division, under V Corps of the U.S. 1st Army, probing east of the Mulde, made the long awaited junction with the Red Army, meeting elements of the Russian 58th Guards Division near Torgau on the Elbe on April 25 (see illus. in page 3733).

With that event, the centre of General Eisenhower's great command reached its final objective. The operations of his left wing under Field-Marshal



Montgomery are described in Chapter 357; it remains only to follow the operations of the armies of his right.

The U.S. 3rd Army, having captured Kassel on April 4, pressed on eastward to the south of it. Mühlhausen was taken the following day and the advance continued into Thuringia, though at

**North Cut Off** a slower rate. Erfurt **from 'Southern Redoubt'** was reached April 11, and cleared next day after violent fighting.

Weimar to the east of it, where the Constituent Assembly of the new German Republic met in 1919 and adopted the so-called Weimar Constitution, was occupied without opposition on April 12. The university town of Jena, with the Zeiss optical works, was captured and the Saale river crossed on April 13. At this stage, the left of the U.S. 3rd Army continued its advance eastward to reach the upper Mulde in prolongation of the U.S. 1st Army front; and beyond that river the advance continued to the Dresden-Munich highway south of Chemnitz (surrounded by April 19). This thrust closed the main avenue by which the German Armies in the north might have joined those in the south for a last stand in the "Southern Redoubt," although probably it had

#### HEIDELBERG INTACT

The ancient town of Heidelberg, on the Neckar River and famous for its university, the oldest in Germany, fell practically undamaged into the hands of the U.S. 7th Army on March 30, 1945. Only German forces to remain were a few snipers who were soon rounded up by the incoming U.S. troops and marched to the cages on the outskirts of the town.

*Photo, Keystone*



#### WHITE FLAG AT LEIPZIG

At Leipzig, captured by the U.S. 1st Army on the night of April 19-20, 1945, fanatical S.S. troops held out in the huge monument on the outskirts which commemorates the victory over Napoleon in 1813. The Nazis were forced to surrender by heavy artillery fire at point-blank range. Here a white flag flutters from the monument as U.S. troops move in.

*Photo, Associated Press*

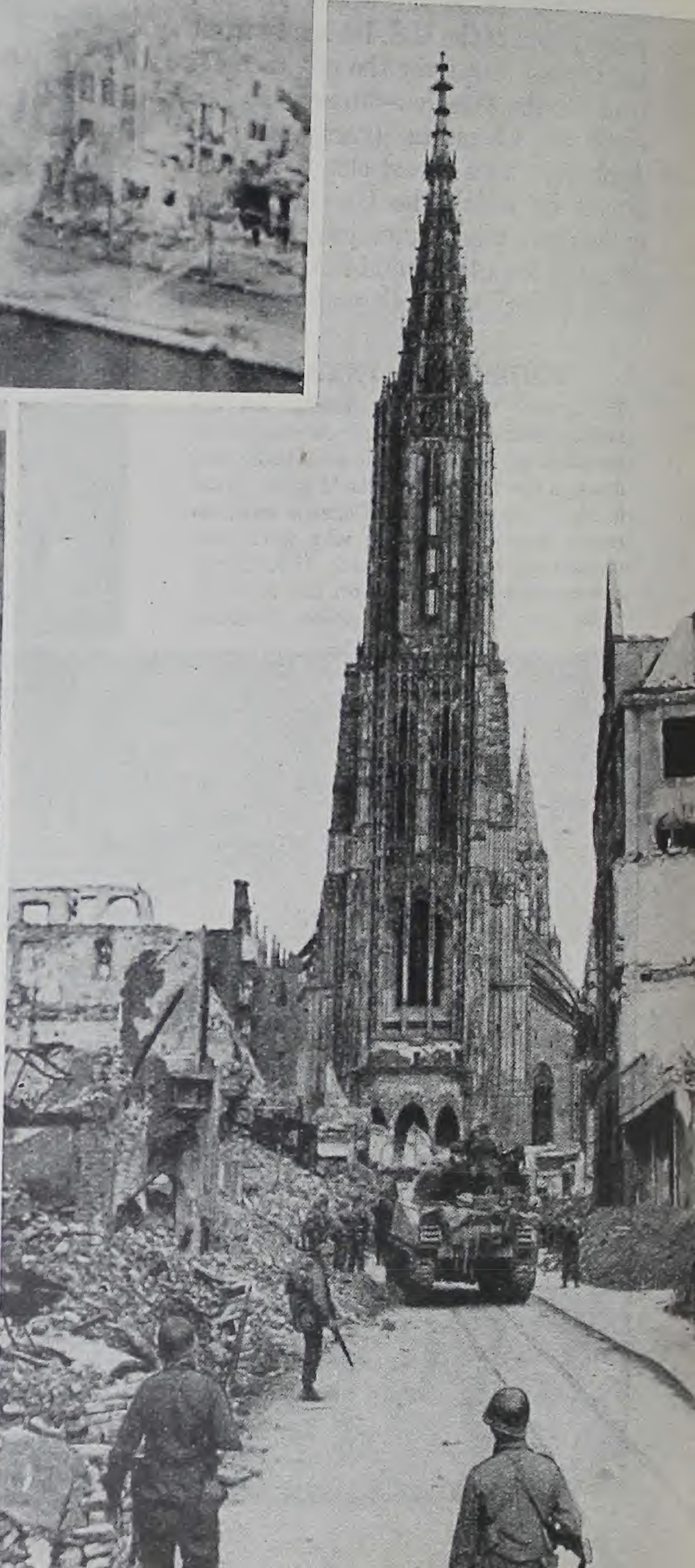
already become too late for any large force to make the attempt.

The main strength of the U.S. 3rd Army after the crossing of the Saale was directed south-east toward the mountains of Czechoslovakia and the Danube Valley, in order to complete the encirclement of the strong German force in Bohemia, already threatened from the north and east by the Russians (see page 3626) and to co-operate with the U.S. 7th Army in its advance into Bavaria. Meantime the 7th Army, after clearing up the pockets by-passed by the 3rd Army, was advancing through Baden and north-western Bavaria



## U.S. AND FRENCH ATTACK IN SOUTH

Towards the end of March 1945, Lieutenant-General Alexander M. Patch's U.S. 7th Army and the French 1st Army, under General de Lattre de Tassigny, launching offensives in the south, linked up south of Heidelberg. 1. U.S. shells explode near the ruined bridge across the River Main at Würzburg. This famous Bavarian town was cleared on April 6 after fierce street fighting. 2. In Schweinfurt, centre of Germany's ball-bearing industry and heavily damaged in repeated attacks by Allied bombers, civilians are detained for questioning. The town was entered on April 11 by the Americans. 3. The only building standing at Ulm, taken jointly by the U.S. 7th and French 1st Armies on April 24, was the Gothic cathedral with one of the tallest spires in Germany.







### U.S. THIRD ARMY ACROSS THE DANUBE

Troops of General Patton's U.S. 3rd Army crossed into Czechoslovakia on April 21, 1945, to capture the town of Asch, two miles inside the frontier. Five days later other units of the same army reached the Danube, and within 24 hours captured Regensburg (Ratisbon). 1. U.S. patrols comb Asch for snipers. 2. Tank of the U.S. 65th Infantry Division is ferried across the Danube. 3. Particularly troublesome snipers, captured near Regensburg, were forced to lie down, head on hands.

*Photos, U.S. Official; Associated Press*



towards Nuremberg. On its right the French were directed on Stuttgart and were responsible for clearing the Black Forest area.

Both armies encountered considerable resistance, and though the U.S. 7th Army had reached Würzburg by April 3 and was in touch with the French in Baden, sharp fighting continued for some days round

Würzburg, which was by-passed. Farther south, at Heilbronn on the Neckar, General Patch's forces fought a hard nine days' battle before they cleared the town on April 12. By the middle of the month, the right of the U.S. 3rd Army was driving southwards into northern Bavaria, and after capturing Coburg, former capital of the Grand Duchy of Saxe-Coburg-Gotha, on April 11, entered Bayreuth on April 14. Late in the evening of the 16th advanced troops of the U.S. 7th Army broke into Nuremberg. Nuremberg was bitterly defended by a garrison of 4,000 fanatical S.S. men, but the city, much damaged, was finally captured on April 20. The 7th Army then swung south into the Bavarian plain, racing towards Munich.

By this time the 3rd Army had spread along the north-west border of Czechoslovakia, and on April 21 captured the town of Asch, two miles inside the Czech frontier. The following day the French in the south, having completed the occupation of Stuttgart and Freiburg, reached the Swiss frontier north-west of Constance, cutting off all the Germans in the Black Forest area.

The whole of General Eisenhower's right wing was by now sweeping south-eastwards in the Danube valley in a line broken only by a few German

pockets. The armour of the U.S. 3rd Army in a rapid dash approached Regensburg (Ratisbon) on the Danube (April 23) and the following day, higher up the river, the 7th Army's 44th Infantry Division, with troops of the French 1st Army, captured Ulm, scene of one of Napoleon's most remarkable victories, leaving a German pocket at Gemund behind it.

The pace of the sweep continued to increase. On April 22 the U.S. 7th Army crossed the Danube at Dillingen; on the 26th, the U.S. 3rd Army cleared both Ingolstadt and Regensburg, the river port at which, for so long during the war, oil from Rumania had been delivered to Germany. On that day also, farther to the south-east, 3rd Army troops crossed the Austrian frontier. On April 28 the 7th Army captured Augsburg and next day entered Munich where all resistance ceased on April 30; the famous beer cellar where the Nazi movement was born being still recognizable. There was now little more to be done than to gain contact with the Russians in Austria and to close the back door on the German forces in Italy. The western frontier of Czechoslovakia had been sealed off, leaving the Germans there no hope of escape from the advancing Russians.

By May 1, U.S. 3rd Army armour in force had reached the river Inn on the

Austro-German frontier, and captured Passau at the confluence of that river with the Danube on May 3. Meanwhile, higher up the river the 7th Army, driving south and south-east from Munich, occupied Innsbruck and Salzburg on May 4. It was something of an anticlimax to encounter no fanatical resistance at the dead Fuehrer's stronghold of Berchtesgaden, near Salzburg in Austria.

The surrender of the Germans in Italy on April 29 (see page 3717) and in north-west Germany on May 4 (see page 3666) proved infectious, and everywhere German

#### German Willingness to Surrender

senior commanders showed willingness to abandon the struggle. Nevertheless, it was necessary to press on in order to prevent fanatical groups forming in the inaccessible mountain regions, and to round up wanted individuals who might be trying to escape into neutral countries. From Innsbruck a column of the U.S. 7th Army drove on into the Brenner Pass till it made contact with the 5th Army coming up





#### SAIPAN—WHENCE U.S. HEAVY BOMBERS SET OUT FOR JAPAN

The capture of the Mariana Islands (see page 3264), between June 15 and August 10, 1944, marked an important development in the air war in the Pacific by bringing the Japanese mainland within bombing distance for Pacific-based Super-Fortresses (see maps in pages 3274 and 3490). The round trip to Tokyo and back was under 3,000 miles, and the first bombing mission left Saipan for the enemy capital on November 24, 1944. Here, B-29 Super-Fortresses are parked, each in its own bay, on a vast airfield constructed on Saipan

*Photo, New York Times Photos*





### U.S. TROOPS SEIZE HOME OF NAZISM

When U.S. 7th Army units entered Munich, the capital of Bavaria, on April 29, 1945, they found it heavily damaged by Allied bombers. Above, released British prisoners chat with the U.S. guard outside the famous Beer Cellar, birthplace of the Nazi party (see also page 1807). Right, wreckage of the Victory Arch in the Ludwigstrasse.

*Photos, Keystone*



### BERCHTESGADEN IN ALLIED HANDS

Formations of General Patch's U.S. 7th Army which captured Berchtesgaden on May 4, 1945, found Hitler's mountain retreat still smoking from the effects of the R.A.F. raid of April 25. Here, American and French troops inspect the grounds of the badly damaged house in which the Fuehrer, gazing out on the snow-capped Bavarian Alps, had planned world-conquest.

from the south (see illus. in page 3718). The 3rd Army also continued its advance down the Danube, entering Linz on May 5. On that day the enemy's Army Group G, commanded by General Schulz and comprising all German forces in Austria and Bavaria, surrendered unconditionally to General Devers, whose 6th Army Group thus brought its immensely long advance from the south coast of France to a triumphant conclusion: since August 15, 1944, it had advanced an average of more than three miles a day.

The surrender on May 4 of the armies facing Field-Marshal Montgomery was followed less than three days later by a general unconditional

#### Germany Surrenders to the Allies

Very early on May 7 Colonel-General Gustav Jodl (Chief of Staff of the German Army), General-Admiral Hans Georg von Friedeburg (C.-in-C. of the German Navy), and Major Wilhelm Oxenius (A.D.C. to Jodl) reached the school-house at Rheims which for the past three months had been General Eisenhower's G.H.Q. They were offered the surrender terms





1

# GERMAN SURRENDER IN THE WAR ROOM AT RHEIMS

1. The ceremony at Rheims, May 7, 1945 (see page 3802) : left to right, facing the Germans, Lt.-General Sir Frederick Morgan (British Army) ; General François Savez, French Deputy Chief of Staff for National Defence ; Admiral Sir Harold Burrough (Royal Navy) ; Lt. Gen. W. Bedell Smith, Chief of Staff to General Eisenhower ; Major-General Ivan Souslaparov, head of the Russian Military Mission in France ; General Carl Spaatz, Commanding General, U.S. Strategic Air Forces in Europe ; and Air-Marshal Sir J. M. Robb. 2. The German delegates : left to right, Major Wilhelm Oxenius, A.D.C. to Jodl ; Colonel-General Gustav Jodl, Army Chief of Staff ; and General-Admiral Hans Georg von Friedeburg, Navy C.-in-C. 3. General Eisenhower about to address his staff. On his left is Air Chief Marshal Sir Arthur Tedder.

*Photos, U.S. Official; British Newspaper Pool; Keystone*



2



3





### NUREMBERG FALLS TO THE U.S. SEVENTH ARMY

Nuremberg, medieval city of Bavaria and scene of spectacular Nazi Party rallies, fell on April 20, 1945, to American troops after four days' bitter fighting. On April 16, the 3rd and 45th Infantry Divisions of General Patch's U.S. 7th Army broke into the city from four directions. Particularly stiff resistance was put up by some 4,000 S.S. troops. Above, U.S. armour, watched by children, probes the ruins of the old inner city. Below, the desolate Zeppelin Stadium from whose tiered rostrum Hitler had formerly harangued his Party and the world.

*Photos. Keystone*







#### U.S. ARMIES TAKE 325,000 PRISONERS IN RUHR 'POCKET'

The Ruhr was encircled on April 1, 1945, when the U.S. 1st and 9th Armies made contact near Lippstadt. Field-Marshal Model tried to strike out from Hamm in the north and from Siegen in the south, but enemy attempts to break through the Americans were everywhere forced back. On April 14 the 'pocket' was split at Hagen, and two days later the eastern half collapsed, 80,000 prisoners being taken in 24 hours. Prisoners taken by American troops during their 18-days' liquidation of the Ruhr 'pocket' totalled 325,000, including 30 generals. Here, near Gummersbach, an industrial centre east of Cologne, are some of 82,000 prisoners captured by the XVIII Airborne Corps of the U.S. 9th Army

*Photo, U.S. Official*





in writing: these called for the unconditional surrender of all German land, sea, and air forces to the Allied Expeditionary Force and the Soviet High Command, all such German forces to remain where they were until otherwise ordered. They answered "yes" when asked if they understood the terms; and at 2:41 a.m. on May 7 Germany's unconditional surrender was signed by Colonel-General Jodl on behalf of Germany, by General Bedell Smith (Chief of Staff to General Eisenhower) on behalf of the Allied Supreme Command, by General Souslaparov for the Soviet Union, and by General Savez for France.

#### LAST BATTLEFIELDS IN CENTRAL EUROPE

This map shows the area covered in the final stages of the war in Europe by the Allied Sixth and Twelfth Army Groups, ending with the linking of American and Russian forces at Torgau and at Prague, of Americans of the 7th Army and Americans of the 5th at the Brenner Pass.

In Czechoslovakia the Germans under Field-Marshal Schörner continued to offer stubborn resistance to the Russians (see page 3626). Moreover the Czech liberation forces, which had succeeded in gaining control of Prague, were in considerable danger. The U.S. 3rd Army, therefore, advancing probably farther than had been originally intended, entered Pilsen, second largest city in Bohemia, on May 6, and pushed

on towards Prague, entered by a small number of Americans as well as by Russian tanks on May 10. General Patton's advance and rapid movements, which had sealed off the western side of Czechoslovakia, helped greatly to convince Schörner that it was useless to continue the attempt he at first made to prolong resistance, even after Doenitz had given the order for unconditional surrender. The massive drive of General





Eisenhower's right wing through Bavaria into Austria, coupled with the victory of Alexander's armies in Italy, must have convinced all Germans that the idea of holding out in the Southern Redoubt must be abandoned.

As on Eisenhower's northern front the decisive battle had been fought between the Rhine and Maas, so also on his southern and centre fronts the really decisive battle was fought west of the Rhine in the Saar. It is true that the encirclement of the Ruhr and the liquidation of Army Group B within it

had decisive effects, for it eliminated the last source from which the enemy could draw warlike supplies. The half-hearted and patchy resistance offered in the Ruhr once it was encircled hardly, however, deserves to rank as a decisive battle. That in no wise diminishes the credit due to the American armies for

brilliant and rapid exploitation of unforeseen footholds across the Rhine. The use made of the somewhat unpromising bridge-head at Remagen was masterly: it was the main factor in securing the encirclement of the Ruhr.

Tribute must also be paid to the energy, initiative and speed displayed by subordinate commanders and troops, and by the Service of Supply in dealing with unexpected situations. On no occasion were the armies so surprised by unexpected success as to be unready, as sometimes happens, to seize the opportunity. But perhaps what showed best how highly skilled and efficient the American armies had become was the rapid sorting out of the tangled situation in the Saar and the direction of the armies to their new objectives. Those who can recall the confusion and congestion that occurred when General Pershing's armies in 1918 were launched in their final offensive into the Argonne can hardly fail to note the contrast and to realize how essential it is to give rapidly organized armies opportunities of acquiring experience and training under active service conditions before they are called on for a decisive effort.

Those who argue that the war might have been won in 1944 seem apt to ignore the dangers of premature attempts. The experience gained in Tunisia, Sicily and Italy and in Normandy, apart from the vast extent of material preparations necessary for reopening and expanding the western front, was needed to turn the American armies into the magnificent war machine they became. Those gallant armies might have failed through lack of experience if their initial test had been too severe, and the cost and loss of time in retrieving early failure cannot be estimated.

## SURRENDER IN BAVARIA AND AUSTRIA

On May 5, 1945, the German Army Group G, comprising the 1st and 19th Armies, surrendered near Haar to General Jacob L. Devers, commanding the 6th Army Group, seen (right centre) explaining the terms to the Germans on his left. At Innsbruck that day (left), Major-General Edward H. Brooks (at head of table), commanding the VI Corps, U.S. 7th Army, accepted the surrender of the 19th Army from Lieutenant-General Erich Brandenberger (back to camera).

## DOCUMENT THE GERMANS SIGNED AT RHEIMS

These two pages of typescript formed the main surrender document signed at Rheims on May 7, 1945. The brief instrument was signed by Colonel-General Gustav Jodl (for the Germans), Lieut.-General W. Bedell Smith (on behalf of General Eisenhower), General Ivan Souslaparov (for the Soviet High Command), and Major-General Savez (French Army).

### ACT OF MILITARY SURRENDER

1. We the undersigned, acting by authority of the German High Command, hereby surrender unconditionally to the Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force and simultaneously to the Soviet High Command all forces on land, sea, and in the air who are at this date under German control.

2. The German High Command will at once issue orders to all German military, naval and air authorities and to all forces under German control to cease active operations at 2300 hours Central European time on 8 May and to remain in the positions occupied at that time. No ship, vessel, or aircraft is to be scuttled, or any damage done to their hull, machinery or equipment.

3. The German High Command will at once issue to the appropriate commanders, and ensure the carrying out of any further orders issued by the Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force and by the Soviet High Command.

4. This act of military surrender is without prejudice to, and will be superseded by any general instrument of surrender imposed by, or on behalf of the United Nations and applicable to GERMANY and the German armed forces as a whole.

5. In the event of the German High Command or any of the forces under their control failing to act in accordance with this Act of Surrender, the Supreme Commander, Allied Expeditionary Force and the Soviet High Command will take such punitive or other action as they deem appropriate.

Signed at Rheims 70241 on the 7<sup>th</sup> day of May, 1945.  
France

On behalf of the German High Command,

*Jodl*

### IN THE PRESENCE OF

On behalf of the Supreme Commander,  
Allied Expeditionary Force.

*W. B. Smith*

On behalf of the Soviet  
High Command.

*Souslaparov*

*Savez*

Major General, French Army  
(Witness)



## *Diary of the War*

AUGUST 1945

**August 1.** Record force of 820 Marianas-based Super-Fortresses heavily bombed Hachioji, Mito, Nagaoka, and Toyama (Japan) after warning by leaflet; Kawasaki (Tokyo Bay) also attacked.

**August 2.** U.S. Liberators and Mustangs from Okinawa bombed Kagoshima and Fukuoka, attacked Kyushu airfields and set nitrogen factories ablaze at Marushima. The King received President Truman on board H.M.S. "Renown" in Plymouth Sound.

**August 3.** Admiral Nimitz announced that Super-Fortresses had mined every important Japanese harbour as well as all those from Korea to the Soviet frontier, thus achieving a "complete shipping blockade of the Japanese homeland."

**August 4.** General MacArthur, appointed C-in-C. of all Allied forces based on the Ryukyus, announced that these islands, with the Philippines, "form a great semi-circular base from which a mighty invasion force is being forged for the final conquest of Japan."

**August 5.** Over 400 U.S. aircraft from Okinawa heavily attacked Tarmuizu (S. Kyushu). Super-Fortresses dropped warning leaflets on 12 more Japanese towns. S.E.A.C. announced that over 10,000 Japanese had been killed or captured in Burma following the enemy's break-out from the Pegu Yoma. Melbourne announced the seizure of the "Tachibana Maru," Japanese so-called hospital-ship, carrying arms and troops.

**August 6.** First atomic bomb dropped, by a single Super-Fortress, causing unprecedented devastation at Hiroshima (Honshu); emergency meeting of Japanese cabinet called; four "warned" enemy cities bombed by Marianas-based Super-Fortresses. Australians in S.E. Borneo completely cleared Balikpapan Bay and coastal airstrips.

**August 7.** Super-Fortresses from the Marianas heavily attacked the Japanese naval arsenal of Toyakawa; Mijakonojo and Kagoshima (Kyushu) also bombed. Chinese captured Yéungkeong, coastal town 150 miles W. of Hongkong, isolating the Japanese forces on the Liuchow peninsula.

**August 8.** The U.S.S.R. formally declared war on Japan, hostilities to begin at midnight. Heavy Super-Fortress raids on Yawata, Fukuyama and Japanese industrial and military targets. Chinese forces captured Kukiang Island, last enemy foothold near the port of Foochow.

**August 9.** The Red Army at dawn attacked along a 1,000-mile front in Manchuria, crossed Amur and Ussuri rivers. At Nagasaki (W. coast of Kyushu) second atomic bomb dropped, obliterating the great port; Super-Fortresses dropped 3,000,000 leaflets on Japan calling for an end to the war before further atomic bombs were dropped.

**August 10.** Tokyo radio announced that the Japanese Government was prepared to accept the Allied peace terms as laid down at Potsdam, provided that the Emperor's sovereignty was maintained. Red Army made important gains

on all Manchurian sectors. British cruisers and destroyers with the U.S. 3rd Fleet, steaming inshore, bombarded Kamaishi, 90 miles N. of Sendai. Royal Netherlands Air Force attacked Tjilatjap, on the S. coast of Java.

**August 11.** Hostilities continued in Manchuria; Soviet bombers attacked railway targets and shipping in Korean ports. British and U.S. carrier aircraft heavily bombed Tokyo area.

**August 12.** Red Army advance continued in Manchuria; aided by Soviet Pacific Fleet, Russians captured enemy naval base of Rashin (Korea) and port of Yuki. Far Eastern Air Force heavily attacked Kyushu, including military base of Miyazaki.

**August 11-13.** British and U.S. carrier-aircraft destroyed 1,300 enemy planes in Kanto Plain round Tokyo. Allied naval force attacked Paramushiro and other targets in the Kuriles.

**August 13.** Rapid Russian advances in Manchuria included the capture of Halun-Arzhan, Sholun and Zamlinao. Moscow reported an advance by Marshal Malinovsky's troops of 200 miles in four days.

**August 14.** President Truman and Mr. Attlee announced Japan's unconditional surrender. Fighting continued in Manchuria, the Red Army shattering the entire network of Japanese communications in eastern Manchuria, capturing Korean port of Seishin, advancing into the southern (Japanese) section of Sakhalin. U.S.S.R. and China signed at Moscow a treaty of friendship and alliance. Pétain sentenced to death in Paris, the sentence being commuted to life-detention.

**August 15.** Russians announced continuation of Manchurian offensive, as enemy had given no "cease fire" order. In Burma, Lord Louis Mountbatten ordered the suspension of hostilities "so far as consistent with the safety of Allied forces."

**August 16.** Japanese in Manchuria launched a counter-offensive on all fronts; overcoming counter-attacks, troops of the 1st Far Eastern Army occupied Wanching; other Red Army forces captured Chiamussu on the Sungari river. In Burma, fighting continued in the Karen hills, where the Japanese were apparently unaware of the end of the war.

**August 17.** Russians in Manchuria took 20,000 prisoners; Wuli, Ninguta and Tumin occupied. In S.E. China, General Ku Chu-tung issued surrender instructions to the Japanese. U977, with a crew of 32, surrendered at Mar del Plata, in the Argentine.

**August 18.** Shigemitsu, the new Japanese Foreign Minister, broadcast to the Japanese people, openly admitting defeat and warning them against taking an over-optimistic view of the Potsdam declaration. Japanese in the Shanghai area liberated 6,000 British subjects. R.A.F. dropped over 500,000 leaflets in Burma calling on the enemy to lay down their arms; A.-A. fire met near Moulmein.

**August 19.** Japanese surrender envoys

arrived at General MacArthur's H.Q. at Manila. Japanese forces in S. China surrendered at Canton. Russians announced that resistance by the Kwantung army in Manchuria had ceased on most sectors.

**August 20.** Soviet Transbaikalian Army occupied Mukden (capital of Manchuria until 1932); 2nd Far Eastern Army took Harbin in central Manchuria; enemy resistance ceased in Karafuto (Japanese Sakhalin). Chinese High Command announced that Chinese troops were advancing virtually unopposed through Japanese-occupied China. Last Japanese at Tarakan surrendered to Australians.

**August 21.** Red Army, advancing unopposed through Manchuria, took 52,000 prisoners, including 4 generals of the Kwantung army. U.S. Navy statement announced that Japan had lost all but 49 of the 369 warships with which she entered the war.

**August 22.** Soviet airborne troops landed at Port Arthur and nearby port of Dairen, disarmed garrisons; Red Army units landed in Kurile Islands and received Japanese surrender.

**August 23.** Stalin announced the occupation of all Manchuria, S. Sakhalin, and the Kurile Islands. Japanese declared that nearly ten million people had suffered—death, wounds or destruction of homes—in Allied air raids.

**August 24.** Soviet High Command announced that the 1st Far Eastern Army was advancing along the E. coast of Korea, having captured Kanto, and that in Manchuria another 14,000 Japanese had been taken prisoner. The Chinese Government ratified the United Nations Charter.

**August 25.** Chinese High Command announced that Chinese troops, having crossed the Yangtse, had entered Nanking.

**August 26.** Japanese envoys arrived at Rangoon from Saigon. Chinese troops entered Shanghai and advanced rapidly through the whole of China; Chinese communist troops captured the Boca Tigris forts controlling Pearl river approaches to Canton.

**August 27.** British, U.S., Dominions and Dutch warships anchored in Sagami Bay, near Tokyo.

**August 28.** Preliminary arrangements for enemy's surrender in the S.E.A.C. theatre signed at Rangoon by Lt.-Gen. F. A. M. Browning and Lt.-Gen. Numata. Russians completed occupation of Japanese Sakhalin.

**August 29.** Troops of the U.S. 11th Airborne Division landed at Atsugi airfield, near Tokyo; Allied warships entered Tokyo Bay. Russians announced the capture of a total of 513,000 prisoners (including 81 generals) in Manchuria.

**August 30.** U.S. troops entered Yokohama, where General MacArthur set up his H.Q.; Yokosuka naval base formally surrendered to General Clement, U.S. Army. British naval force entered Hongkong harbour.

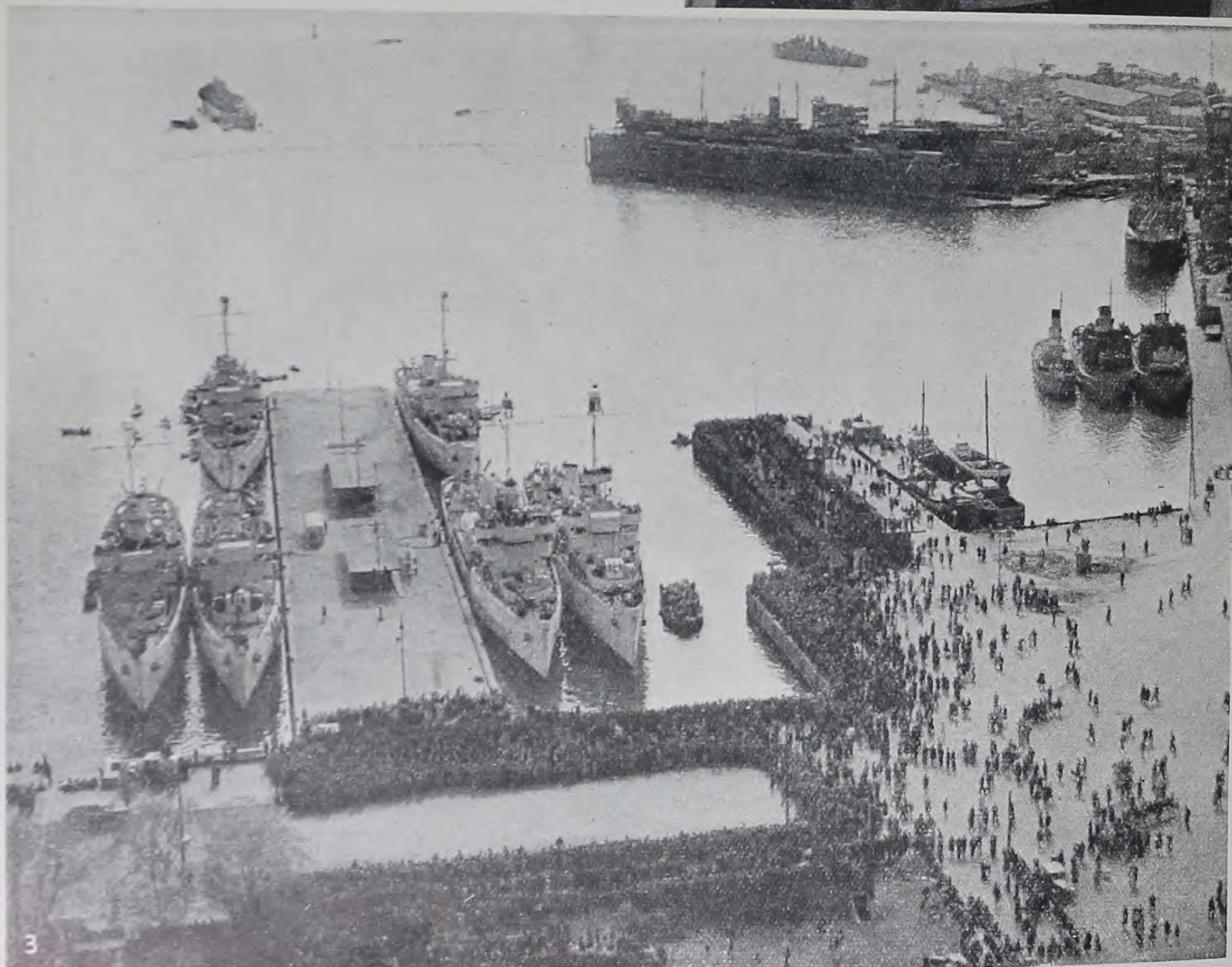
**August 31.** U.S. 8th Army troops completed occupation of Yokohama; British Marines went ashore at Yokosuka to take over a section of the naval base.





### BRITISH TROOPS IN NORWAY AGAIN

On May 11, 1945, some 300 British and Norwegian troops, including men of the British 1st Airborne Division, which fought at Arnhem (see Chapter 325), arrived by air in Norway, flown in aircraft of R.A.F. Transport Command. They formed the vanguard of the Allied forces of liberation whose task was to take over from the 400,000 Germans still in occupation. 1. Supplies being unloaded from a Halifax at Gardermoen airfield, near Oslo. 2. British airborne men being welcomed on entering the capital by lorry to take part in a triumphal procession. 3. Crowds throng the quayside at Oslo to greet units of the Royal Navy after the liberation. *Photos, British Official ; Keystone*





# ALLIES LIBERATE NORWAY AND DENMARK

*Northern Norway was freed by the Russians during 1944 (see Chapter 316), but the rest of the country remained, like Denmark, under German occupation until the capitulation of Germany's armed forces in north-west Germany on May 4. In this chapter, Mr. O. F. Knudsen, of the Royal Norwegian Embassy in London, and Mr. Elias Bredsdorff, of University College, London, tell the history of their respective countries during 1945*

THE passive warfare waged throughout the early years of the German occupation of Norway came to an end in the autumn of 1944 when the Red Army entered north Norway, driving before them some eight divisions of German troops defeated in Finland (see page 3203). From

**NORWAY** that time the Germans attempted to extricate all the troops they could spare from Norway in order to send them to the hard-pressed fronts in Germany. The struggle inside Norway took on increasingly the character of a military conflict. The Norwegian Forces of the Interior, co-operating with the Allied Air Forces and Navies, set themselves to disrupt all communications throughout Norway. Organized sabotage groups, with the help of parachutists and arms and ammunition dropped from the air, conducted a carefully planned offensive against all means of German communication—railways, harbours, shipping, petrol storage dumps, etc.

Norwegian parachutists from Britain cut the three railway lines linking north Norway with south, and in the night of March 14–15 a Norwegian Commando unit trained in Britain, acting in co-operation with the Forces of the Interior, cut every railway line connecting Oslo with the German disembarkation ports in south Norway. On February 8, men of another Norwegian Commando unit seized thirteen tugs at Fredrikstad in daylight and sailed eleven of them to Sweden (two had to be scuttled for lack of fuel), capturing the salvage vessel "Uredd" on the way. Ships were blown up in Oslo and other ports. German shipping trying to evacuate troops by sea was subject to constant attack (see page 3498).

The disruption of communications brought about an increasing food shortage throughout the country. In addition, the German forces in Norway—amounting to about a tenth of the total population—were thrown back entirely on the country's internal food supplies. The Norwegian people were approaching starvation. Grain and potato supplies were critically low, and even fish was scarce.

German terrorism increased. On February 9 and 10, 34 hostages were shot following the assassination on February 8 of Major-General Karl Martinsen, head of Quisling's Security Police. They included lawyers, doctors, professors and business men, and were executed for "murder and sabotage," "secret Communist organization," and aiding refugees. On March 16, 14 other patriots were shot. R.A.F. Mosquitoes attacked the Gestapo headquarters in Oslo on December 31, 1944 (previously bombed on September 25, 1942—see illus. in page 2176—and since repaired), and early in 1945 the Germans transferred 30 hostages to cells in the Gestapo building, presumably in the hope that their presence might prevent further attacks. Among these hostages was Einar Gerhardsen, chairman of the Labour Party.

Although the Germans were evacuating troops from Norway, they seemed to have no intention of abandoning the country without a struggle. It had a high strategic value and was well suited for a last desperate stand. The German naval bases strung out along the west

coast from Alta Fjord to Bergen sheltered some 300 U-boats, used against the Atlantic sea routes and the Murmansk convoys. Norway, together with Denmark, offered a protection for Germany's northern flank and blocked the Baltic.

A large part of the 50,000 German Navy men in Norway were helping to man the 300 coastal batteries which lay between Lyngen Fjord in the north and the Swedish frontier in the south. The Luftwaffe, too, had about 50,000 men in Norway, and was constantly improving the airfields. German aircraft in Norway numbered 300–400, mostly fighters. The German troops in Norway—they numbered a quarter of a million or more—included several élite units, particularly the Alpine Divisions. About 30,000 men were concentrated in the Narvik area, where the Germans seemed intent on establishing their line against the slowly advancing Russians and Norwegians. The S.S. Lieutenant-General Rediess, Chief of the German Gestapo in Norway, had

**German  
Occupation  
Forces**



**FOOD FOR DEVASTATED FINNMARK**

Distribution of relief among the people of Finnmark, Norway's northernmost province, 70,000 of whom had been left homeless by the Germans in 1944 (see page 3203), provided a serious problem for the Russian and Norwegian liberating forces early in 1945. Here, food is distributed by inhabitants dressed in heavily padded traditional costume dating back to the 17th century.

*Photo, Norwegian Official*





### KING HAAKON AND PRINCE OLAV AT OSLO

On June 7, 1945, after exactly five years in exile, King Haakon returned to Norway, sailing from England in the cruiser H.M.S. 'Norfolk.' Accompanied here by the Crown Princess Martha, who had shared his exile in Britain, the King drives through cheering crowds in Oslo, the capital. Right, Crown Prince Olav, C.-in-C., Norwegian Forces, takes the salute on Oslo quayside on arriving on board the cruiser H.M.S. 'Devonshire' on May 13.

4-5,000 police troops under his command, and there were also about 6,000 men in Norwegian armed quisling units.

Norwegians were alarmed at the prospect of the Germans' making a last stand in Norway: it was feared that the remainder of the country would be ruined as Finnmark had been (*see page 3203*), and that the economic destruction of Norway would be virtually irreparable. The Norwegian Army in Britain was a small body of specialist troops, and the Norwegian Home Front was already doing all it could against extremely heavy odds. It looked as though substantial Allied help would be needed to overcome the German forces which the Norwegians were doing

their best to bottle up in Norway, despite the prospect that this might prolong the war there.

The situation changed radically, however, upon the collapse of the German forces in Germany. The German Commander-in-Chief in Norway, General Böhme, broadcast to his troops at 10.15 p.m. on Monday, May 7: "From the Supreme Command has come the news that all military operations are to

cease." Urging his troops to maintain discipline and order, he said: "Of you, my comrades, I expect an exemplary attitude that will compel the respect of our enemies." He went on to say: "We expect the Norwegian people to show the same discipline as the German soldier has shown to the Norwegians in Norway."

The Norwegian people did, in fact, show remarkable self-control. In the critical days just before the German capitulation, the Home Front Leaders issued directions instructing the people to ignore rumours, abstain from demonstrations and do nothing to provoke the enemy. Many directives to the

### NAZI TROOPS LEAVE NORWAY

Before being sent home to Germany, enemy troops in Norway were subjected to a rigid 'screening.' Hoping to evade Allied justice, many S.S. men had disguised themselves as ordinary members of the Wehrmacht. First Germans to leave Norway in mid-July 1945 here go on board a transport at Mandal whence they sailed for Lübeck. Left, German soldier comes up for identification before being allowed to embark. He is being closely watched by Norwegians in the foreground.

*Photos, Associated Press; Central Press; British Official; Planet News*





same effect were issued by the Norwegian Government and High Command in London. These directives the Norwegian people followed, and as a result the process of liberation was effected smoothly and happily.

Home Front forces took charge of the Government buildings, the Gestapo headquarters, and other strategic points

**Home Front** in the capital. The  
**Leaders** Norwegian Government  
**Take Control** in London authorized  
the Home Front Leaders

to maintain law and order on its behalf. Special temporary officials were appointed from the ranks of the Home Front to assist in eight Government Departments. Vidkun Quisling, with several of his "ministers," surrendered voluntarily on May 10. He was imprisoned in the former Gestapo prison in the Möllergatan in Oslo where many patriots had suffered torture and death. The German Reichs Commissioner Terboven and the Gestapo chief Rediess committed suicide.

On May 8 an Allied Military Delegation arrived by air in Oslo and proceeded immediately to the German Military Headquarters at Lillehammer to settle the formalities of surrender. On May 10 transport planes brought advance units of the Allied Liberation Forces, consisting of nearly 3,000 men of the British 1st Airborne Division and 140 Norwegians, to begin the disarming of the German occupation forces. The immensity of this task was made clear in the words of Crown Prince Olav, Norwegian Commander-in-Chief. "Every fourth male adult in the country is an enemy," he said in an

### QUISLING ON TRIAL

Most notorious of all collaborators, Vidkun Quisling, leader of the Norwegian Nazi Party, came up for trial at Oslo on August 20, 1945, three months after his surrender to the Home Front. Violently protesting his innocence, he was found guilty on September 10 and executed by a firing squad on October 24.

Here he listens to his defence counsel.

*Photos, Associated Press*



### NORWAY'S NEW PARLIAMENT MEETS

At the Norwegian elections on October 8, 1945, the Labour Party secured a victory over all other parties combined. On November 1, Mr. Einar Gerhardsen (below), 48-year old Labour leader, resistance organizer and Prime Minister in the Coalition Government formed in the previous June, became Prime Minister of a new Labour Government. Above, King Haakon reads his speech at the opening of the new Parliament. On his left is Prince Olav.

Order of the Day. Crown Prince Olav arrived in Oslo on May 13 on board the cruiser H.M.S. "Devonshire," together with five members of the Norwegian Government from London. The remaining members of the Government, including the Prime Minister, Johan Nygaardsvold, arrived on May 31. They were received by Paal Berg, head of the Norwegian Resistance organization, who emphasized that no differences divided the Home Front and the Government.

King Haakon himself returned on board the cruiser H.M.S. "Norfolk," re-entering his capital on June 7, 1945, on the fifth anniversary of his departure in 1940 and the fortieth anniversary of Norway's restoration as an independent kingdom in 1905. Immense enthusiasm marked the return of both the King and the Government. In accordance with a pledge given in January 1945, Johan Nygaardsvold tendered the resignation of himself and his Cabinet to King Haakon on June 12. At the King's invitation, Einar Gerhardsen, Labour Party Chairman and Mayor of Oslo, who had spent three years in Oranienburg Concentration Camp, formed a new national coalition Government con-



sisting of six Labour, two Communist, two Conservative, one Liberal, one Agrarian and three non-party members. The Storting met for the first time since 1940 on June 14.

The arrest of traitors proceeded smoothly: by June 12, 15,924—about half the membership of Quisling's Nasjonal Samling (*see* page 2719) were in gaol. The trial of Quisling began on August 20. He pleaded "not guilty"





### BRITISH FAREWELL PARADE IN NORWAY

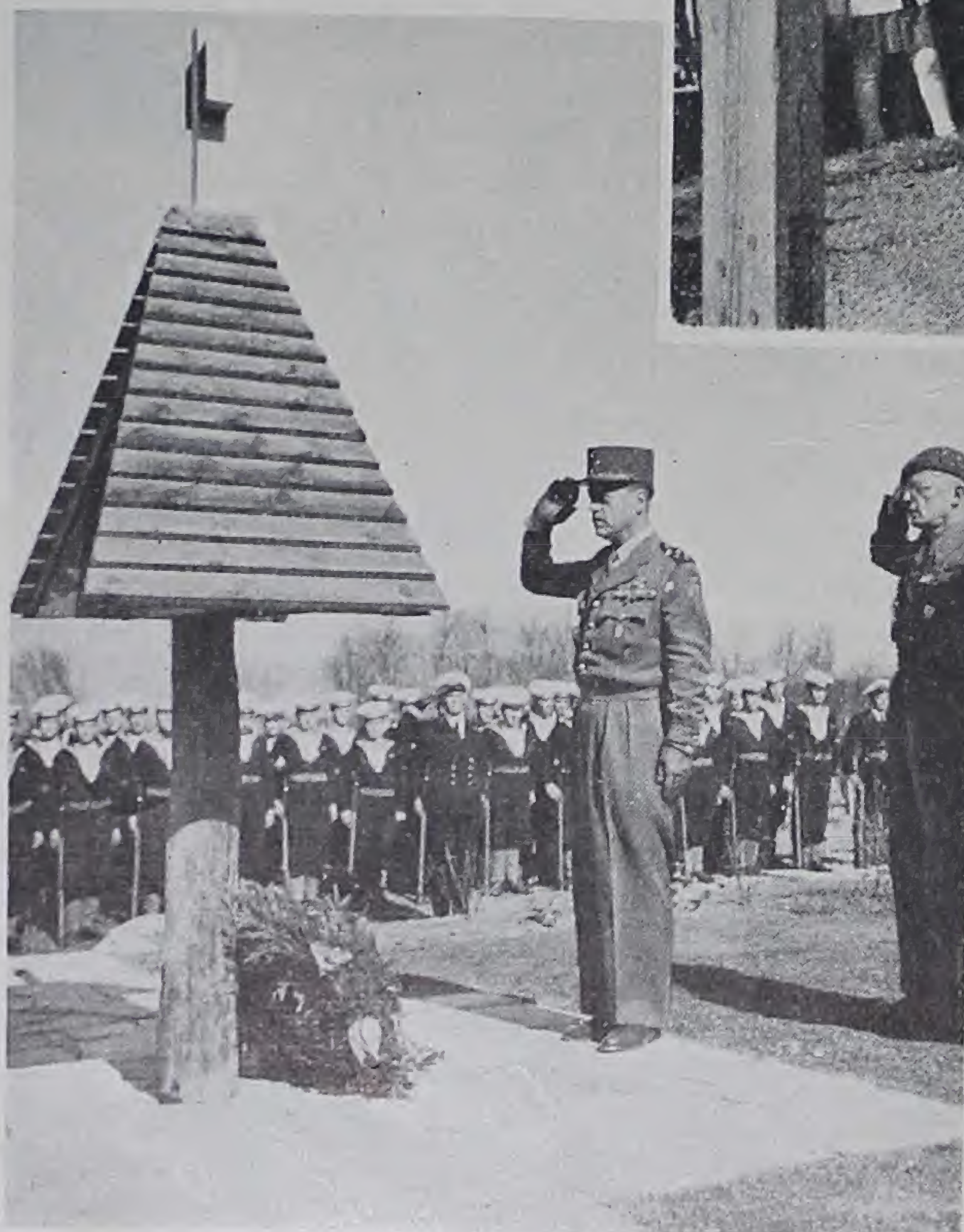
In the grounds of the royal palace, Oslo, on December 18, 1945, King Haakon inspected a farewell parade of some 2,000 British troops whom he thanked for the part they had played in liberating his country. They included a composite Guards battalion, the Royal Artillery, R.A.S.C., East Yorkshires and Green Howards. The King was accompanied during the inspection by General Graham, C.-in-C., British forces in Norway.

*Photo, Associated Press*

to charges ranging from high treason and abetment of murder to embezzlement. After much valuable information had come to light, he was found guilty and sentenced to death on September 10. After an unsuccessful appeal to the Supreme Court, he was executed by a firing squad on October 24. (The death penalty, hitherto unknown in Norway, had been provided for treason and other grave crimes by two decrees issued on October 3, 1941 and January 22, 1942 by the Norwegian Government in London.) Several of Quisling's ministers were subsequently tried and condemned, some to death, others to terms of imprisonment and loss of civil rights.

Supplies of food and other essential commodities arrived in sufficient quantities and at a satisfactory rate. The value of imports rose from 116,000,000 kroner (just under £6,000,000) in June to 149,000,000 kroner (just over £7,000,000) in October. The food position improved rapidly, although the clothing situation remained difficult. Unemployment, which had been feared, did not occur—indeed there was a shortage of labour in particular trades. After the calling in of banknotes on September 8 the German-created inflation was checked and production

and labour-effort began to increase. To co-ordinate industrial effort, an Economic Co-ordinating Council was established in July under the chairmanship of the Prime Minister. Home industry made more rapid recovery than the export trade. In the first six months



### NARVIK REMEMBERED

Allied representatives on May 28-29, 1946, commemorated in Norway the 6th anniversary of the Battle of Narvik (see pages 808-816). Here British naval officers pay tribute at the grave of Captain B. A. W. Warburton-Lee, V.C., of the destroyer 'Hardy.' Admiral Sir William Whitworth is in the centre. Left, General M. E. B  thouart, who commanded the French forces at Narvik, salutes the British memorial in graveyard there.

withdrawn by September 28, and the last British forces had left before the end of the year.

Norway went to the polls on October 8—the first General Election in any liberated country. The Labour Party—already the largest party—increased its representation to 76 out of a total of 150 seats in the new Parliament, thus

after the liberation, goods to a value of only 106,000,000 kroner (approximately £5,000,000) were exported. To co-ordinate and promote Norwegian exports, an Export Council was set up in November. A number of commercial and financial agreements were concluded with European countries, most important being the Anglo-Norwegian Financial Agreement signed on November 8, which fixed the rate of exchange at 20 kroner to the £1, and authorized the free use of Norwegian sterling balances, to which no limit was set, within the sterling area, Norway giving reciprocal rights to Britain.

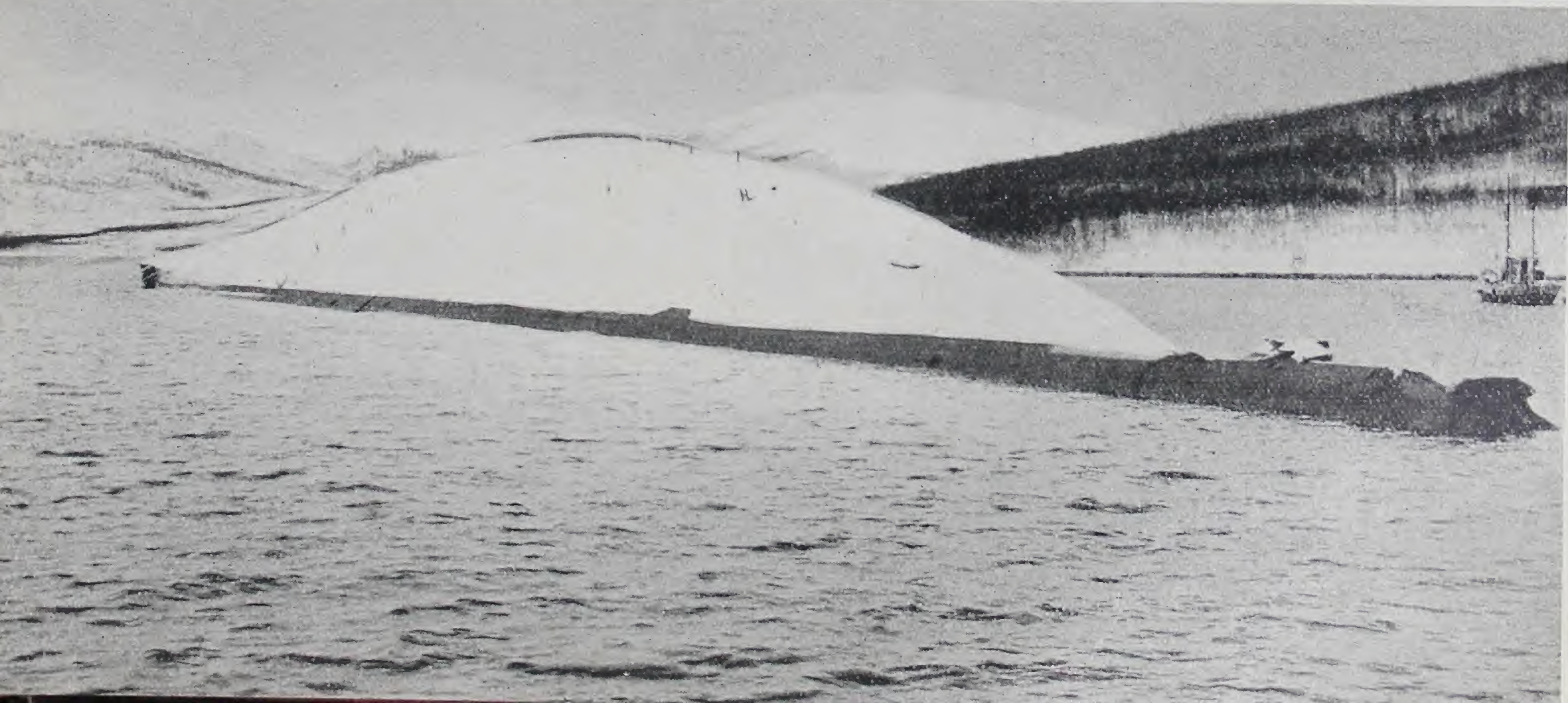
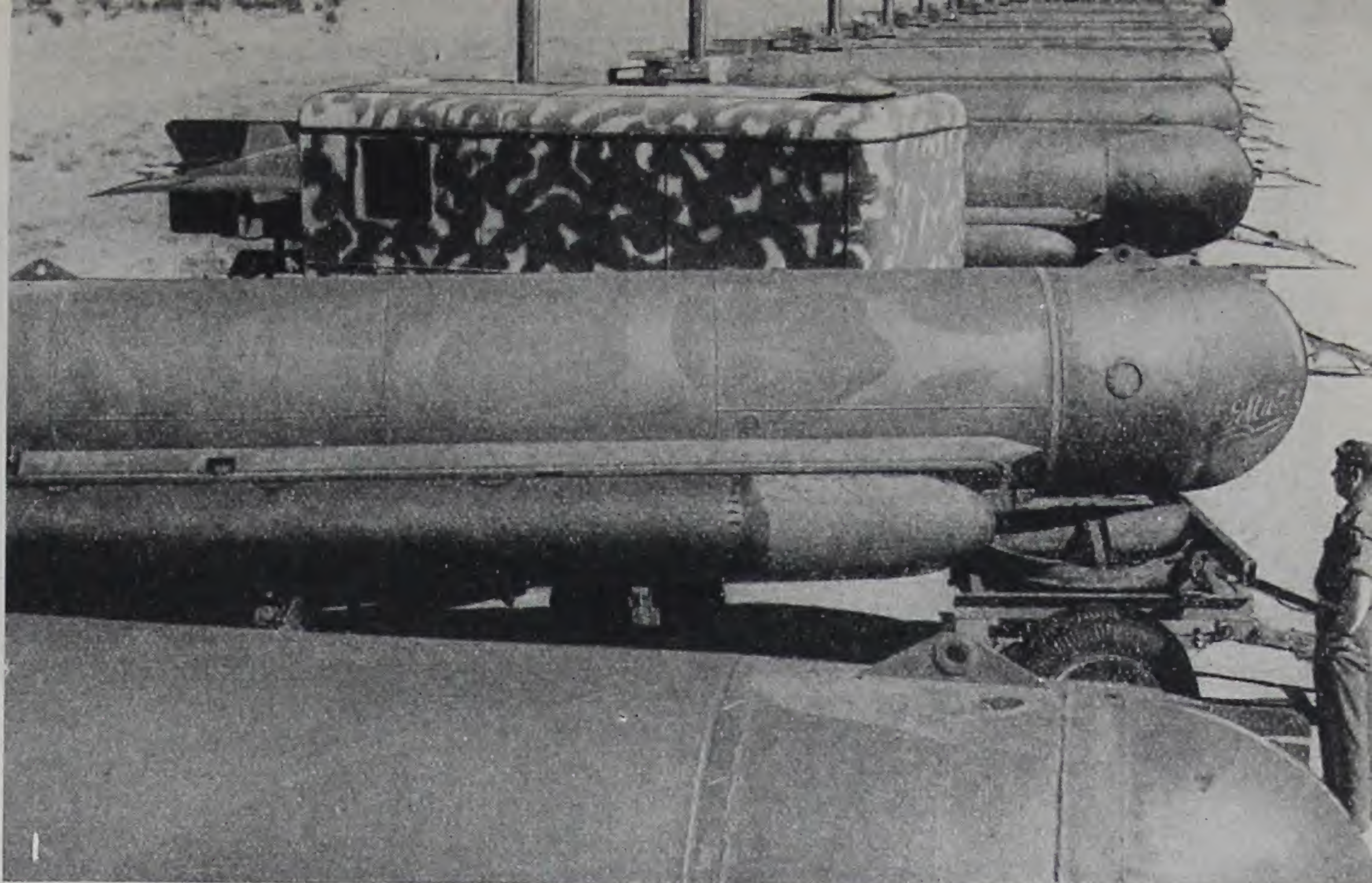
The Norwegian forces, together with the British, American and Russian forces in Norway, had by September 19 evacuated some 225,000 Germans and repatriated the 46,000 Russian prisoners-of-war in Norway. All Soviet forces stationed in northern Norway were



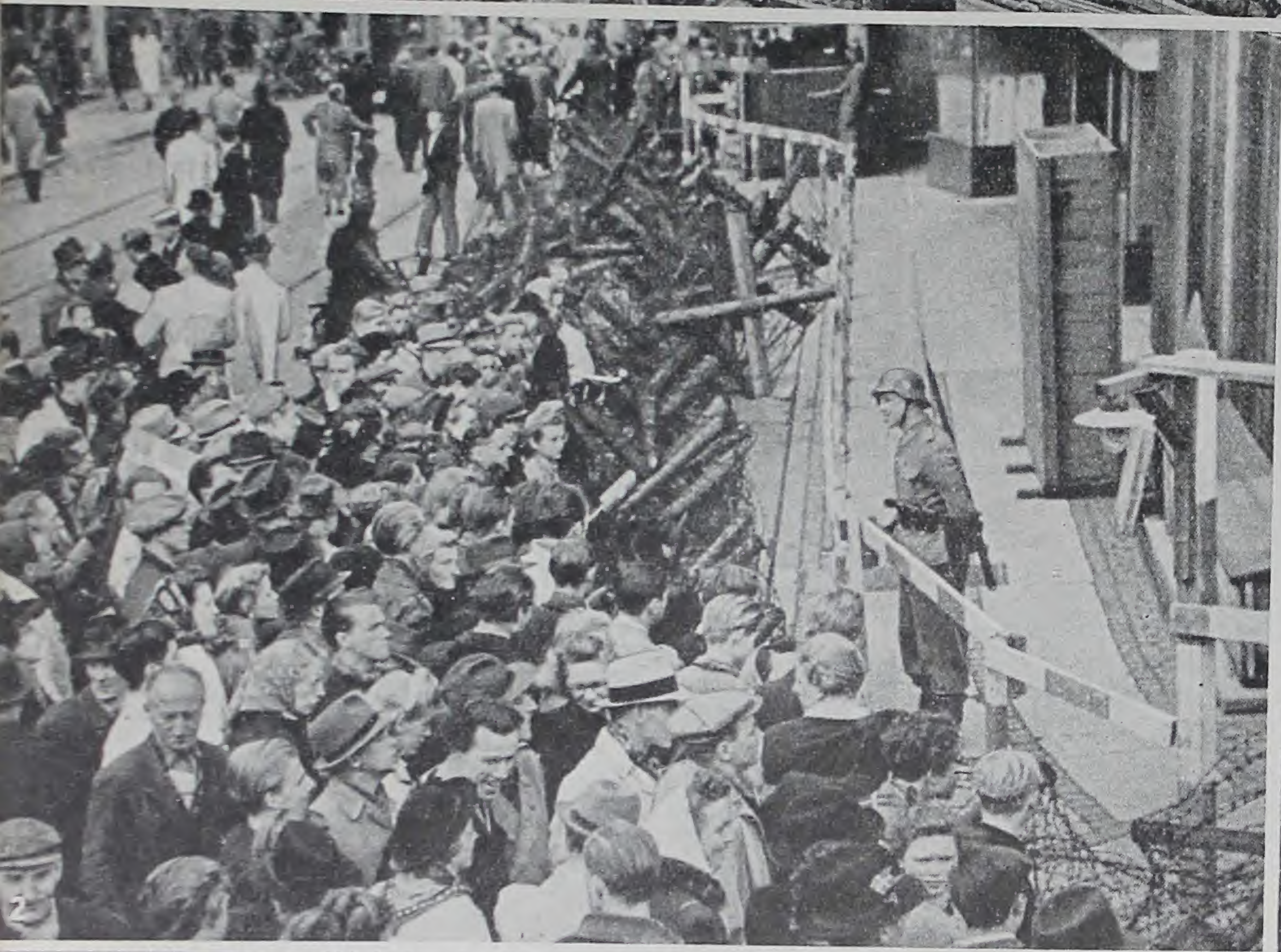


## GERMAN WAR GEAR LEFT IN NORWAY

Allied forces began to arrive in Norway by air on May 9, 1945. From the 350,000 armed Germans there men of the British 1st Airborne Division collected vast quantities of war material. 1. One-man submarines lined up on trailers on a Norwegian beach. 2. Stacks of German rifles being checked. 3. Germans assist a R.A.F. sergeant to make an inventory of spare parts at Kjeller aerodrome, near Oslo. 4. Snow covers the 700-foot keel of the 45,000-ton German battleship 'Tirpitz' in Tromsø Fjord, her resting-place since R.A.F. Lancasters sank her with 12,000-lb. bombs on November 12, 1944.







#### DENMARK FREE AGAIN

With the surrender of the Germans to Field-Marshal Montgomery at Lüneburg on May 4, 1945, Denmark was free. Next day there arrived in Copenhagen men of the British 6th Airborne Division, followed by armoured detachments from north Germany. 1. R.A.F. Dakotas fly over the capital with a S.H.A.E.F. mission. 2. Crowds watch a German sentry on guard as Copenhagen is freed. 3. Resistance forces drive off with a suspected collaborator. 4. Parade of the Swedish-trained Danish Brigade





securing an over-all majority. The Communist and Christian Popular Parties made considerable progress, the first winning eleven (against none previously) and the second eight (against 2). The right-wing parties—Conservative, Liberal and Agrarian—suffered a setback. The Coalition Government resigned on November 1 and Einar Gerhardsen formed a Labour Cabinet in which Trygve Lie was Foreign Minister.

At the opening of Parliament on December 11, King Haakon emphasized the difficult tasks of reconstruction facing the country. The

#### Norway's Reparations Claim

immensity of these tasks can be gauged from the fact that Norway's reparations claim against Germany amounted to 21,000,000,000 kroner—about £1,000,000,000. Biggest item was the direct cost of the German occupation—12,000,000,000 kroner. In Finnmark Province, where German devastation was total, 12,000 houses and 500 business premises were destroyed in a region of 70,000 inhabitants. It was estimated that the rebuilding of Finnmark would cost 560,000,000 kroner and require 12,000,000 man-days. In the whole of Norway, 100,000 new houses were estimated to be needed.

The Norwegian Parliament ratified the San Francisco Charter on November 14.

This most notable year in Norwegian history also included, on November 27, the celebration of King Haakon's

fortieth anniversary as Norway's elected monarch.

As a revenge against the frequent acts of sabotage and the preparations for the formation of a Secret Danish Army, the Germans,

**DENMARK** and the Hilfspolizei (see page 3201) under their wing, increased their counter-sabotage in 1945. Private houses, newspaper buildings, theatres, and overcrowded passenger-trains were blasted by the Germans, and every week saw new German murders of outstanding Danish personalities, physicians, teachers, clergymen, business men, and others.

On February 19, following the murder by patriots of a notorious local informer at Odense, Hilfspolizei men cordoned off Odense district hospital, murdering four resident doctors, and placed high explosive bombs at fifteen buildings in different parts of the town. The greater part of the main street was reduced to ruins, three of the town's four newspaper offices were wrecked, scores of families were made homeless. An express train from Aalborg to Copenhagen, containing only Danish civilians, was wrecked on February 24, killing ten, injuring 36. Robert Christensen, Chief Engineer of the biggest shipyard in Copenhagen, was murdered in his home by Hilfspolizei men on April 20.

Yet Danish sabotage did not stop, its most important achievement in 1945 being the complete wrecking of the industrial centre "Torotor," which

was working for the German war machine. Danish acts of sabotage, it was announced in Copenhagen in February 1946, totalled 2,671—ten in 1940, 19 in 1941, 122 in 1942, 969 in 1943, 867 in 1944, 684 in 1945 (that is to say, up to May 5). The largest number in any one month was 222 in April 1945. Of the total, attacks on railways numbered 1,810.

In 1945, 26 new names were added to the long list of executed prisoners in Denmark. On March 21 the Gestapo headquarters in Copenhagen was bombed by Royal Air Force Mosquitoes. Several members of the Gestapo were killed and also some Danish prisoners, kept as hostages on the top floor of the building, but the majority of these prisoners, including the President of the Danish Freedom Council, Professor Mogens Fog, were liberated by this attack. On April 17 the Gestapo

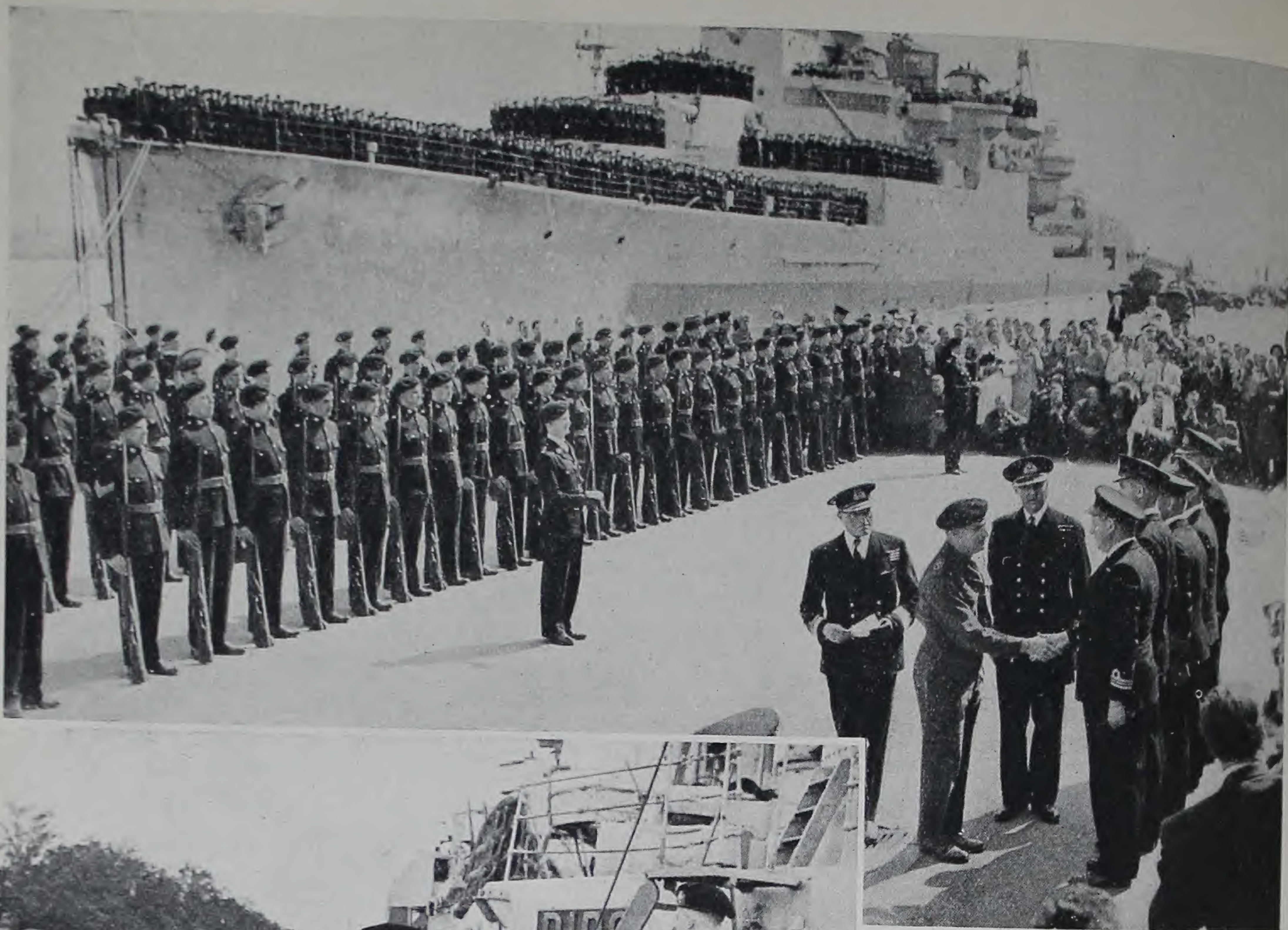
#### KING CHRISTIAN RE-OPENS DENMARK'S 'RIGSDAG'

On May 9, 1945, the Danish 'Rigsdag' was re-opened by King Christian (below) who, accompanied by the Queen, drove through cheering crowds in Copenhagen after the ceremony. Four days earlier, Mr. Vilhelm Buhl, ex-Premier, had formed an all-party cabinet with Mr. Christmas Møller (right), leader of the Conservatives, as Foreign Minister, here arriving in the capital after his return from London where he had been chairman of the Danish Council. (See illus. in page 2732.)

*Photos, British Newspaper Pool; Keystone*







#### 'MONTY' IN DENMARK

A British naval squadron, headed by the cruiser 'Birmingham' and including the cruiser 'Dido,' on May 9, 1945, arrived in Copenhagen harbour to take over the remnants of the German Navy (see illus. in page 3500) which had surrendered on the 7th. Here, Field-Marshal Montgomery, with H.M.S. 'Birmingham' in the background, shakes hands with naval officers on touring the docks. Left, German naval officers go ashore from the 'Dido.'



headquarters in Funen was also destroyed by the Royal Air Force.

During the last two or three months of the occupation Denmark suffered another German invasion: hundreds of thousands of refugees, especially from East Prussia, came on foot, by ship or by train. To accommodate them, the German authorities took over schools, hotels and public buildings.

On May 4 the news came that the Germans in Holland, North-West Germany and Denmark would capitulate next day. The illegal Resistance Movement—an army of approximately

55,000 men—suddenly appeared in public wearing arm bands in red, white and blue.

For many months before the liberation there had been organized contact between the leaders of the Danish political parties and the leaders of the Resistance movement (the Freedom Council), and they had agreed to form a Danish Government, until a General Election could take place, one half being representatives of the Resistance movement and the other half the leaders of the political parties. The result was that already on May 4 a proclama-

tion announced the formation of a new all-party Government whose Prime Minister was the Social Democrat, Vilhelm Buhl. Christmas Möller (see illus. in page 2732) was Foreign Minister, Professor Mogens Fog Minister for Special Affairs.

The Resistance movement took over control and, assisted by the Danish Brigade, 4,000 strong, trained and armed in Sweden, arrested over 12,000 Danish collaborators by May 27, including Dr. Fritz Clausen, the Danish Nazi leader. Troops of the British 6th Airborne Division, followed by armoured divisions which raced across the country from Germany, entered Copenhagen on May 5. Field-Marshal Montgomery arrived by air on the 13th, and drove for six miles through wildly cheering crowds to Amalienborg, where King Christian conferred on him the seven-hundred-year-old Order of the



Dannebrog, the highest Danish Order of Knighthood.

There was some sharp fighting in Copenhagen on May 5 and for a few days after between Danish patriots and Danish quislings, as well as with groups of Germans who refused to surrender. The cruisers "Prinz Eugen" and "Nürnberg" fired for 25 minutes on May 5 in support of German troops. In the fighting 59 Danes were killed, some 200 injured. The German Commander on the island of Bornholm in the Baltic also refused to surrender, and Soviet troops went ashore there on May 9 after a preliminary bombing. General Korotkov, the Soviet Commander, explained that Russian troops had occupied the island because it lay behind the Soviet zone of occupation in Germany. Soviet forces left the island on April 5, 1946.



#### LUFTWAFFE SECRETS SHOWN TO R.A.F.

Immediate task confronting the Allies after the unconditional surrender in Europe was the disarming of all enemy forces. Here, a Luftwaffe officer (extreme right) demonstrates to R.A.F. disarmament officers the secrets of the main 'ops' room from which the German Fighter Command in Denmark was controlled. Below, youthful Germans lay down their arms as they cross the frontier from Denmark into Germany on the journey home. *Photo, British Official*



#### RUSSIANS AT BORNHOLM

Despite the general German capitulation, 15,000 Nazi troops on the Danish Baltic island of Bornholm refused to surrender. The island was invaded by the Russians on May 9, 1945, and the German garrison rounded up. Here, General R. H. Dewing, C.B., D.S.O., head of the Allied Mission to Denmark, inspects a Soviet guard of honour.

The German troops in Denmark were disarmed by the British; the German refugees were left to the care of the Danes, who, more fortunate than other liberated peoples, had ample food, Denmark's productive capacity having been scarcely touched by the occupying power.

Parliament reopened on May 9. It introduced the death penalty, unknown before in Denmark, in a new penal code of May 26. A General Election was held on October 30—the first free election since 1938.

#### General Election in Denmark

The most marked change was the setback suffered by the Social Democrats, for sixteen years the Government Party, who lost so many seats that they refrained from forming a new government. The seats gained by the three largest parties, with the figures for the 1943 election in brackets, were: Social Democrats, 48 (66); Conservatives, 26 (31); Farmers' Party, 38 (28). The Communist Party gained 18 seats (3). A new minority Government was formed on November 7 by the Farmers' Party, with Knud Kristensen as Prime Minister, Gustav Rasmussen as Minister of Foreign Affairs.

From San Francisco on June 5 came a unanimous invitation to Denmark to join the United Nations, and a Danish delegation, headed by Henrik Kauffmann, Minister in Washington, took its place at the Conference.



## CAPITULATION IN SOUTH-EAST ASIA

*This chapter records the final stages in the Burma campaign which, although minor operations continued right up to the Japanese surrender in August 1945, culminated with the occupation of Rangoon on May 3. It deals also with subsequent local surrenders in the South-East Asia Command and the difficulties they met. Earlier 1944-45 operations in Burma are described in Chapter 345*

**W**ITH the fall of Mandalay (see page 3535), the bulk of the Japanese forces in Burma were left to the south of that city. They had been reinforced by remnants of Japanese divisions driven south-west from the Ledo Road sector, and though the actual numbers of the enemy were not then known, there were formations from ten enemy divisions and two independent brigades facing General Slim. The 14th Army had the three victorious divisions of XXXIII Corps, and an independent tank brigade. Slim still had the IV Indian Corps "up his sleeve," however, commanded by Lieutenant-General Frank W. Messervy, a Western Desert commander (see Chapter 224) of great experience and reputation.

The Japanese grouped below Mandalay were now vulnerable to a "block" on their main lines of communication coming by rail and road from Rangoon through Thazi and Meiktila. Slim had kept IV Corps back for a long-range

penetration exploit which was to cut off the main enemy forces and leave the road to Rangoon open; and after the fall of Mandalay he brought it into operation. The first move in the plan, called by Slim the "Union Jack" plan, was a surprise capture of Meiktila.

The Meiktila dash was the most secret operation of the 1944-1945 Burma offensive. The Japanese had been deceived into believing that in January IV Corps was in the north (where, indeed, 19th division, then part of IV Corps, really was). In actual fact, the main divisions of the Corps (5th, 7th and 17th Indian Divisions, with 255th Independent Tank Brigade) had worked their way south until by February 5 they were near the Irrawaddy, between Pakokku and Chauk. The Corps had removed all its "flashes" and other means of identification and, starting on Christmas Day 1944, had marched south from Kalembo on

the Chindwin, through the Gangaw Valley, with the East Africans, the Lushai Brigade and Chin Levies in front as a cover. Supply throughout had been by air. The obvious objective was Chauk and the Burma oilfields. The Japanese thought so. Slim meant them to.

Two of the divisions, 5th and 17th, together with the tanks, had been geared for speed. These two divisions were on a basis of two motorized brigades and one airborne brigade per division—an arrangement designed to get them from Meiktila to Rangoon in the shortest possible time. At first light on St. Valentine's Day, 7th Division began its crossing of the Irrawaddy, almost opposite the ancient capital of Burma, Pagan. At this point the main river channel is half a mile wide, but at that time of year the waters spread over an area up to two miles broad and are treacherous with sandbanks and currents. On the eastern bank, above the beach there are 70-ft. sandstone cliffs, fissured by streams. The Japanese did not expect a crossing there, but they had machine-gun nests set in the cliffs, and machine-gun fire met the boats as

## MEIKTILA FALLS AFTER SURPRISE 'DASH'

Centre of Burma's main rail and road communications, Meiktila, eighty miles south of Mandalay, was captured on February 28, 1945, after a surprise 'dash' by the 17th Indian Division thrusting eastwards across the Irrawaddy. Here in the shadow of a Burmese temple, crews of three-inch mortars pour their shells into the town from the outskirts. Right, radio telephonists of the 14th Army set up a command post in one of Meiktila's many temples

*Photos, British Official*







#### FOURTEENTH ARMY RACES THE BURMA MONSOON

With five weeks to go before the monsoon, the 14th Army in Burma in April 1945 was 340 miles from Rangoon. The Japanese were trying to hold a line from Meiktila stretching westwards towards the Irrawaddy. Here, troops of the 6th/7th Rajput Rifles mop up in Pyawbwe, the railway town 26 miles south-east of Meiktila, occupied on April 20. Left, forward observation post in the jungle east of Toungoo, reported captured on April 26. *Photos, British and Indian Official*

they came within range. But the landing was a success; British and Indian troops got ashore, established bridge-heads, and picked off the machine-gunners. When the sun came up, more troops, including Gurkhas, crossed unopposed. Pagan, "the city of 5,000 pagodas," and one of the wonders of the East, where no Japanese had been quartered and which had, therefore, escaped damage, was captured intact.

On February 19, 17th Division, with Sherman tanks, Priest self-propelled guns, armoured cars, scissors bridges and trucks, made another river crossing east of Pakokku and began the rush on Meiktila, 85 miles away. The surprise still held; but speed was essential and the armour churned over dusty roads and rough tracks trampled across the scrub desert.

The Japanese had not tried to hold Pagan, but they resisted in some of the villages. The tanks made short work of them, clearing Taungtha on February 24, and on the 27th seizing an airstrip 14 miles from Meiktila. Within

a few hours the first Dakotas touched down there carrying technicians, control personnel, and a U.S. airborne anti-aircraft unit. Then came plane after plane loaded with infantry. Before nightfall a concentration of heavy and light A.A. batteries had been set up, and a defensive perimeter established. Meiktila was captured next day, after fanatical resistance by the Japanese garrison had been overcome, and the British forces advanced to cut the Rangoon-Mandalay railway near Thazi. (Thazi itself was not taken till April 10.) The main airfield at Meiktila was not reported taken until March 31.

The capture of Pakokku by Gurkha and Indian troops was announced on March 7. Resistance in the oilfield area centred on Chauk was more stubborn.

With the capture of Meiktila, Slim

had broken the back of Japanese resistance in Burma. He had split the Japanese Army and had cut the main force off from Rangoon. This force was now between the hammer of XXXIII Corps (pushing south from Mandalay) and the anvil of IV Corps at Meiktila, and although pushed for time (the monsoon was now only six weeks away), Slim decided that it must be eliminated before he continued the advance on Rangoon. In the first week of April the two Corps closed in, and on April 7 S.E.A.C. issued an announcement that "in the central Burma plain our troops have reached the end of a definite phase of operations. The large Japanese force cut off between Mandalay and Meiktila has been liquidated and its remnants driven into the hills south-east of Mandalay."

**Large Enemy  
Force  
Liquidated**

The time had come for the last move of the "Union Jack" plan. Slim moved XXXIII Corps south-westwards, behind IV Corps, to the Irrawaddy and the oilfields round Chauk. At the

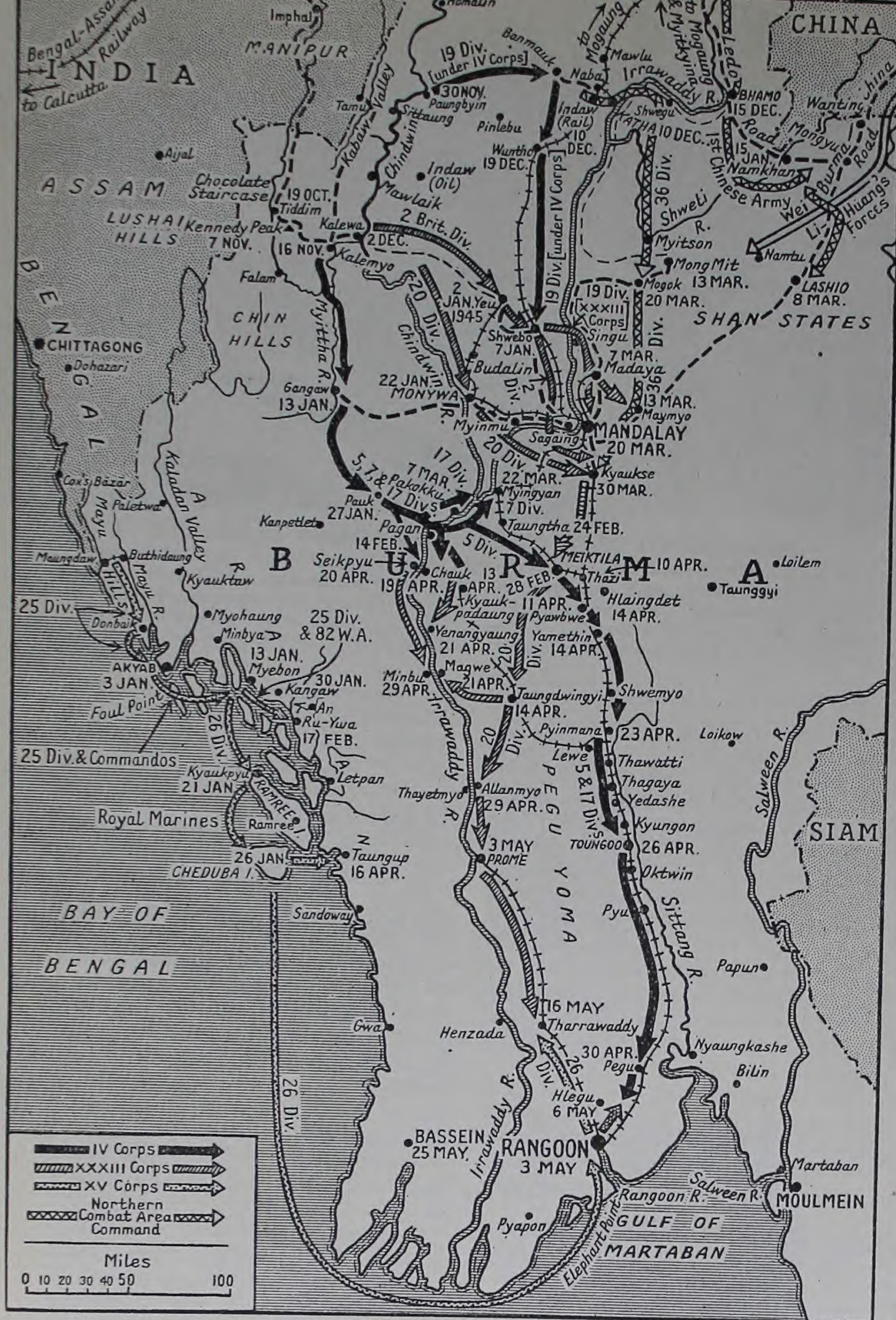
#### ALLIES CUT OFF JAPANESE WEST OF PEGU

On April 30, 1945, S.E.A.C. announced that the 14th Army had captured Pegu, important road and rail junction 50 miles north of Rangoon, thus cutting the enemy's last escape route from Rangoon and lower Burma to Siam usable by motor transport. Here, Sherman tanks go forward through the blazing outskirts of the town. Right, a British patrol on the Pegu canal passes the ruins of a village in a monsoon-flooded area east of Waw.

*Photos, British Official*







### ALLIED RECONQUEST OF BURMA

This map shows the general lines of Allied advance on all sectors after the enemy had been thrown out of Assam and dislodged from Tiddim. For the sake of continuity, it includes that part of Burma covered in the winter operations of 1944-45 (see page 3536) as well as the part covered in the last stages of the campaign up to and after the occupation of Rangoon on May 3, 1945.

same time he gave IV Corps the order to go ahead with its armoured push south on Rangoon. Fifth and 17th Divisions, and the tanks, were ready. They now virtually constituted the Corps, as 7th Division, after crossing the Irrawaddy, remained with XXXIII Corps in the oilfields.

The final dramatic race with the monsoon started: there were five clear weeks before the monsoon was due, and

there were 340 road-miles to cover. The Japanese attempted to make a stand along a line running roughly from Meiktila west towards the Irrawaddy. Hlaingdet, guarding the path through which they might have escaped to the Shan States, was entered on April 14. On the 20th it was announced that British and Indian tanks and infantry of 17th Division were 70 miles south of Meiktila, having captured on

the way Pyawbwe, railway town 26 miles south-east of Meiktila and one-time Jap Army H.Q., after a three-day battle in which 1,100 Japanese were killed. The drive continued in oppressive heat and against fanatical resistance. By April 26, Yamethin, Shwemyo, Pyinmana, Lewe, Thawatti, Thagaya, Yedashe, Kyungon, Toungoo, Oktwin and Pyu were all in British hands.

The speed of the advance outpaced the planning capacity of the Japanese: the only opposition came from snipers in roadside culverts and in chaungs, and from mines. Only very occasionally did enemy planes appear in the sky, whereas complete air cover was given to the Allied troops by the R.A.F., the R.I.A.F. and the U.S.A.A.F.

The Allied salient in Burma was probably, as it has been called, "the narrowest ever known in war": it consisted at this time virtually of the road and railway and a couple of hundred yards on either side. There were Japanese to the left and Japanese to the right. But this factor mattered little to the men of 17th Division as they bowled along the Rangoon road towards Pegu. They were more concerned about the monsoon, which broke early in the area. For three days it hardly stopped raining. The Japanese decided to make a stand at Pegu in order to keep clear the only escape road from Rangoon and Lower Burma to Siam usable by motor transport. There was a stiff fight before the town fell on April 30, and then the Japanese blew up two important bridges along the remaining 36 road-miles to Rangoon.

Besides the drive by IV Corps, Mountbatten planned also an amphibious assault on Rangoon itself. He wanted to avoid the pinning down of the 14th Army in southern Burma when the monsoon came. The 26th Indian Division (Major-General Chambers), belonging to XV Indian Corps, was pulled out of west coast operations (see page 3536) for the task, and the three-service planning began at Ramree on April 7. It was a rush job—and many army units had to be collected from distant bases. May 2 was set as D day—a date which gave no time for rehearsals. The operation was of a kind new in the Burma theatre—"triphibious" invasion by land, sea and airborne forces.

The problems were many and tough. Rangoon River has treacherous bars and narrow channels. The seaborne troops had to be put into their landing craft over thirty miles from their objective, and that is a long journey





#### COPENHAGEN'S V.E. DAY GREETING FOR THE ROYAL DRAGOONS

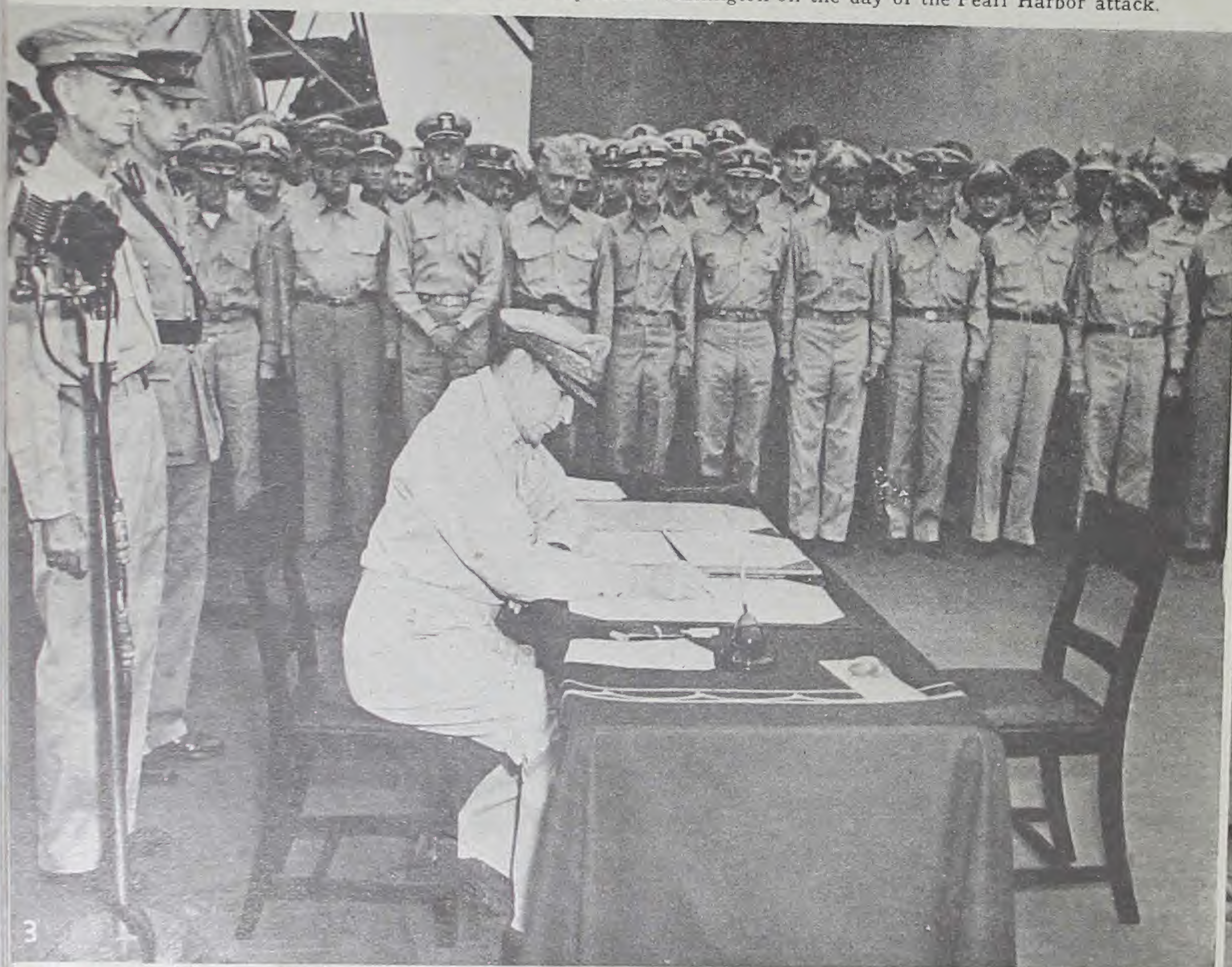
Copenhagen, the capital of Denmark, celebrated V.E. Day (May 8, 1945) three days after its liberation. The city had been in German hands from April 9, 1940. On May 7 armoured cars of the Royal Dragoons arrived in the capital to join troops of the British 6th Airborne Division who had landed earlier in the day. They were given an overwhelming reception. On V.E. Day British troops paraded the streets to the accompaniment of cheering by the Danes (above).



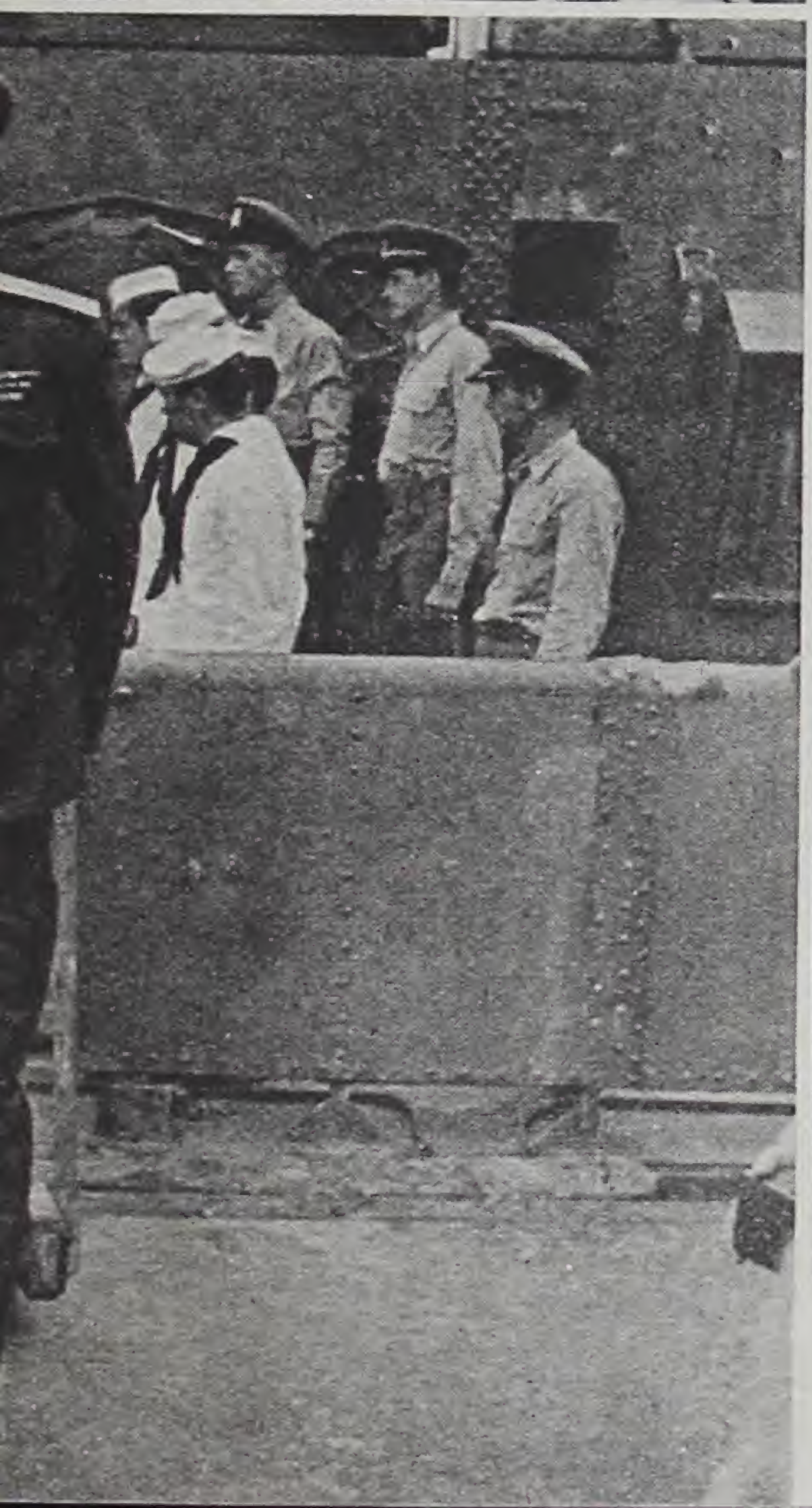


### JAPAN SIGNS INSTRUMENT OF TOTAL SURRENDER—

At 10.30 a.m. (Tokyo time) on September 2, 1945, on board the U.S. battleship 'Missouri' moored in Tokyo Bay, Japan formally signed her unconditional surrender to the Allies. The ship had been chosen for the ceremony in compliment to President Truman who was born in Missouri. Some fifty Allied generals and admirals were present, in addition to the delegates empowered to sign on behalf of their governments, and the Allied armada included the battleships 'H.M.S. King George V' and H.M.S. 'Duke of York.' The 'Missouri' flew the flag which had flown above the Capitol in Washington on the day of the Pearl Harbor attack.

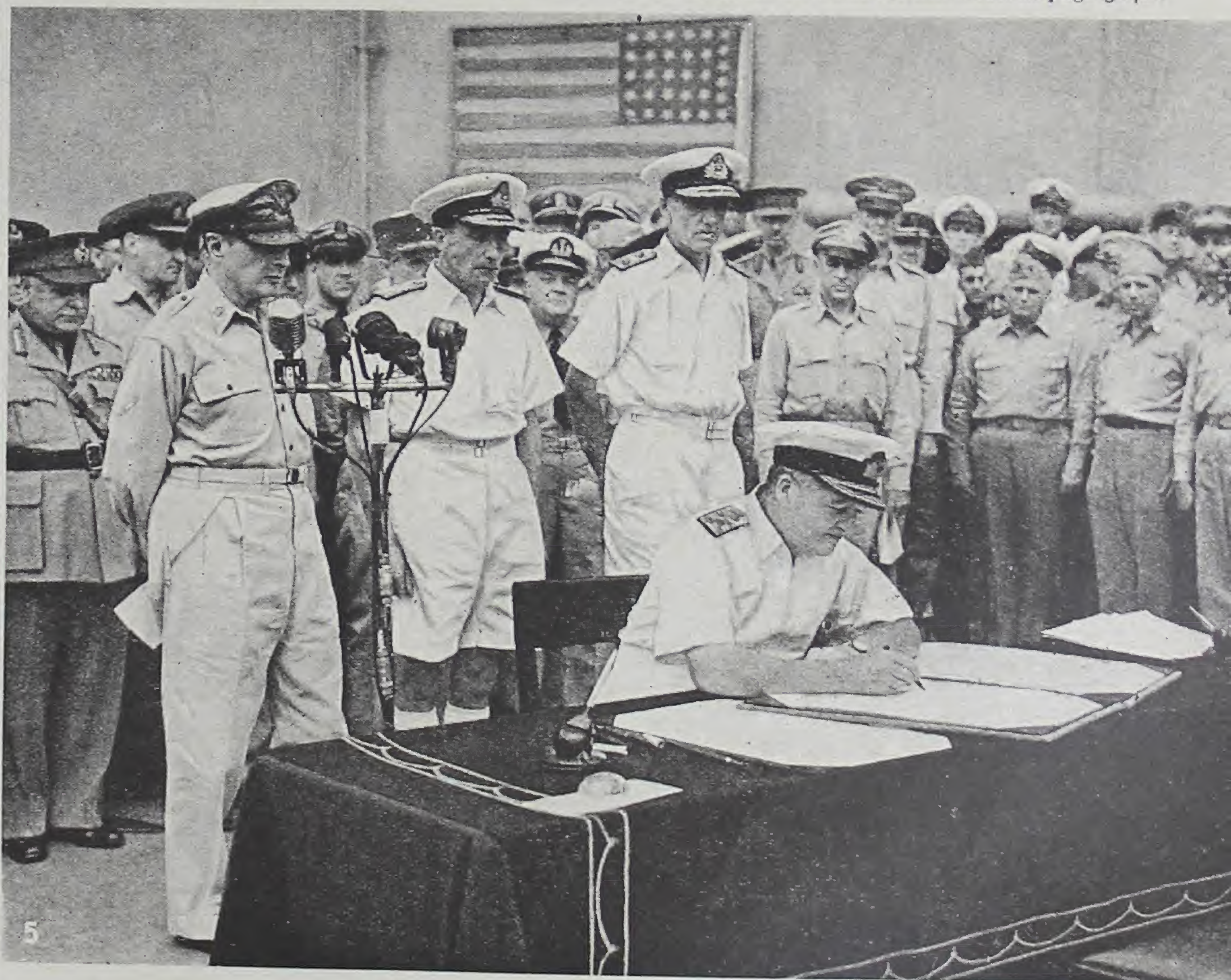






—ON BOARD U.S. BATTLESHIP 'MISSOURI' IN TOKYO BAY

First to sign the instrument of surrender were the two Japanese delegates, Mamoru Shigemitsu, the new Foreign Minister (1) ; and General Yoshijiro Umetzu, Chief of Imperial General Staff (2), both watched by General MacArthur. Allied delegates signing included General MacArthur, as Supreme Allied Commander (3) ; Fleet-Admiral Chester Nimitz, for the U.S.A. (4) ; Admiral Sir Bruce Fraser, for Great Britain (5) ; Lt.-General Kuzma Derevyanko, for the U.S.S.R. (6) ; General Sir Thomas Blamey, for Australia (see illus. in page 3740) ; Air Vice-Marshal Isitt, for New Zealand (See also Hist. Doc. CCCVII and illus. in page 3842.)

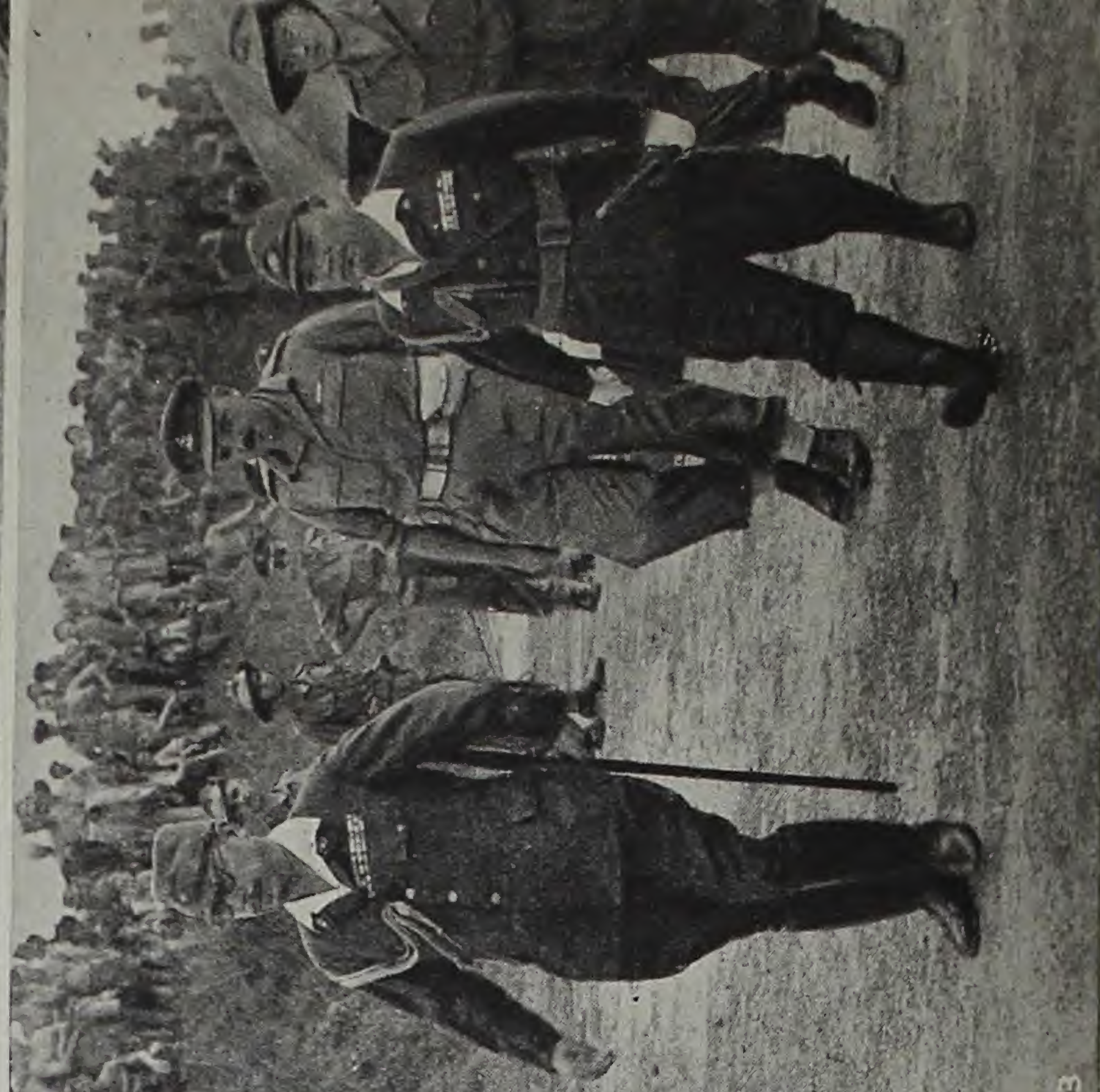




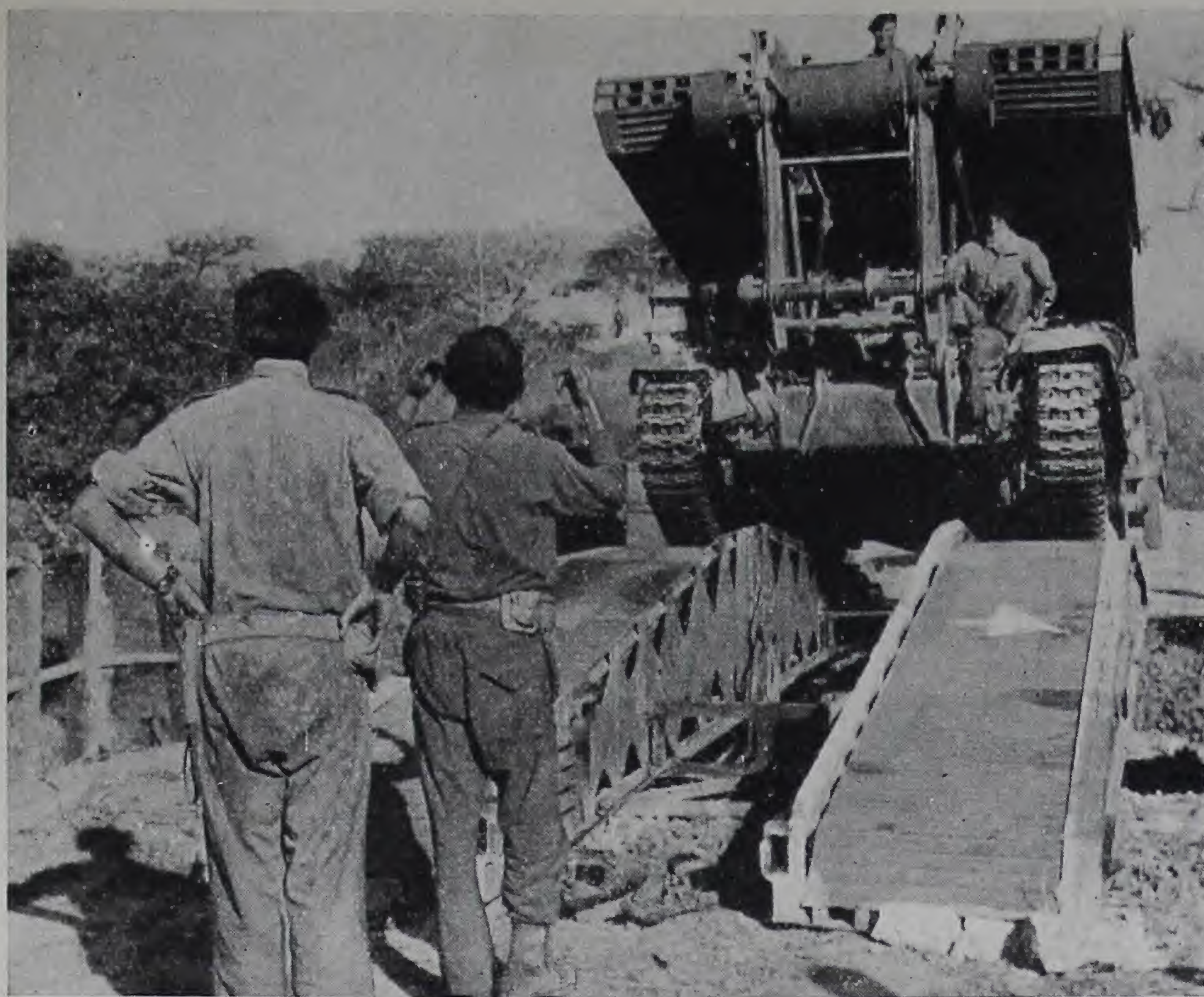


**JAPANESE SURRENDERS IN SOUTH-EAST ASIA COMMAND**

1. Field-Marshal Count Terauchi, Supreme Commander of the Japanese Expeditionary Forces in the Southern Regions, salutes Admiral Lord Louis Mountbatten, Supreme Allied Commander, S.E.A.C., at Saigon, Indo-China, on November 30, 1945, after handing over his ceremonial swords. 2. Vice-Admiral Tiezo Hara signs the surrender to Brigadier J. A. Salomons, D.S.O., in the Andaman Islands, Bay of Bengal, on October 9 at Port Blair. 3. Lieutenant-General Takazo Numata, representing Field-Marshal Count Terauchi, and Rear-Admiral Kaigye Chudo (right) arrive by air on August 26 at Rangoon to discuss details of surrenders in S.E.A.C.







### BRITISH BRIDGE-LAYING TANKS IN BURMA

Existence of the British Army's bridge-laying tank, first used on the Continent, was not disclosed till June 1945. It was known as the 'Scissors' type, because the bridge was carried folded, scissors-wise, on top of it. Hydraulic mechanism inside the tank unfolded the bridge and lowered it across the gap to be spanned. Here, in Burma, a Churchill tank carrying a 'scissors' bridge crosses a 'scissors' bridge already in position.

*Photo, British Official*

in such craft if there is the slightest swell in the sea—particularly for Indian troops not used to the sea. The one practicable channel for the landing craft ran almost under the muzzles of Japanese coastal guns at Elephant Point on the west bank. These guns were well sited and well dug in—difficult, therefore, to neutralize by bombing from the air. India's new parachute troops were to deal with them.

Rumours that the Japanese were pulling out of Rangoon subsequently proved true—they had drained the city to send men north, to make the stand at Pegu. But no chances could be taken, and the schedule was adhered to. Guided by smoke bombs placed by British "Pathfinders," the American aircrews and the Canadian jumpmasters put down hundreds of stocky little Indian Army parachutists on D day minus one just where they were wanted. The parachutists found only 37 Japanese. They killed 36 of them and wounded the other severely. Elephant Point was theirs.

Off the river mouth lay the ships with men and stores: they had started from their base in Arakan and steamed 400 miles down the Burma coast. To prevent enemy interference, the East Indies Fleet had attacked the Nicobar

Islands (*see* page 3765) and Port Blair in the Andamans on April 30. The sea was getting up, and the weather staff reported that a bad monsoon storm was travelling rapidly towards them. That

storm missed the waiting armada by only a few miles. On schedule the landing craft were sent off in the choppy sea on their long journey to their landing points. Progress in the small vessels, not intended for use in rough water, was slow. Hundreds of the men spent five hours in the misery of seasickness before they were landed.

In the van were men of the Lincoln Regiment, spearhead in **Seaborne Troops Reach Rangoon River** so many of 26th Indian Division's victories. They, and many other units, were put off at points on either side of Rangoon river 25 miles south-east of the city. Through blinding rain they got ashore on to a river bank of knee-deep mud. Despite the appalling conditions, they made rapid progress through the slime of the paddy-fields to break into the city from the landward side in support of the troops who landed on the bomb-battered quays.

The first wave ashore included a battalion of the Jats, the Frontier Force Rifles and the 8th Gurkhas, who landed on the west bank. The east bank force, besides the Lincolns, was made up of Garhwalis and Punjabis. Sherman tanks of the 19th Lancers (an Indian regiment) supported their assault.

The city was an empty shell. On the riverside, warehouses and wharves, fired by the Japanese before their main body left several days earlier, were still smouldering, despite the torrential rain. There was no water in the city mains with which to fight the fires,

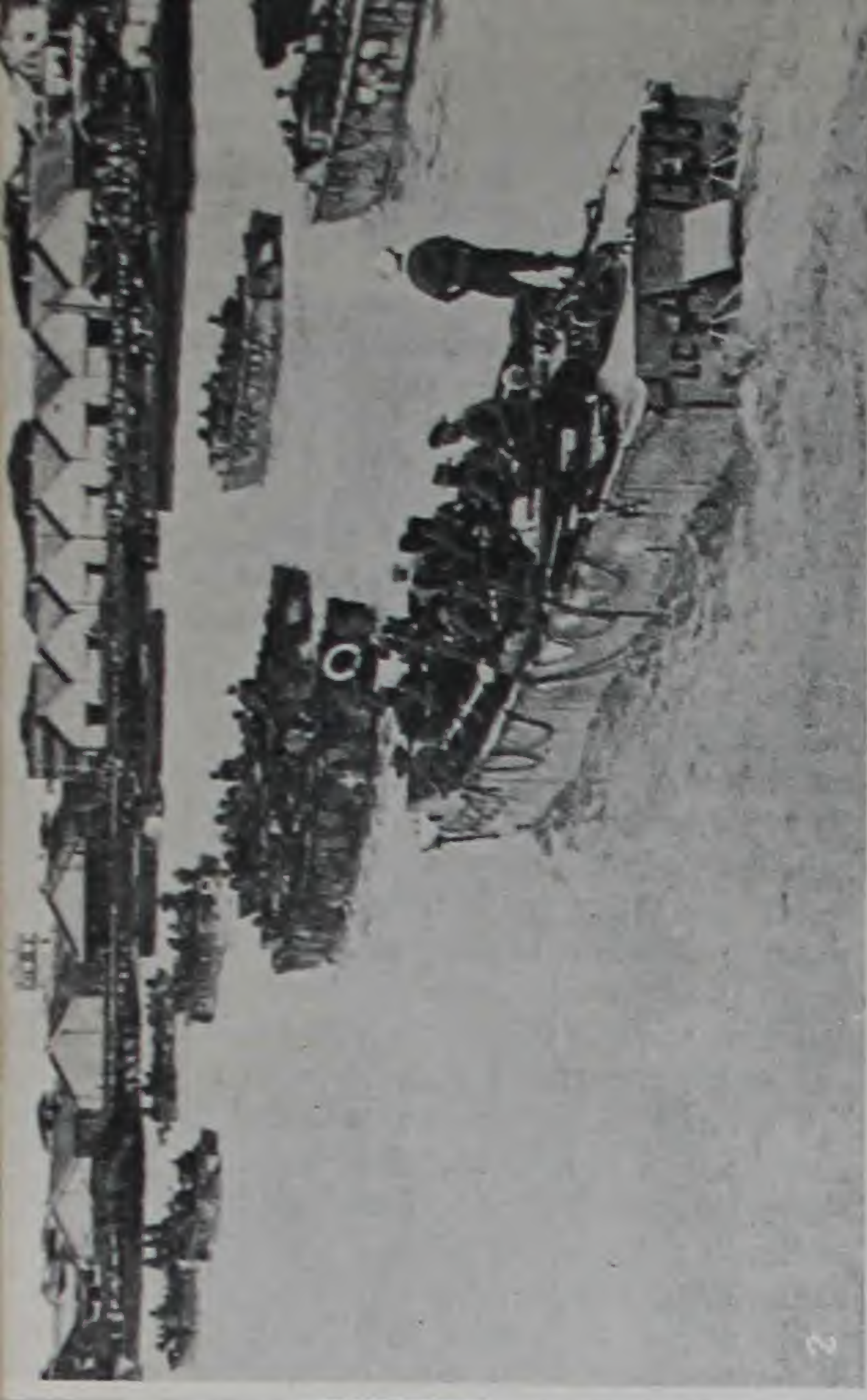
### RECAPTURE OF BURMA OILFIELDS

On April 19, 1945, S.E.A.C. announced that British and Punjabi troops in an encircling movement had captured Chauk, one of the chief centres of Burma's oilfields, and had seized intact much valuable equipment. In the Mt. Popa-Kyaukpadaung area the Japanese had dug themselves in round the oilfields which they had plainly hoped to hold. Below, Sikh troops in foxholes at the edge of an oilfield just north of Chauk.

*Photo, British Official*







### S.E.A.C.'S BIGGEST COMBINED OPERATION

At dawn on May 2, 1945, on the Rangoon River, 25 miles south-east of the Burmese capital, British and Indian troops landed in the largest amphibious combined operation in south-east Asia. Rangoon was completely freed within 24 hours of the landings and the Burma campaign virtually at an end. 1. The invasion force sails up the river. 2. R.I.N. assault craft approach the city quays. 3. Disembarking near Elephant Point. 4. R.A.F. Regiment unit manhandles 20-mm. A.A. guns through a sea of mud on the river landing-beaches. *Photos, British and Indian Official*





even had there been an effective fire-fighting force. As troops advanced from the waterfront they found smoke and the smell of recently burned buildings—many fired by the Japanese, others by the looters who swept through the city as soon as Japanese control was off.

Occupation of Rangoon was completed on May 3. In the advance from Mandalay to Rangoon, the 14th Army killed 31,364 Japanese, took 683 prisoners and captured 450 guns, 51 tanks.

An Order of the Day issued by Admiral Mountbatten next day said, "The occupation of Rangoon by a successful combined operation was the culmination of a long series of con-



#### FOURTEENTH ARMY GENERALS IN BURMA

A roadside conference on the outskirts of Prome after its fall on May 2, 1945: (left to right): Lieutenant-General Sir Montagu Stopford, K.B.E., C.B., D.S.O., M.C., who commanded XXXIII Corps during the campaign and was later C.-in-C. the 12th Army; Major-General F. W. Messervy, C.B., D.S.O., commander of IV Corps and leader of the main dash by land to Rangoon; and Major-General Douglas D. Gracey, C.B., C.B.E., M.C., commanding the 20th Indian Division.



#### TROOPS OF THE B.N.A.

Burma's own troops helped to free Prome on May 2, 1945, and were in action on the approaches to the city (right). Three days earlier it had been announced that native forces, originally trained and armed by the Japanese to fight the British, were co-operating with the Allies as the 'Burma National Army.' Above, Frontier Force Rifles hoist the flag at Prome

certed operations carried out by the 14th Army. . . . The fall of the capital ten days before the rains brings to an end the battle of Burma, for although isolated enemy pockets remain their doom is sealed. . . . In the process we have killed 97,000 Japanese

and inflicted 250,000 casualties. The liberation of Burma, in which we have had the active assistance of the Burmese, marks not only the successful accomplishment of the first stage in your advance, it will also be your spring-board for further and greater victories."

The first deep-water ships entered Rangoon on May 8 after the river had been swept clear of mines, but not till June 23 was the port announced as again open to shipping.

Contact between IV Corps from the north and XV Corps from Rangoon was made some 25 miles north-east of Rangoon on May 6, when men of the 7th Gurkha Rifles met 26th Indian Division troops near the town of Hlegu.

While the campaign for the capture of Rangoon was going on, other forces were clearing the oilfields. The East







#### AMERICAN FIELD SERVICE IN ACTION

Throughout the Burma campaign the American Field Service rendered untiring first aid to the Allied fighting forces. All voluntary workers, they drove ambulances and jeeps fitted with stretchers right up to the firing line, tended the wounded and drove them back to safety. On the Sittang Bend (left), an A.F.S. volunteer attends to a Gurkha hit by shrapnel. Right, an A.F.S. driver fits out a village child with an Army shirt.

*Photos, British Official*

African troops which preceded IV Corps in the secret advance from Kalemyo (see page 3820) emerged near Seikpyu, opposite Chauk, on February 22; and when IV Corps started the advance on Rangoon from Meiktila, XXXIII Corps was sent south-westwards (see page 3821), with instructions to clear the oil area and advance on Rangoon along the Irrawaddy river. The Japanese, finding two strong forces—each with a tank brigade—both making south, decided to deploy the

major part of their remaining forces before Lieutenant-General Sir Montagu Stopford's XXXIII Corps, composed of 20th Division, 7th Division, and 254th Tank Brigade.

A large force concentrated for the defence of the Yenangyaung oilfields

#### BURMESE TRIBESMEN HELP ALLIED ARMIES

It was disclosed on December 19, 1944, that a force of tribesmen in the Burma hills, known as the 'Kachin Rangers' and fighting under American command, had been operating inside enemy lines in north Burma (sometimes as deep as 150 miles), had killed some 3,000 Japanese, blown up bridges, wrecked trains and rescued over 200 Allied airmen who had baled out over enemy territory. Here, a patrol with rifle and Bren-gun is on the look-out by a jungle trail.



was trapped and broken up by XXXIII Corps in a series of aggressive thrusts. The important railhead town of Kyaukpadaung was captured on April 13. Chauk fell to an encircling movement by British and Punjabi troops on the 19th, Seikpyu was taken on the 20th. Yenangyaung, main centre of Burmese oil production, and Magwe were captured on April 21, and on the 25th S.E.A.C. announced that the whole of the oilfields region had been cleared of the enemy. The oilfields had been thoroughly destroyed in 1942, and the Japanese had succeeded in obtaining only 800 barrels a day, compared with 8,000 before the war. XXXIII Corps pressed on down the Irrawaddy Valley, taking Prome on May 3. It was met on May 17 by troops advancing from Rangoon who had captured Tharrawaddy on the 16th.

**Oilfields  
Cleared  
of the Enemy**

In the west, Taungup, the enemy's last base in Arakan, was captured on April 16 by XV Indian Corps, bringing to a victorious end the Arakan campaign which began in December 1942 (see page 2691).

The remnants of the Japanese force in Burma had been split into three groups: (1) some 50,000 east of the Rangoon-Mandalay railway trying to



escape into the Shan Hills and Siam ; (2) some 12,000 stranded in central Burma between the Rangoon-Mandalay and Rangoon-Prome railways ; (3) about 6,000 in the south-west. Operations to round them up or destroy them continued in monsoon conditions. Serious fighting flared up on the Sittang river, north-east of Pegu, during the early part of July, when enemy forces penned in the Pegu Yomas, and seeking to escape across the Sittang, secured a bridge-head over the river and drove Gurkha troops from Nyaungkashe. Stubborn resistance was still being met, despite the infliction of more than 11,500 casualties—including only a few hundred prisoners—when Japan surrendered.

The formation of a new British Army in Burma, the 12th, was announced on June 1. Based on Rangoon, and commanded by Lieutenant-General Stopford, it formed part of the 11th Army



#### P.O.W. SIGNAL WITH HOME-MADE FLAG

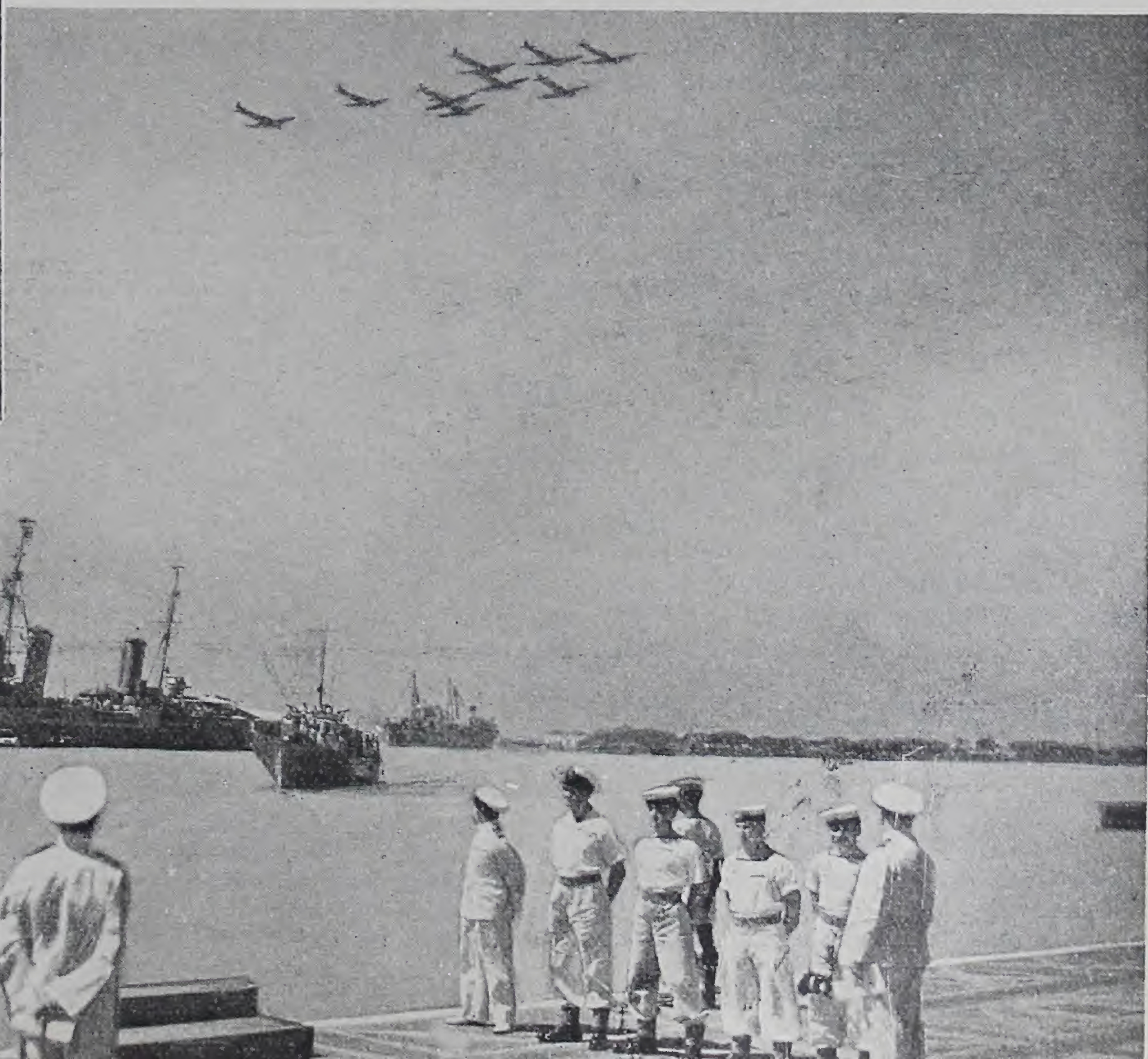
About a thousand Allied prisoners of war were found in the Rangoon area after the occupation of the Burmese capital on May 3, 1945. Prisoners too weak to march were left behind ; others were forced to accompany the retreating enemy towards Pegu. Both groups had to devise means of signalling their presence to Allied bombers. These released prisoners display a Union Jack they had made for this purpose from scraps of Japanese blankets. *Photos, British Official*

group under Lieutenant-General Sir Oliver Leese. When Japan surrendered on August 14, S.E.A.C. was preparing to launch a major expedition into Malaya. This operation, known as "Zipper," had Singapore as its objective, and was to have been an amphibious

blow aimed at beaches in the Port Swettenham area. Troops, ships, aircraft and landing craft were all assembled and September 9 had been chosen as D day. As it was, an Allied force was able to sail peacefully into Singapore on September 5 (see page 3604).

#### BURMA'S GOVERNOR ARRIVES AT RANGOON

The Governor of Burma, Sir Reginald Dorman-Smith, arrived at Rangoon on October 16, 1945 (when the Governor's flag was flown from Government House for the first time since February 22, 1942), to take over the administration of the country from the military. Left, the Governor greets prominent Burmans on arrival. Below, R.A.F. Spitfires fly over the cruiser H.M.S. 'Cleopatra' in the harbour as Sir Reginald comes ashore in a naval motor-launch.







### BRITISH TROOPS LAND IN BATAVIA

A serious situation developed in Java after the Japanese surrender owing to the setting up of a 'Provisional Indonesian Republican Government' headed by Dr. Soekarno, an Indonesian nationalist leader, and the inability of S.E.A.C. to land forces rapidly. Allied liberating forces did not disembark until September 28 when British, Dutch and Indian troops went ashore at Batavia, among them these Seaforth Highlanders.

*Photo, British Official*

The official surrender of all Japanese forces in South-East Asia took place on September 12, General Itagaki (commanding the Japanese 7th Army in Malaya, Java and Sumatra) signing for Japan, Lord Mountbatten counter-signing after the Japanese delegates had withdrawn (see illus. in page 3606). General Ichida (Chief of Staff of the Japanese Burma area) signed the surrender of the troops left in Burma at Rangoon on September 13; Lieutenant-General Ishiguro (commanding the Japanese 29th Army) formally surrendered Japanese forces in Malaya at Kuala Lumpur on the same day.

At the time of Japan's capitulation, the area under S.E.A.C. was being

extended, with a view to later operations, to include French Indo-China and Java—the latter coming under the Command actually on August 15. The result was that S.E.A.C. had at its disposal insufficient troops adequately to occupy all the recovered areas under its authority. Not until the end of September did S.E.A.C. take over all its areas, and this lapse of time before Allied forces could secure local surrenders gave the Japanese in Java, Sumatra and Indo-China time to prepare a legacy of trouble.

The great task of releasing Allied prisoners of war and internees and sending them home began at once. From Singapore alone, 40,000 men were repatriated during the first three weeks of September, and through the staging post at Bangkok poured the 50,000 prisoners released in Siam and French

Indo-China (see illus. in pages 3777 and 3795). The Dakotas of R.A.F. Transport Command which had nourished the 14th Army now flew at full operational pressure on their new errand of mercy. The end of 1945 saw Malaya, Siam, and Burma free of Japanese and all Allied prisoners there repatriated. The French were taking over in Indo-China after some initial trouble, and a S.E.A.C. garrison had reoccupied Hongkong. The Civil Affairs problems of the whole area

were, however, still acute; much of the primary distribution and repair work had to be done by the military. The food situation was particularly threatening as much of the rice-growing country had fallen out of production.

The most serious difficulties arising from the limitations of S.E.A.C.'s forces occurred in the Netherlands Indies. When, by direction of the Supreme Allied Commander, General MacArthur, and by arrangement with the Netherlands authorities (who had not the necessary forces at their disposal), a small British contingent under Lieutenant-General Sir Philip Christison (formerly commanding the XV Indian Corps) landed in Java on September 28 to rescue Allied prisoners, round up the Japanese, and take over administration, they found a so-called "Provisional Indonesian Republican Government" in control of large areas, and in carrying out their mission they found themselves forced at times to act against armed opposition from Indonesians using weapons and ammunition transferred to them, against the surrender terms, by the Japanese. The Nationalist movement in the Netherlands Indies was no new thing, and had been fanned for his own purposes by the enemy. While the British troops went on with their duties, their leaders brought together the Indonesians and the Dutch in order that they could work out their own problems.

### Difficulties in Java



### JAPANESE SURRENDER IN DUTCH TIMOR

All Japanese forces in Dutch Timor were surrendered by Colonel Kaida Tatsushii to Brigadier L. G. H. Dyke, of the Australian Army, on September 11, 1945. The ceremony took place on board the minesweeper H.M.A.S. 'Moresby' in Koepang harbour. Here the enemy envoy, facing Brigadier Dyke, signs the instrument.

*Photo, Pictorial Press*



# DISASTER OVERWHELMS JAPAN

*Battered from the air and from the sea, cut off from her rapidly gained and almost as rapidly lost vast overseas empire, Japan was compelled to surrender unconditionally to the Allies less than four years after her unprovoked attack on Pearl Harbor. The last months of war and the first months of peace in Japan are described in this Chapter. For Japanese home affairs in 1944, see Chapter 324*

THE conquest of Okinawa brought the Americans' main forces to within immediate striking distance of the heart of the Japanese Empire. The Pacific war was primarily a naval war. Japan had begun it with a considerable battle fleet. By June 1945 the effective strength of the Japanese Fleet was reduced to the two hermaphrodite battleships of the "Ise" class and the 33,000-ton "Nagato." She had virtually no cruisers effective, her carrier strength was reduced to five ships including escort-carriers, and her destroyer strength was approximately thirty. In actual fact few of these ships were capable of serious action, and none had accompanied the "Yamato" on her suicide dash to Okinawa (see page 3761). The Japanese Navy had ceased to exist as a fighting force, and off the Japanese coast stood four Allied Fleets all composed of fast up-to-date ships and each vastly superior to the whole remaining naval strength of Japan.

With the Air Force it is a little more difficult to be precise, but it is improbable that the total remaining air strength of Japan consisted of more than 3,000 of all types of planes and, once again, the fighting efficiency of by far the greater portion of these was doubtful in the extreme. The air sweeps of the Allies were virtually unopposed (see page 3793).

There remained the Army. There was only one major land campaign in the whole course of the Japanese war—that fought in Burma (see Chapters 295, 345, 371). Immense movements and manoeuvrings took place up and down the length of China, but owing to the extreme inadequacy of Chinese arms in every branch of current equipment, they bore little or no resemblance to the other campaigns of the Second Great War, and cannot be estimated on the same level.

The island conquests and the campaigns in New Guinea and the Philippines, bitter as they were, were not on the scale of the war in Europe. In the large scale operations of Luzon, for example, the total of American dead was barely 3,000. In Okinawa, the most costly of the island assaults, the total

killed and missing in action in two months was just 12,000. Though Japanese casualties, due in part to the immense American superiority in arms and equipment and in part to the fanaticism with which the Japanese fought, were invariably out of all proportion to Allied losses, it cannot be said that the Japanese army had suffered any serious weakening of its strength.

But a very large part of the Japanese army was outside the Japanese mainland: enemy documents state that on September 1, 3,400,000 army and navy personnel were deployed throughout Japanese-occupied territories. The destruction of Japanese air and sea power made their return to the Empire impossible. The armies of Manchuria, of northern and southern China, of

## STERN ORDERS FOR PRISONERS AT SEA

Below is a facsimile of orders issued to Allied prisoners transported on Japanese prison-ships—as promulgated by the 'Commander of the Prisoner Escort, Navy of the Great Japanese Empire.' As may be seen, threat of the death penalty covered such breaches of discipline as 'talking without permission and raising loud voices' and 'using more than two blankets.' The offer of preferential treatment in Clause 6 must have provoked smiles from the prisoners—not merely on account of its pidgin-English.

Commander of the Prisoner Escort  
Navy of the Great Japanese Empire

### REGULATIONS FOR PRISONERS

1. The prisoners disobeying the following orders will be punished with immediate death.
  - a) Those disobeying orders and instructions.
  - b) Those showing a motion of antagonism and raising a sign of opposition.
  - c) Those disordering the regulations by individualism, egoism, thinking only about yourself, rushing for your own goods.
  - d) Those talking without permission and raising loud voices.
  - e) Those walking and moving without order.
  - f) Those carrying unnecessary baggage in embarking.
  - g) Those resisting mutually.
  - h) Those touching the boat's materials, wires, electric lights, tools, switches, etc.
  - i) Those climbing ladder without order.
  - j) Those showing action of running away from the room or boat.
  - k) Those trying to take more meal than given to them.
  - l) Those using more than two blankets.
2. Since the boat is not well equipped and inside being narrow, food being scarce and poor you'll feel uncomfortable during the short time on the boat. Those losing patience and disordering the regulation will be heavily punished for the reason of not being able to escort.
3. Be sure to finish your "Nature's call", evacuate the bowels and urine, before embarking.
4. Meal will be given twice a day. One plate only to one prisoner. The prisoners called by the guard will give out the meal quick as possible and honestly. The remaining prisoners will stay in their places quietly and wait for your plate. Those moving from their places reaching for your plate without order will be heavily punished. Same orders will be applied in handling plates after meal.
5. Toilet will be fixed at the four corners of the room. The buckets and cans will be placed. When filled up a guard will appoint a prisoner. The prisoner called will take the buckets to the center of the room. The buckets will be pulled up by the derrick and be thrown away. Toilet papers will be given. Every one must cooperate to make the room sanitary. Those being careless will be punished.
6. Navy of the Great Japanese Empire will not try to punish you all with death. Those obeying all the rules and regulations, and believing the action and purpose of the Japanese Navy, cooperating with Japan in constructing the "New order of the Great Asia" which lead to the world's peace will be well treated.



Indo-China and Malaya were lost as far as the defence of Japan was concerned.

But the invasion forces were all the same calculated on a scale sufficient to overcome an army estimated at approximately 3,000,000 in Japan itself—

**Allied Invasion Preparations** Japanese figures later showed that the combined naval and military strength in Japan totalled 4,000,000. The speed of the "build-up" in the Philippines, the Marianas, the Marshalls, and the Ryukyus achieved an almost incredible acceleration. On August 4 General MacArthur's command was extended to include the Ryukyu Islands, which meant that he became Supreme Commander of the Allied invasion forces.

Behind the incessant air assault (described in pages 3789-3795) the gigantic strength of America was coiled for the final spring.

Then on August 6 came the destruction of the city of Hiroshima with a single atomic bomb (see page 3795), followed on August 8 by the declaration of war by the U.S.S.R. (see page 3780), and the dropping of a second atomic bomb on the city of Nagasaki.

While representatives of Great Britain, the U.S.A. and the U.S.S.R. (the last not yet at war with Japan) were in conference at Potsdam (see Chapter 380), a "peace feeler" from Japan reached

the first two through the third. The Allies' response was the Potsdam ultimatum of July 26 (see Historic Document 308, page 3842). Domei, the official Japanese news agency, announced on the 27th that the Government would ignore this ultimatum; but on August 10 Tokyo broadcast that the Government was willing to accept the Potsdam declaration provided that "the said declaration does not comprise any demand which prejudices the prerogatives of His Majesty as a sovereign ruler." On the 11th, Mr James Byrnes, U.S. Secretary of State, handed to the Swiss Legation in Washington for transmission to the Japanese Government a reply on behalf of the U.S.A., Great Britain, the Soviet Union and China, stating that "from the moment of surrender, the authority of the

Emperor and the Japanese Government to rule the State shall be subject to the Supreme Commander of the Allied Powers who will take such steps as he deems proper to effectuate the surrender terms. The Emperor will be required to authorize and ensure the signature by the



#### SURRENDER ENVOYS FROM JAPAN REACH MANILA

Sixteen surrender envoys from Japan, including General Takashima, vice-Chief of the Japanese Imperial General Staff, arrived at Ie, off Okinawa, and were flown on to Manila on August 19, 1945. Here the U.S. official interpreter refuses to shake hands with Lieutenant-General Takashiro Tanabe on the Manila airstrip. The surrender was announced to enemy troops still in hiding on Luzon by means of streamers each attached to three balloons, in the manner shown above.

Government of Japan and Japanese Imperial General Headquarters of the surrender terms necessary to carry out the terms of the Potsdam declaration."

Allied sea and air bombardment of Japan continued, and on August 14 the Japanese Cabinet decided to accept the Allied terms. Next day the Emperor Hirohito broadcast for the first time to the Japanese nation. The Second Great War was over.

During its last stages, the war weariness inside Japan already manifest in 1943 grew, and by 1945 the possibility of defeat was admitted even in higher circles. On February 14, a Foreign Office spokesman said, "Shigemitsu's [the Foreign Minister's] principle is not to reject any hand which offers peace." On April 5, the day of the Soviet denunciation of the Russo-Japanese neutrality pact (see page 3566), General Koiso resigned, and a new cabinet was formed by Admiral Baron Kantaro Suzuki who in his first state-

**Internal  
Political  
Moves**





#### ALLIED AIR MIGHT OVER JAPAN

Over a thousand carrier-based aircraft of the U.S. 3rd Fleet staged an exercise off the coast of Japan on August 22, 1945, as a preliminary to the entry into Sagami and Tokyo bays of the Allied landing forces and the signing of the unconditional surrender aboard the U.S.S. 'Missouri' on September 2. Left, members of Admiral Halsey's staff examine charts of Tokyo Bay with Japanese pilots.

ment declared that the war situation "warrants not the least bit of optimism in our nation's survival." On May 22, a domestic broadcast by the Procurator General spoke of "a tendency towards peace agitation." During July, Tokyo radio hopefully prophesied a modification of the unconditional surrender demand, and followed this with a direct appeal to the United States for a "more lenient attitude," declaring that there were no problems between Japan and a "liberal" America.

their factories (*see* page 3290) became so serious that in January the Government issued an order aimed at compelling essential workers to stay in the bombed cities.

On March 10 a new mobilization law affecting all Japanese males between 12 and 60, females between 12 and 40 came into force. A week later it was announced that all schools, except those of the first grade, would be closed from April 1 for one year "in order to link pupils and teachers closely with

Though the Allied idea that Japan's "paper cities" would collapse under sustained bombing was exaggerated, there is no doubt that the powerful attacks of 1945, comparable with those rained on Germany in 1944, did relatively greater damage. The drift of workers from

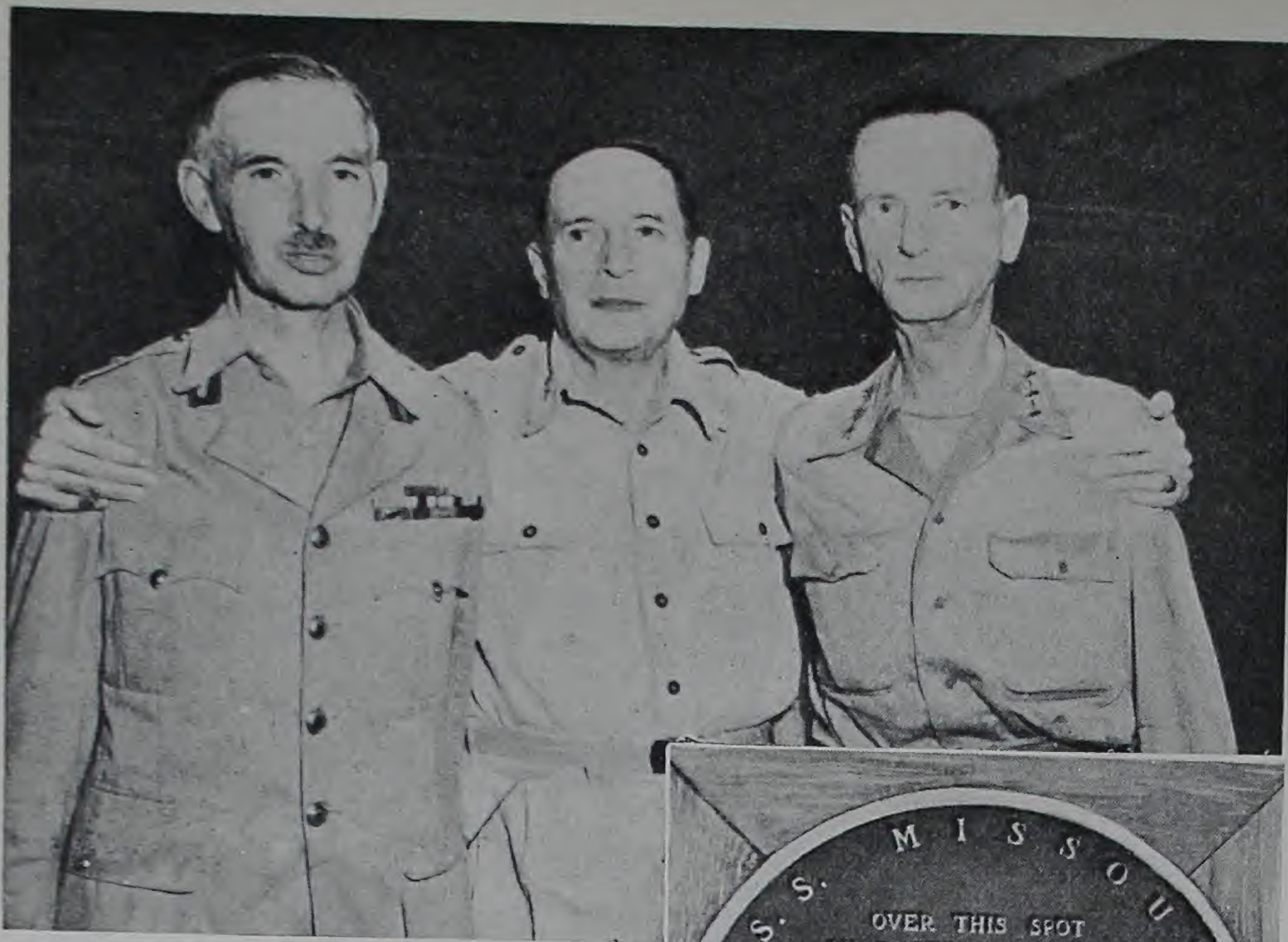
national defence and mobilize them for war production." Evacuation of civilians from defence areas, the speedy construction of fortifications, arrangements for the instruction of civilians in the handling of arms, the evacuation of children from the larger cities were also

#### Defence Against Invasion

announced during March. On May 21 came the mobilization of two million students in a Students Defence Corps; and on June 28 the formation of a special Army Command to strengthen the defences of Tokyo "in anticipation of Allied attempts at invasion." The mass evacuation of war factories to Manchuria was announced on June 29; while a Tokyo broadcast of July 2 stated that owing to the scale of the Allied air attack all but 200,000 people had been evacuated from the capital (whose normal population was some six millions).

A Tokyo broadcast of April 23 stated that from March 1 to the middle of April 700,000 houses had been destroyed, the industrial area of Tokyo being "mostly in ruins." The same station later declared that the raid of May 26 had "virtually laid waste what was





### AFTER THE SURRENDER

Lt.-Gen. A. E. Percival (left), British commander at Singapore in 1942, and Lt.-Gen. Jonathan Wainwright, who held out at Corregidor after General MacArthur's escape, stood behind the latter when he signed the surrender in Tokyo Bay on September 2, 1945 (see illus. in page 3824). Here the three commanders are seen together at Gen. MacArthur's H.Q. in Yokohama. Right, bronze plaque on the deck of the U.S.S. 'Missouri,' marking the site of the surrender ceremony.



once the world's third metropolis." On June 10, Domei said, "The Allies have achieved their first target in the invasion of Japan. Tokyo, Nagoya, Yokohama, Osaka and Kobe have ceased to exist. The nation must prepare for imminent battle on its own soil."

The Domei agency on August 23 gave a summary of casualties and damage resulting from Allied air attacks (including the atomic bomb damage) as 260,000 killed, 412,000 injured, 9,200,000 homeless, 2,210,000 houses demolished or burnt out, 44 of Japan's 206 cities almost completely wiped out, 30 per cent of the built-up areas of 37 others (including Tokyo) destroyed. The total of nearly ten million sufferers in one way or another represented nearly a sixth of the Japanese home population.

Allied observers, when they reached Japan, however, found the people in less desperate situation than these figures would suggest. In face of sustained attack, the great majority of city workers had migrated to the untouched country, where close family ties with the peasantry from which they had so recently sprung ensured that they would find shelter. When

the terror subsided the Japanese (as had the Chinese of Shanghai, Canton, Hankow and Nanking) returned to the cities and built themselves makeshift shanties on the sites of their former homes: in Japan, as in Germany, the Allies had to deal with a vast urban population living in squalor and want, pauperized by the destruction of the industries on which it had depended, cut off from its normal food supplies, yet clinging to the sites of its homes.

The breakdown of Japanese industry which preceded the surrender was due to the mass migration of the workers and to the Allied blockade, which prevented raw materials from reaching the country, rather than to air raid damage to factories. General MacArthur's first report on the state of Japan estimated, for instance, that at the end of the war her production industry was intact as to 73 per cent, her precision machine industry as to 88 per cent of total capacity. The power industry, reduced to 28 per cent of its wartime peak capacity, had suffered most: but even that remained capable of producing enough for normal home needs. Admiral Nimitz stated on October 5 that Japan's fighting forces were stronger on land and in the air at the time of her surrender than at the outbreak of war, but that her defeat was inevitable once she had been stripped of her sea power;

### Breakdown of Industry

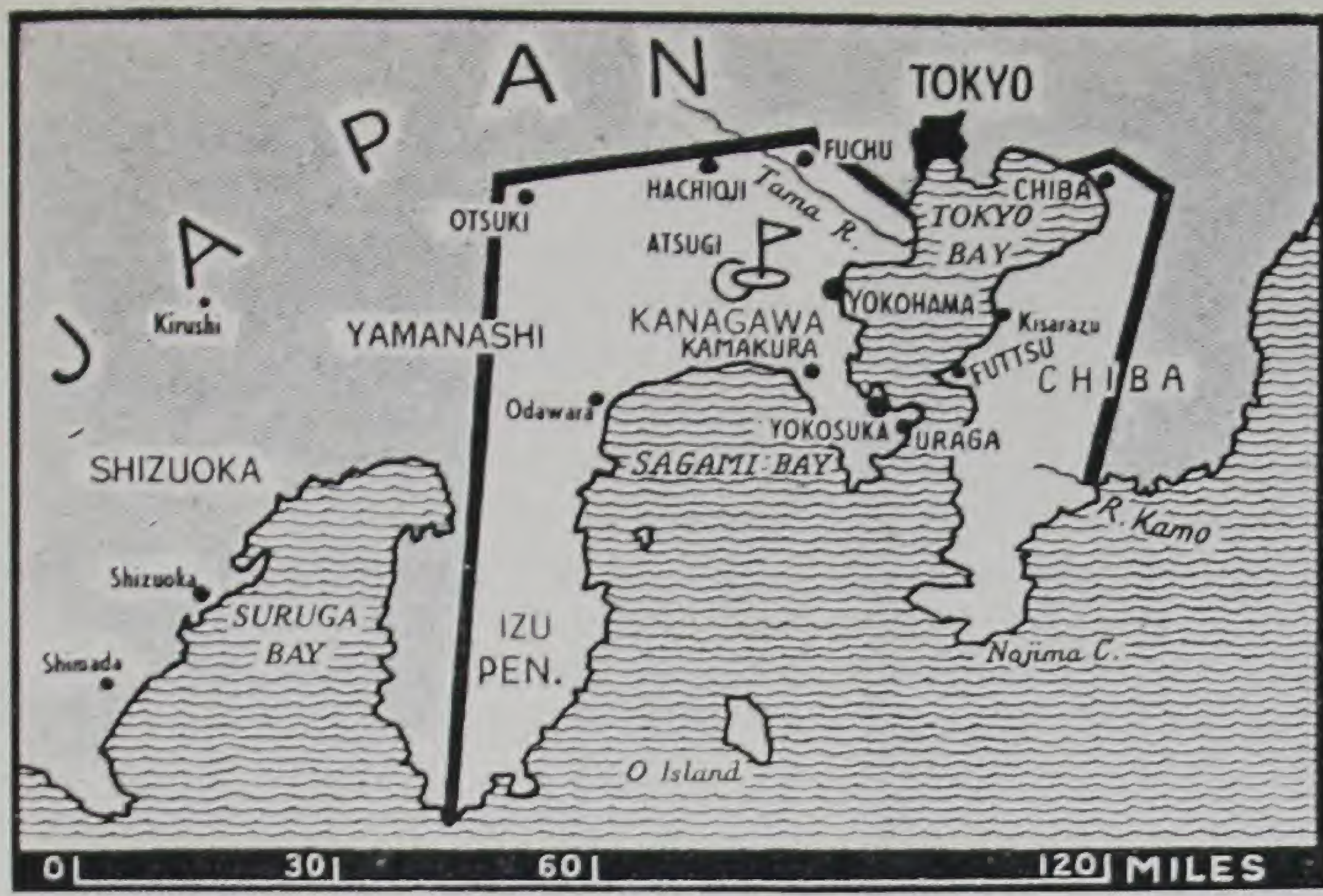


### GENERAL MACARTHUR LANDS IN JAPAN

On August 30, 1945, 42,000 U.S. troops, mostly airborne, entered Yokohama without incident and occupied a large part of the Kanto Plain surrounding Tokyo. In the afternoon General MacArthur arrived by air from Manila and set up his headquarters in the New Grand Hotel in Yokohama. The General, smoking a long-stemmed corn-cob pipe, is here about to land from his transport aircraft 'Bataan' at the Atsugi airfield.

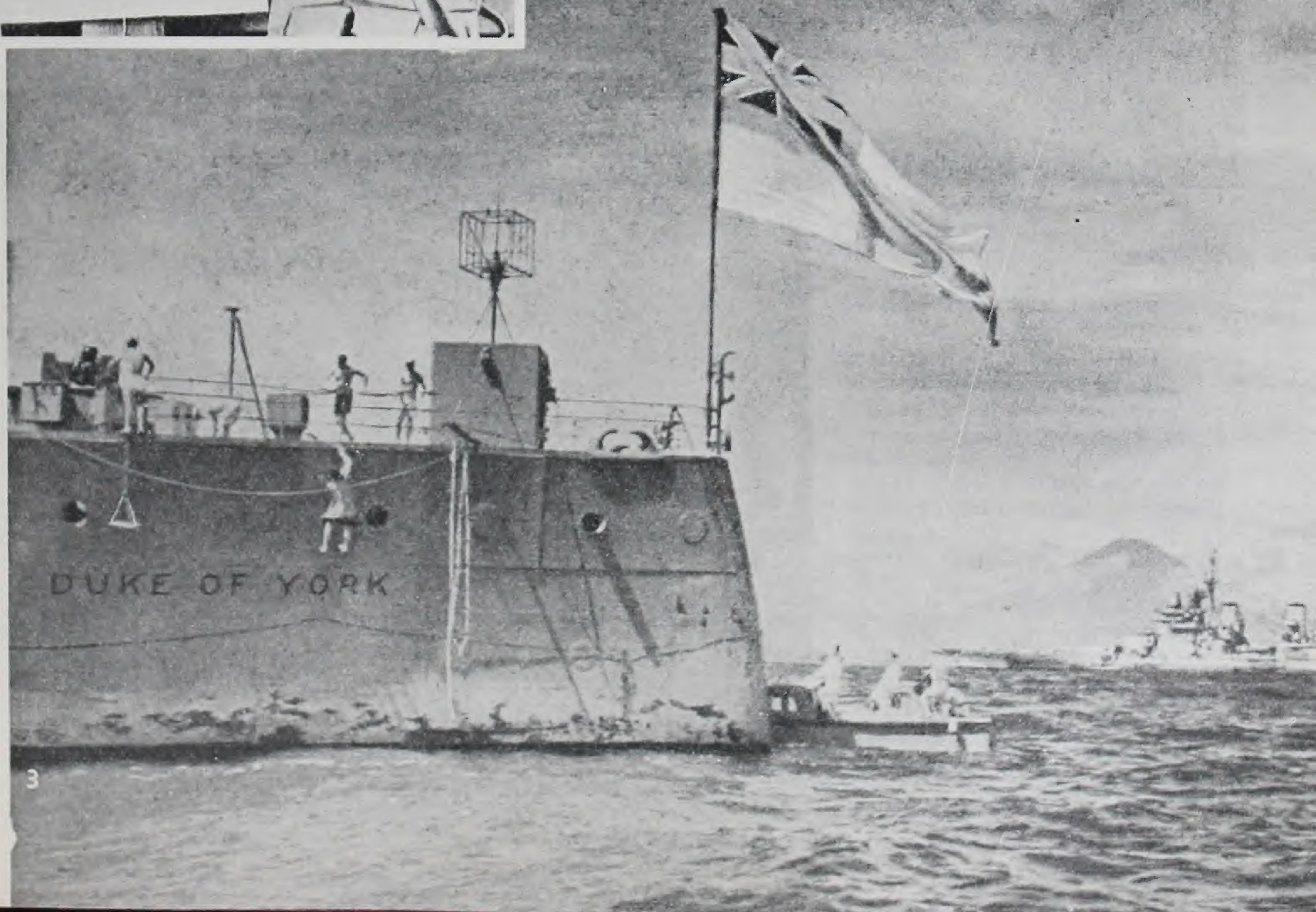
Photo. New York Times Photos





## BRITISH AND DOMINIONS FORCES IN JAPAN

Main landings of Allied forces in Japan began on August 30, 1945: five days earlier the Japanese had announced the impending withdrawal of their troops on Honshu from the area left white on the map. 1. Royal Marines take over a fort in Tokyo Bay. 2. An A.B. of the Royal Australian Navy puts up a notice outside British Landing Force H.Q. in Yokosuka. 3. H.M.S. 'Duke of York,' with H.M.S. 'King George V' in Sagami Bay.







General MacArthur reported that "while air raids destroyed important plants in the Tokyo area, shortage of raw materials was a more effective factor in curtailing production."

During the culminating battles of the war the increasing precariousness of Japan's economic and social position was reflected in the political situation. On

**Agitation for Reforms** January 14 Japan's Fascist-model single political party, the Imperial Rule Assistance Association, met with other sectional groups "to discuss changes in the political structure and urge the Government to take decisive steps to reform the administration." The following day the official news agency commented: "Newly developed factions are clamouring for a bold and unprecedented renovation . . . The agitation is becoming one of the matters of greatest concern to the people—equal

in importance to the concern over the situation in Luzon."

By the end of March, with Iwo Jima lost, with the remains of the Japanese Fleet crippled by naval air attack on its protected bases in the Inland Sea, and with the Americans approaching Okinawa, the influence of these "newly developed factions" became apparent. On March 30 the I.R.A.A. was dissolved and replaced by an organization known as the *Dai Nippon Seijikai*—the Political Association of Great Japan—with General Jiro Minami (commander of the Japanese Armies in Manchuria at the time of the 1931 "incident") as President. The new organization issued a manifesto declaring that Japan was already "a battlefield" and announcing its aim as the formation of "a strong organization from all circles." Within a week General Koiso had resigned (see page 3834). His successor, the 78-year-old courtier Admiral Suzuki (formerly Grand Chamberlain), brought Minami into the Cabinet as Minister without portfolio; while Shigenori Togo, Tojo's Foreign Minister who had conducted the diplomatic smoke-screen for Pearl Harbor, came back to the Foreign Office. Concealed behind the Imperial connexion of the aged Premier, the Japanese diehards were making their last throw.

#### Militarists' Last Throw

On May 15 the Japanese Cabinet decided that in view of Germany's



#### JAPANESE ARMED FORCES ARE DISBANDED

By September 30, 1945, 1,833,600 of the 2,253,000 Japanese troops in the homeland had been demobilized. Here, in a Tokyo street, the pavements strewn with their personal belongings, Japanese await disbandment. Above, small arms, ready for shipment, seized by U.S. forces at the Utsunomiya arsenal. Each piece was packed separately in oiled cloth to prevent rusting.



unconditional surrender (see page 3802), all treaties with her, including the Tripartite (Axis) Pact, had ceased to be operative. In June, parallel with the official and unofficial moves towards peace, Japanese propaganda moved to the theme of home defence. The "People's Volunteer Corps" was said to number a hundred million people (approximately the total population of the home islands). The Diet voted Suzuki dictatorial powers on June 10, and four days later he assured the Press that preparations for home defence were "complete and perfect."

In July Japan was under attack from the air and from the sea for 22 consecutive days and nights. Her de-



his G.H.Q. at Manila accompanied by competent Army, Navy and Air Force officers, the Japanese party to proceed on August 17 under safe-conducts in white-painted Japanese planes of a specified type from Satanomisaki (Kyushu)

#### MacArthur's First Order to Japanese

to the island of Ie, near Okinawa, whence they would be flown in American planes to Manila. The Japanese Government asked for, and was granted, an extension of the time limit for the despatch of envoys, the Emperor issuing on August 16, however, an Imperial rescript to the

### IN THE CITIES HIT BY ATOMIC BOMBS

Two bombs charged with the energy created by atomic fission were used by the Allies—one on Hiroshima on August 6, 1945, the other on Nagasaki two days later. 1. Nagasaki family returns to live in the ruins. 2. Bomb-victim at Hiroshima erects 'forward address' notice. 3. Hiroshima children wear masks as a protection against the odours rising from the ruins.

fence had been broken before the dropping of the atomic bombs gave her reason for surrender plausible to her own people.

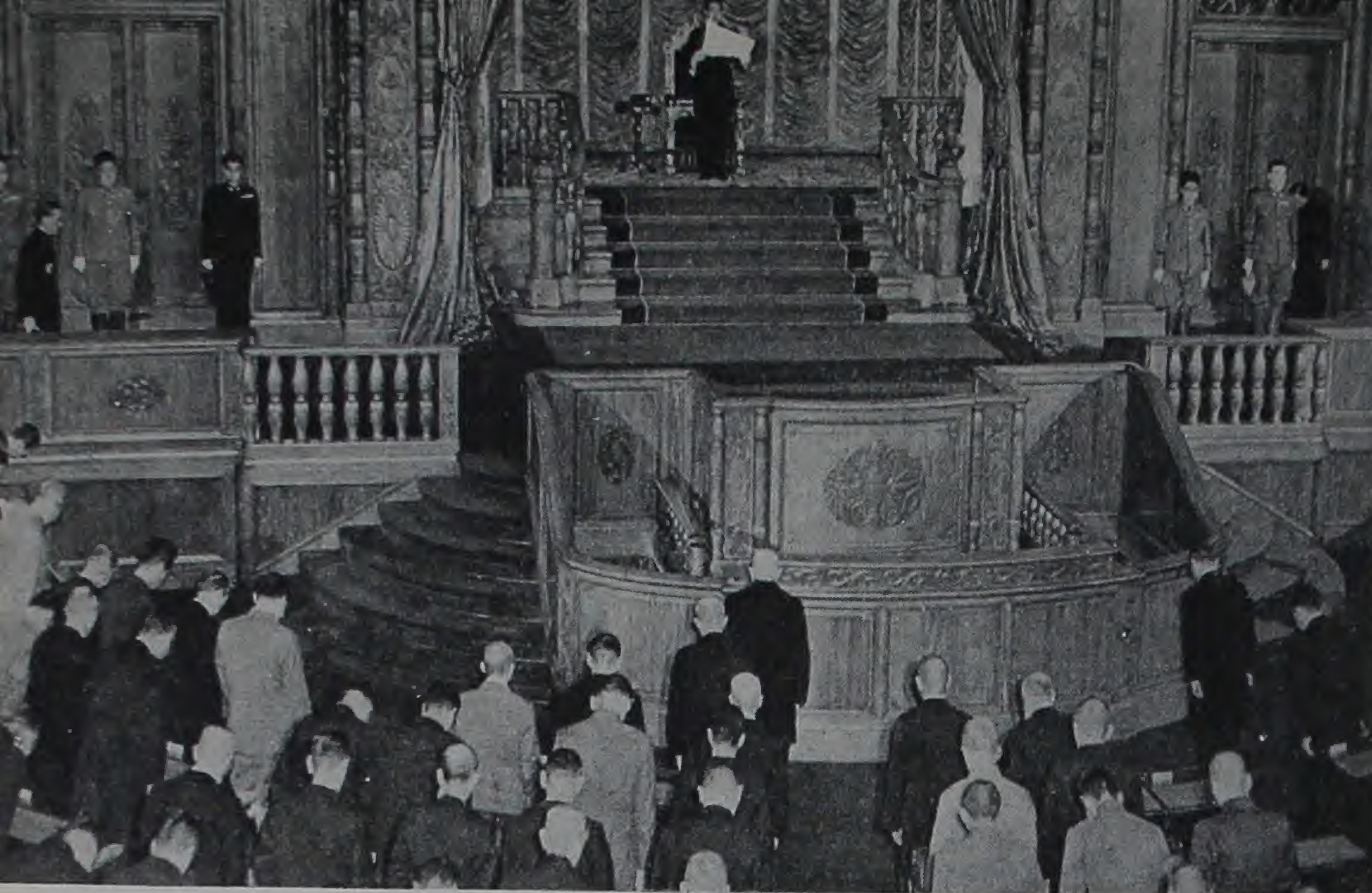
Admiral Suzuki resigned on August 15. His Ministers of War and of the Navy were joined by many lesser apostles of expansion in traditional suicide. The Suzuki Cabinet was replaced by an administration led by Hirohito's cousin, Prince Higashikuni. Shigemitsu, once more Foreign Minister, in a broadcast on August 18, said, "The Japanese people have been beaten and must revise their thinking." The *Dai Nippon Seijikai* was dissolved. The "100 million souls" of the "People's Volunteer Corps" were

disbanded on August 22, and the Supreme War Council was reconstituted as "a conference for the termination of the war."

On August 15, General MacArthur sent a radio message from Manila calling on Japan to cease hostilities immediately, and to send a Japanese representative to







### EMPEROR ADVISES COLLABORATION WITH THE ALLIES

In a forty-word rescript, the Emperor Hirohito on November 27, 1945, at the opening of the 89th session of the Japanese Diet, advised his people to do their best to carry out General MacArthur's orders. Although special seats had been reserved for them, no women attended the ceremony, which is shown above. Below, the Emperor greets the bows of his subjects in western style by removing his hat during a tour of industrial centres

*Photos, Keystone; Associated Press*

entire armed forces to cease hostilities immediately. Tokyo announced that three relatives of the Emperor, carrying his instructions, had left for Manchuria, China and the southern areas, and that the Japanese envoys for Manila would leave on August 19. They duly arrived at Ie whence they were flown to Manila.

Two days later the Japanese made the following announcement: "Our armed forces in the territory within a

**Allied  
Landing Area  
Cleared**

line extending from a point east of the Kamo river in Chiba Prefecture through the city of Chiba, the estuary of the Tama river, Fuchu, Hachioji, Otsuki to the southern end of Izu Peninsula will be made to evacuate this area as speedily as possible. Government offices and public institutions within the area will function as usual while the general public is required to go about its business calmly as usual." (See map in page 3837).

The greatest fleet of transport planes ever assembled had meanwhile been concentrated on Okinawa, some from as far away as Britain, Egypt and Australia. At the same time, powerful forces were converging on Japan by sea. Owing to a series of typhoons, the first Allied landings, timed for August 26, had to be postponed; the advance party landed by air on August 29, the main landings took place on the 30th.

Many thousands of Allied prisoners found in Japan were set free. Commander Harold Stassen, the Relief Commissioner charged with their care,



reported that not a single camp was humanely run. Eighty per cent of the prisoners were suffering from tuberculosis, pellagra, dysentery or beri-beri, due to diet deficiencies, and very many of them bore the marks of brutal ill-treatment.

The war ended formally at 10:30 a.m. Tokyo time (2:30 a.m. B.S.T.) on September 2 when the unconditional surrender of Japan (see Historic Document 307, page 3842) was signed on board the battleship U.S.S. "Missouri" in Tokyo Bay, which was filled by a great

Allied armada including powerful ships of the British Pacific Fleet. "Today the guns are silent. A great tragedy has ended. A great victory has been won," said MacArthur.

For the first time in her history, Japan was under foreign domination. General MacArthur entered Tokyo at the head of his troops on September 8. He at once announced the imposition of a press and radio censorship. On September 12 he ordered the dissolution of the Black Dragon society—the secret terrorist organization which for many years had played a predominant part in Japan's imperialistic policy, and had been responsible for many political assassinations—and the arrest of seven of its leaders.

General Hideki Tojo, Prime Minister from October 1941 to July 1944, tried to commit suicide on September 11 when U.S. troops arrived at his house to arrest him as a war criminal. Field-Marshal Sugiyama, C-in-C. of the

Japanese Home Army, committed suicide with his wife on September 12. Warrants were issued for the arrest of a number of other persons as war criminals; by September 17 all the members of the Pearl Harbor Cabinet were under arrest or dead. The names of the International War Crimes Tribunal, to sit in Tokyo, were announced by General MacArthur on February 18, 1946: they included Sir William Webb (Chief Justice of Queensland) as chairman, Justice Stuart McDougall of Canada, and Lord Patrick, a Scottish



judge, and Dean of the Faculty of Advocates of Scotland.

MacArthur ordered the elimination of all Japanese Government organizations which "establish or maintain restrictions on freedom of thought, religion, assembly or speech" on October 4. Twenty-one of the largest banks were seized on September 30. Prince Higashikuni resigned on October 8, and a new cabinet was formed under Baron Kijuro Shidehara. MacArthur ordered the enfranchisement of women on October 11.

On September 30, the Japanese War Ministry reported to the Allied Commander that 81 per cent (1,833,600)

#### Demilitarization Begins

of the 2,253,000 troops under arms in the homeland had been demobilized. Japanese Imperial G.H.Q. was formally closed down, and the Army General Staff disbanded, on October 16. An Imperial rescript of October 17, ordering the freeing of political prisoners, affected some million-and-a-half persons. The cultivation of the opium poppy, coca leaf, and hemp was forbidden on the 18th. A directive of November 6 ordered the immediate dissolution of the four biggest financial and industrial trusts in Japan. Conscription was abolished on November 9. All Imperial assets were "frozen" on November 20. The reform of the feudal system of land tenure was begun on December 9.

Most drastic, perhaps, of all changes was the abolition of Shintoism as the State religion on December 15. This



#### ENEMY SURRENDERS IN THE SOUTH-WEST PACIFIC

The surrender of the Japanese forces in the S.W. Pacific area was signed on board the aircraft-carrier H.M.S. 'Glory' in St. George's Channel, 28 miles south-east of Rabaul in New Britain on September 6, 1945. At a preliminary conference in the captain's cabin are (left to right) Admiral Kusaka, commanding the Japanese South-East Navy; General Imamura, Japanese C.-in-C., South-West Pacific; Lieutenant-General V. A. H. Sturdee, commanding the Australian 1st Army, who received the surrender; Brigadier E. L. Sheehan, and Captain W. Buzzard, R.N.

was followed on December 31 by the issue of an Imperial rescript to the Japanese people in which Hirohito repudiated "the false conception that the Emperor is divine and that the Japanese people are superior to other races and are fated to rule the world. The Emperor is not a living god."

An Allied directive of the same date ordered the suspension of all current teaching of Japanese history, geography, and morals in Japanese schools, text books and manuals on these subjects to be handed in at collecting centres.

New textbooks thoroughly purged of all militaristic teaching were to be distributed as soon as ready.

By the end of 1945 several organized political parties were forming, among them a Labour Party, a Liberal Party, the New Japan Party, demanding a curb on police powers, and the Centre Political Party, a right-wing group including many former members of the Diet. On January 13, 1946, MacArthur authorized the Japanese Government to hold general elections at a date not earlier than March 15 of that year.

The Soviet Government was anxious to see established in Japan an Allied Control Council which would act only on decisions reached by unanimous agreement; but this was strenuously opposed by the United

#### Allied Council for Japan

States, which, in view of difficulties in the Allied Control Council for Germany, considered that in case of disagreement the final word should be given to General MacArthur. The Foreign Ministers of Great Britain, the United States and the Soviet Union meeting in Moscow in December (see page 3564) agreed, with the concurrence of China, to the establishment of an Allied Council for Japan, with its seat in Tokyo, under the chairmanship of the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers (or his deputy), the other members representing the Soviet Union, China, and, jointly, the United Kingdom, Australia, New Zealand and India. General MacArthur, while expressing his intention to try to make this Council work, did not conceal that he regarded it as impracticable. He continued into 1946 to be effective Allied dictator of Japan.



#### DEATH SENTENCE FOR 'TIGER OF MALAYA'

The Japanese general Tomoyuki Yamashita, one-time conqueror of Singapore and Corregidor and known as the 'Tiger of Malaya,' was brought before an American military court at Manila in December 1945, charged with war crimes in the Philippines, sentenced to death and hanged on February 22, 1946. He here listens to the death sentence being pronounced by Major-General Russell B. Reynolds (seated, extreme left). Photos, Associated Press; British Official



*Historic Documents—CCCVII—CCCLIX*

## JAPAN SURRENDERS UNCONDITIONALLY TO THE ALLIES

The official text of the instrument of surrender signed by representatives of Japan on board the United States battleship "Missouri" in Tokyo Bay on September 2, 1945, and the terms of the "Potsdam Declaration" issued on July 26 by Mr. Churchill, President Truman, and President Chiang Kai-shek are given below. (See also page 302A.)

*Terms of Japan's Unconditional Surrender to the Allies,  
September 2, 1945.*

1. We, acting by common accord and on behalf of the Emperor of Japan, the Japanese Government, and Japanese Imperial General Headquarters, hereby accept the provisions in the declaration issued by the heads of the Governments of the United States, China, and Great Britain on July 26, 1945, at Potsdam and subsequently affirmed to by the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics.

2. We hereby proclaim the unconditional surrender to the Allied Powers of the Japanese Imperial General Headquarters and of all Japanese armed forces and all armed forces under Japanese control, wherever situated.

3. We hereby command all Japanese forces, wherever situated, and Japanese people to cause hostilities forthwith to preserve and save from damage all ships, aircraft, and military and civil property, and to comply with all requirements which may be imposed by the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers or by signature of the Japanese Government at his direction.

4. We hereby command the Japanese Imperial General Headquarters to issue at once orders to the commanders of all Japanese forces and all forces under Japanese control, wherever situated, to unconditionally themselves and all forces under their control.

5. We hereby command all civil, military, and naval officials to obey and enforce all proclamations, orders, and directives deemed by the Supreme Commander for the Allied Powers to be proper to effectuate this surrender and issued by him or under his authority, and we direct all such officials to remain at their posts and to continue to perform their non-combatant duties unless specifically relieved by him or under his authority.

6. We hereby undertake for the Emperor, the Japanese Government, and their successors to carry out the provisions of the Potsdam declaration in good faith, and to issue whatever orders and take whatever action may be required by the Supreme Command for the Allied Powers, or by any other designated representatives of the Allied Powers, for the purpose of giving effect to that declaration.

The 'Potsdam Declaration' of July 26, 1945,

*Target #* \_\_\_\_\_ *Unit* \_\_\_\_\_ *Year* \_\_\_\_\_  
*City* \_\_\_\_\_ *State* \_\_\_\_\_ *Zip* \_\_\_\_\_

It is intended and is subject to the approval of state and the appropriate Government.

德律風公司

© Copyright 2001 by the American Psychological Association or one of its allied publishers. This article is intended solely for the personal use of the individual user and is not to be disseminated broadly.

Approved by \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_  
 of the \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_  
 In the United States, President of \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_  
 United States of America, \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_  
 United States of America, \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_

*Raymond A. Anthony*  
 President, American Society of International Law

August 20, 1964

Journal of New District Management





*Photo, British Official*

### THE MEN WHO 'SHOT' THE WAR WITH CAMERAS

Some of the most vivid photographs of the war—in Burma as in other theatres—were the work of the Army Film and Photographic Unit (whose badge is reproduced in colour facing page 3483). Although the members of the A.F.P.U.—most of them professional press and film cameramen in civilian life—were non-combatants and were normally unarmed, they were frequently to be found in forward positions, collecting material for invaluable pictorial records of the war. At Tobruk, for instance, four sergeants of the A.F.P.U. were at work for an hour before the 8th Army reoccupied the town in 1942. Here, an A.F.P.U. cameraman records the struggle for an oilfield in Burma in 1945.



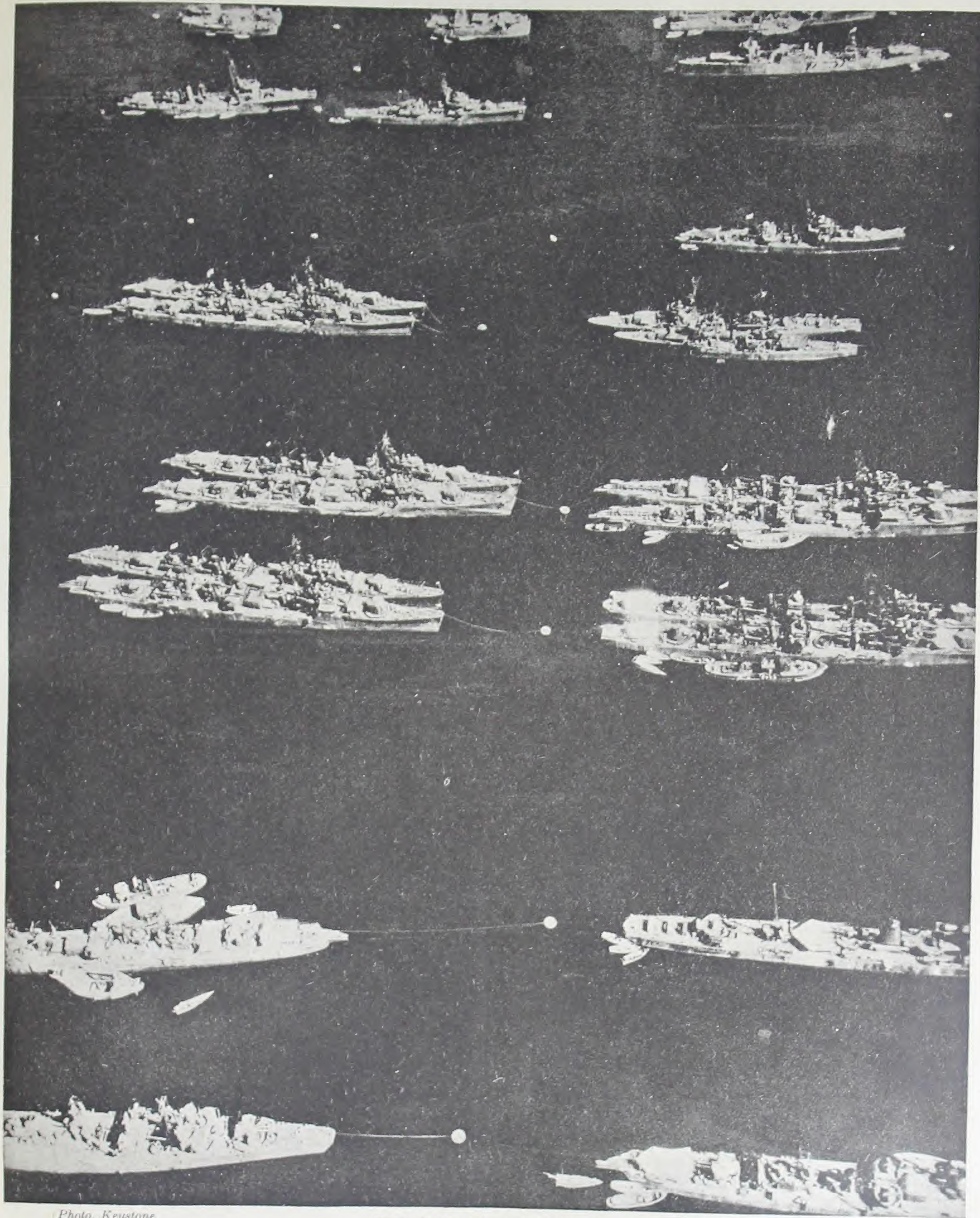


#### ALLIED PRISONERS RELEASED NEAR TOKYO

Accurate figures of Allied prisoners of war and internees in Japanese hands were difficult to obtain even after the war ended. Many prisoners had died in captivity and the enemy did not immediately give the Allies complete information as to the location of camps, especially of those in outlying districts. On August 22, 1945, the War Office announced that about 250,000 Allied nationals were held in some 150 camps in Asia and the Pacific islands. These included 38,000 British servicemen and 112,000 British civilians. Here, Allied nationals, released near Tokyo following the Allied landings in Japan at the end of August, greet their liberators.

*Photo, British Official*





Photo, Keystone

#### THE END OF JAPAN'S ONCE-POWERFUL FLEET

In the waters of Kure Bay, south of Hiroshima, in Japan's Inland Sea, these war vessels, remnants of the once-powerful Nippon fleet, lay at their moorings after the enemy's unconditional surrender on August 14, 1945. The remaining ships consisted of one battleship (the 26-year-old 32,720-tons 'Nagato'), four aircraft-carriers, four cruisers, 51 submarines and 38 destroyers. The battleship was destroyed in the atomic bomb test at Bikini on July 25, 1946; the aircraft carriers, cruisers and submarines were scuttled, and the destroyers distributed among the Allied Powers.





### BRITISH OCCUPATION FORCE TAKES OVER IN JAPAN

It was announced on January 31, 1946, that 'B.C.O.F.' (British Commonwealth Occupation Force) would help to occupy Japan. It was to represent Great Britain, Australia, New Zealand, and India, with Lt.-General J. Northcott, former Australian Chief of Staff, as C.-in-C. It also included a R.A.F., R.A.A.F., R.N.Z.A.F. and R.I.A.F. component and a British Pacific Fleet Squadron. Above, band of the Queen's Own Cameron Highlanders at Kure, where troops of the 2/5 Royal Gurkha Rifles (below) also parade. Right, badge of 'Brindjap,' the British and Indian contingent serving with B.C.O.F., which is commanded by Maj.-Gen. D. T. Cowan, C.B., C.B.E., D.S.O.

*Photos, Indian Official*





## REPORT ON THE EFFECTS OF THE ATOMIC BOMBS

Below is the end of the Potsdam declaration of July 26, 1945 (concluded from page 3842), and a summary of the report (published by H.M. Stationery Office in 1946, price 1s.) of a British Mission of scientists sent to Japan to study the effects of the atomic bombs dropped one on Hiroshima and the other on Nagasaki. [See Chapter 379, colour plate facing page 3862, illustrations on pages 3900 and 3901 and diagram on page 4034].

destroyed, points in Japanese territory designated by the Allies shall be occupied to secure the achievements of the basic objectives we are here setting forth.

8. The terms of the Cairo declaration [see page 2636] shall be carried out and Japanese sovereignty shall be limited to the islands of Honshu, Hokkaido, Kyushu, Shikoko and such minor islands as we determine.

9. The Japanese military forces after being completely disarmed shall be permitted to return to their homes with the opportunity of leading peaceful and productive lives.

10. We do not intend that the Japanese shall be enslaved as a race nor destroyed as a nation, but stern justice will be meted out to all war criminals, including those who have visited cruelties upon our prisoners. The Japanese Government shall remove all obstacles to the revival and strengthening of democratic tendencies among the Japanese people. Freedom of speech, of religion and of thought as well as respect for fundamental human rights shall be established.

11. Japan shall be permitted to maintain such industries as will sustain her economy and allow the exaction of just reparations in kind, but not those industries which will enable her to re-arm for war. To this end access to, as distinguished from control of, raw materials shall be permitted. Eventual Japanese participation in world trade relations shall be permitted.

12. The occupying forces of the Allies shall be withdrawn from Japan as soon as these objectives have been accomplished and there has been established, in accordance with the freely expressed will of the Japanese people, a peacefully inclined and responsible government.

13. We call upon the Government of Japan to proclaim now the unconditional surrender of all the Japanese armed forces and to provide proper and adequate assurances of their good faith in such action. The alternative for Japan is complete and utter destruction.

### The Effects of the Atomic Bombs at Hiroshima and Nagasaki.

**H**IROSHIMA stretches over flat ground in all directions for roughly two miles from the centre. The main commercial and residential area of Nagasaki lies on a small plain near the head of a long bay. From here the valley of the river Urakami runs north for three or four miles, and a smaller valley branches north-east for less than two miles; both valleys are narrow and are separated and flanked by abrupt hills rising in places to 1,000 feet. The smaller valley is crowded with dwellings without plan. The Urakami valley contained large steel, engineering and armament works, together with smaller factories and a host of home workshops with an attendant jostle of workers' dwellings.

Hiroshima had been virtually undamaged by air attack before the atomic bomb fell. The bomb exploded near its centre and thence spread its destruction with great uniformity. Directly or indirectly, it initiated innumerable fires among the wooden houses and workshops, which burned unchecked for days and gutted the Old Town and the industrial zone enclosing it. The more modern industrial buildings on the edge of the town, however, at  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles and more from the centre, escaped with only minor damage.

In Nagasaki the centre of damage was in the industrial area in the Urakami Valley. The harbour and the commercial area, nearly two miles distant, escaped with only minor damage; and so did the housing in the smaller valley, screened by the intervening ridge of hills.

Both in Hiroshima and in Nagasaki, the scale of the disaster brought city life and industry virtually to a standstill. Even the most destructive conventional attacks had no comparable effect in paralysing communal organization.

In great areas of destruction, rising here and there like islands, reinforced concrete buildings remained showing few signs of external damage. Reinforced concrete buildings of normal construction were usually safe from partial collapse

beyond 600 yards from the centre of damage, and from structural damage beyond  $\frac{1}{2}$  mile. Reinforced concrete buildings of very heavy construction in Hiroshima, within 200 yards of the centre of damage, remained structurally undamaged.

Light single-storey concrete buildings, such as are employed for factories and warehouses, failed at about a mile from the centre of damage in both cities. The most striking feature of damage to steel framed single-storey factory sheds was their mass distortion, in the direction away from the explosion.

Of the machines housed in these sheds, only five per cent had suffered serious damage from the atomic bomb. This low figure is to be ascribed to the absence of fire. Nearly two-thirds of all machines in the Urakami valley had been housed in smaller workshops and sheds of timber. These shops were burnt down almost without exception to a distance in excess of  $1\frac{1}{4}$  miles from the centre of damage; fifty per cent of the machines in them was destroyed or irreparably damaged.

Japanese houses are constructed on a frame of 4-in. or 6-in. square timbers. The roofs are a source of weakness, their covering of pantiles bedded in mud on  $\frac{1}{2}$ -in. boarding being disproportionately heavy. The walls are of bamboo covered with 3 ins. of mud, which is sometimes protected by  $\frac{1}{4}$ -in. boarding; much of the wall space is occupied by paper-covered screens. Complete collapse of these buildings from blast extended to  $1\frac{1}{4}$  miles from the centre of damage in Hiroshima, and to an average of  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles in Nagasaki. Fire completed the destruction almost to the same distance.

**P**EOPLE who were directly under the explosion in the open had their exposed skin burnt so severely that it was immediately charred dark brown or black; these people died within minutes or at most hours. Very severe burns were occasionally reported at nearly  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles from the centre of damage; mild burns at distances of  $2\frac{1}{2}$  miles and more.

Fire was not confined to wooden Japanese houses, but raged fiercely in many concrete buildings, in some machine shops, and in other buildings not normally subject to fire. It is certain that firespread did occur in both cities; but more striking is the vast numbers of separate points of fire.

The most important radio-active action at Hiroshima and Nagasaki appears to have been that from penetrating radiation, for convenience called gamma rays. The gamma rays pass through the skin without affecting it. They do not attack the cells in the blood-stream, but the primitive cells in the bone marrow, from which most of the different types of cells in the blood are formed. Therefore serious effects begin to appear only as the fully-formed cells already in the blood die off gradually and naturally, and are not replaced. Deaths probably began in about a week after the explosion, reached a peak in about three weeks, and had for the most part ceased after six or eight weeks.

It is estimated that people in the open have a fifty per cent chance of surviving the effects of gamma rays at  $\frac{3}{4}$  mile from the centre of damage. The gamma rays are capable of penetrating considerable thickness of building and other material.

The effects of gamma rays on human reproduction necessarily form a long-term study, but at distances up to  $1\frac{1}{4}$  miles from the centre of damage, pregnant women who survived had either miscarriages or premature infants who died very soon. Two months after the explosion miscarriages, abortions, and premature births throughout Hiroshima were nearly five times as frequent as in normal times, and formed more than one quarter of all deliveries. Sperm counts made in Hiroshima show that a high proportion of men exposed to gamma rays, up to perhaps  $\frac{3}{4}$  miles from the centre of damage have reduced power of reproduction.

Official casualty figures for Hiroshima are 78,150 dead, as well as 13,983 missing. Those killed by air attack during the whole war throughout Great Britain, including London, numbered 60,000. The standard figure for an atomic bomb in British conditions would be approximately 50,000 dead.





#### ROOSEVELT'S FOURTH TERM

Franklin Delano Roosevelt, 32nd President of the U.S., only President to be chosen for more than two terms, died on April 12, 1945, at Warm Springs, Georgia, aged 63. On January 20, 1945, when he spoke his fourth inaugural address, it was America's first wartime Presidential inauguration since Lincoln. 1. Delivering his fourth inaugural address from the White House. On his left is his son, Colonel James Roosevelt. 2. Disabled soldiers listen to the speech. 3. The funeral procession passes down Delaware Avenue, Washington, to the Capitol. 4. Tomb at Hyde Park, New York, Roosevelt's birthplace. Below, memorial coin struck in January 1946.



FRANKLIN DELANO ROOSEVELT  
1882 — 1945  
ANNA ELEANOR ROOSEVELT  
1884 —



# AMERICA AT THE WAR'S END AND AFTER

*The emotional impact on the American people of the atomic bomb and of the death of President Roosevelt ranked with that of the end of the Second Great War. Quick acceptance of President Truman and rapid progress toward reconversion, despite a post-war wave of strikes, eased the transition from war to peace, states Selden Menefee, author of "Assignment: U.S.A.," and of Chapters 251, 294, and 321 in this history of the year 1945.*

**I**N terms of its emotional impact on the American people, the sudden death of Franklin Delano Roosevelt, in his thirteenth year as President, tops the list of events in the United States during 1945. His sudden passing was a profound shock to his friends and enemies alike. Men who had sneeringly referred to him as "that man in the White House" during the 1944 election campaign first were incredulous, then wept when they heard the news.

For three days the nation was in deep mourning. Flags everywhere were at half mast, most shops were closed. Tens of millions of Americans felt the loss as deeply as if a member of their own families had died.

**Death of Roosevelt** A woman in Detroit said, "It doesn't seem possible. It seems to me that he will be back on the radio to-morrow, telling us that it was just a mistake." Soldiers on Okinawa cried unashamedly. When the President's body was brought by train from Georgia to Washington, D.C., silent crowds lined the tracks at every town. Half of Washington's population turned out to pay tribute to the flag-draped coffin on its black horse-drawn hearse as it was taken from the railway station to the White House. And when it had passed, an elderly Negro woman remained sitting on the Pennsylvania Avenue kerb, rocking back and forth and crying: "Oh, he's gone. He's gone for ever. I loved him so. He's never coming back. . . ."

For the common people of America, over the years Franklin D. Roosevelt had evolved from a friend into a father-symbol—someone on whom they knew they could depend. Many Americans in uniform could not remember any other president. They knew him as the man who foresaw America's entry into the war and did his best to prepare for it, against Congressional opposition—and the man who started to prepare for peace long before victory was won, by proposing that the United Nations be made a permanent organization for enforcing world peace. When a nationwide opinion poll asked Americans late in 1945 to name "two or three of the greatest men who have ever lived in

this country," Franklin D. Roosevelt was named by 61 per cent, Abraham Lincoln by 57 per cent, and George Washington by 46 per cent.

After the first shock of Roosevelt's death, all eyes turned on President Truman, who was not well known to the American people. He was something of a political accident—an average Midwesterner from Missouri who failed in business after the last war, who had been a local politician until the notorious Boss Tom Pendergast of Kansas City decided to back him for the Democratic nomination to

the U.S. Senate in 1934. Truman remained loyal to Pendergast even after he was sent to jail; but no breath of scandal had ever touched Truman. In the Senate he had made his mark. As a hard-working, liberal, conscientious Senator he won an enviable reputation as head of a Committee to investigate war expenditures. In 1944 he was a compromise selection for the Vice-Presidency, accepted by the Democratic politicians who feared that Vice-President Henry Wallace was too liberal to be acceptable to the right wing of the Party. Truman campaigned well, but



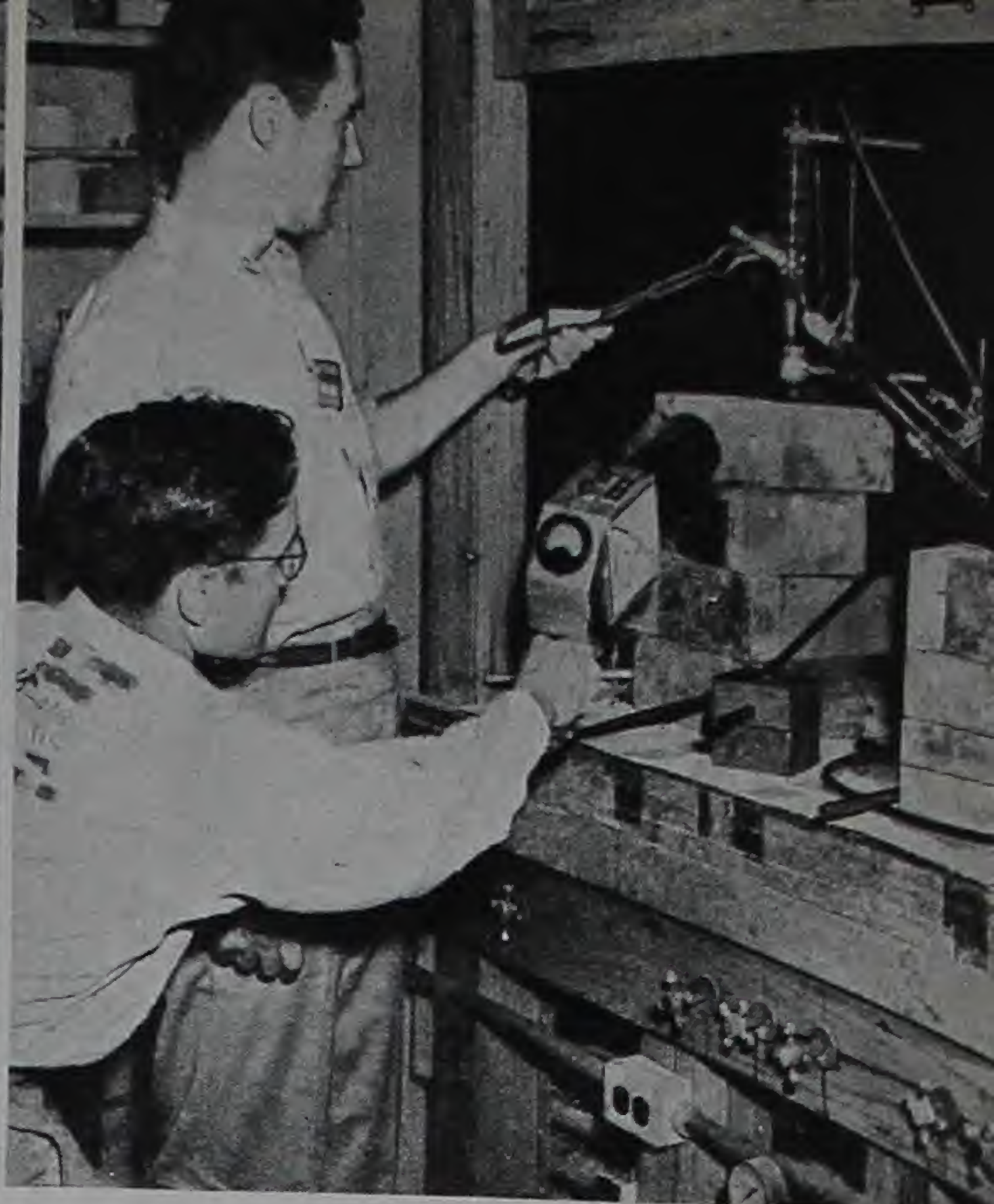
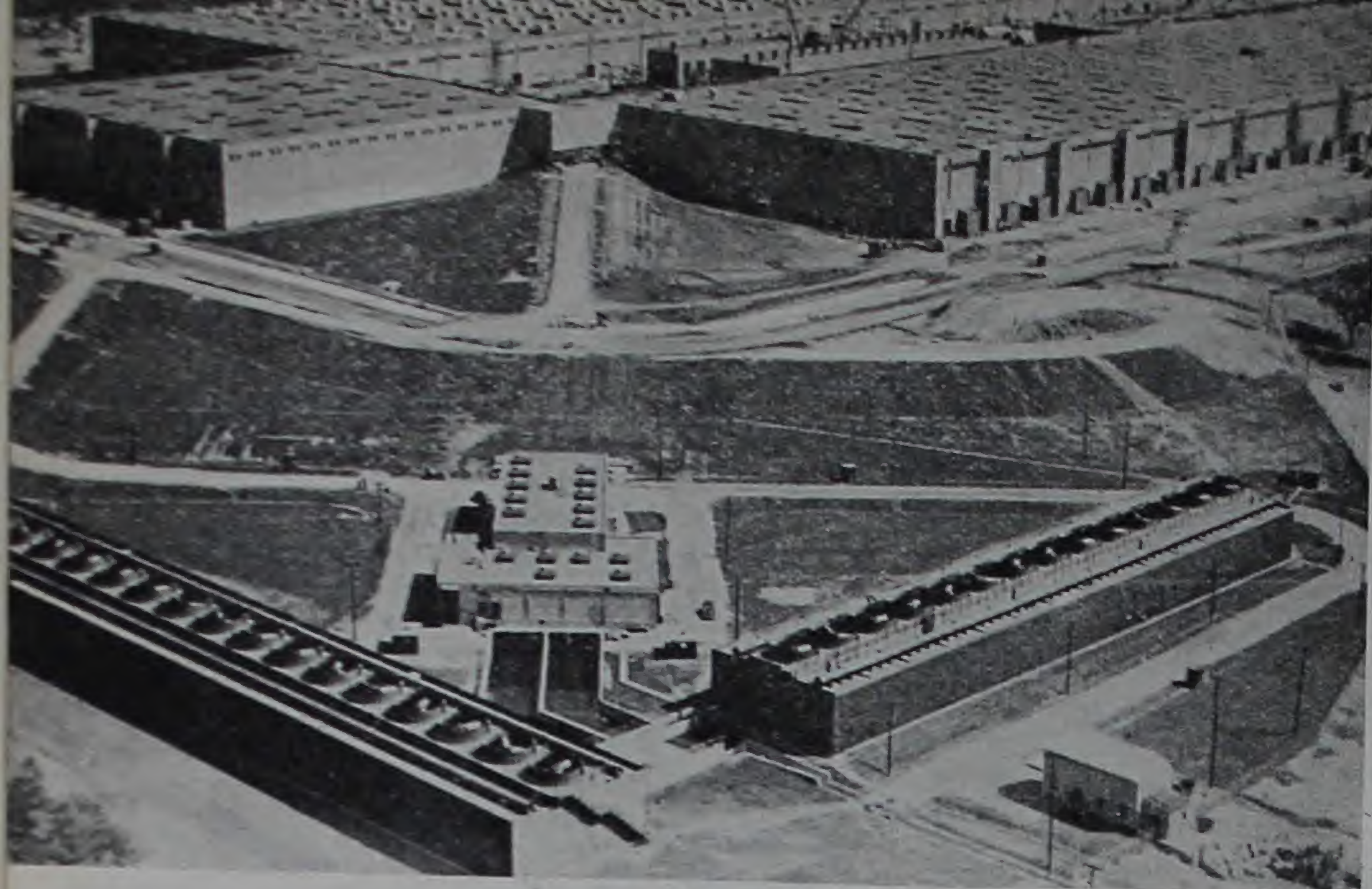
## EISENHOWER'S RETURN

General Dwight David Eisenhower, Supreme Allied Commander in Western Europe, arrived in Washington on June 18, 1945, after triumphal receptions in Paris and London. Next day he was given a thunderous welcome in New York. Left, 'V for Victory' sign at a Washington reception. Above, Mayor La Guardia presents him with the freedom of New York.

after the election he faded out of the public eye except on such occasions as when he appeared at a National Press Club party and played the piano while cinema actress Lauren Bacall sang torch songs. What kind of a President would he make?

Mr. Truman won the country by his modesty and humility. It was a relief





### TENNESSEE HOME OF THE ATOMIC BOMB

The atomic bomb (see Chapter 379) was first used operationally at Hiroshima on August 6, 1945 (see page 3795). Here is the vast Clinton plant at Oakridge, near Knoxville, Tennessee, where part of the apparatus for constructing it was located. Right, research-workers, wearing special uniforms with chest-badges containing film to record radiation exposure.

*Photos, New York Times Photos; Associated Press*

even to some of Roosevelt's staunchest supporters to have an average American, a man whom they could always understand, in high office. Truman courted Congress, hoping to avoid the bad relations with the Senate and House which had dogged the Roosevelt Administration. He made it clear that he was no crusader, but only a man who was pledged to keep the gains of the preceding twelve years, win the war, and see the country safely into the peace.

By the end of June a poll gave 87 per cent approval of the way he was handling his job, and only 3 per cent disapproved. This surpassed even Roosevelt's peak of popularity. In September a poll was taken on the President's handling of U.S. foreign relations. Some 24 per cent said "excellent," 48 per cent "good," and only one per cent "poor." (The rest were undecided.)

As the battle for Germany drew to a close, talk of the post-war world reached a new peak. The newspapers devoted columns of space daily to the San Francisco Conference (see Chapter 381), and more columns to the controversy over when reconversion should begin. V.E. Day came as a bit of an anti-climax after the gradual breakdown of the German military machine and after at least two false reports of surrender. New York and a few other cities held impromptu celebrations on May 7, but in most places people went about their work in war plants and shops with the remark, "Well, that's two down and one to go." In San Francisco there was no public demonstration whatsoever.

When, however, General of the Army Dwight D. Eisenhower, after a triumphal reception in London and Paris, arrived by air in Washington on June 18, he had an enthusiastic welcome from hundreds of thousands of people as he drove to address Congress. Next day in New York he was given an overwhelming ovation from crowds estimated at four million, in the evening receiving the Freedom of New York from Mayor La Guardia. Eisenhower's appointment as Chief of Staff of the Army was announced on November 20, following the retirement of General Marshall, who, past the statutory retiring age of 64, was subsequently appointed the President's special envoy in China (see page 3778).

On V.J. Day, enthusiastic San Franciscans staged a three-day celebration that bordered on mob disorder. Even staid Washington had a night of delirious celebration, as did

nearly every American city. Most Americans identified themselves emotionally with the Pacific war much more than with the European war, and only after Japan's surrender did they feel a sense of release.

American war workers had turned in a good performance on the production lines. In the five years since the fall of France, U.S. industry and labour had turned out 297,000 combat planes, 3,600,000 trucks, 86,000 tanks, 87,000 warships of all sizes, 5,200 merchant ships, 434 million tons of steel, and 41,000 million rounds of ammunition. The war had cost more than £71,000 million, or more than the expenditures of the British Commonwealth and Empire and the Soviet Union combined; and it had cost 252,146 American lives, out of a total of 1,070,000 casualties. The cost was high but few begrudged it. The war had been a heavy drain also on American resources—some experts estimated that United States oil supplies would last only twelve more years at wartime rates of consumption, and her iron ore only eight years.

During the war, living standards reached and remained on a level



#### TRIBUTE TO U.S. MARINES

A special three-cent stamp commemorating the achievements of the U.S. Marines in the Second Great War was issued on July 11, 1945. Purple in colour, it depicted the raising by U.S. Marines of the American flag on Mount Suribachi, the volcano commanding Iwo Jima, on February 23, 1945 (see illus. in page 3767)



higher than ever before in the nation's history. When hostilities ended, petrol rationing was dropped. Shoe rationing soon followed. In November all food rationing, except of sugar, was ended, with the world sugar shortage making rationing of that commodity probable until 1947. Some shortages still persisted at the end of the year, especially of meats and fats; but farm production was so high that food rationing was felt to be no longer necessary.

The country was, however, faced by a real danger of inflation. Living costs had risen by about a third during the war, and threatened to go higher because of the shortage of consumers' goods as compared with the demand. Price controls were therefore extended to the middle of 1946, despite some business opposition, and manufacturers made strenuous efforts to turn over to peacetime production.

The Army started cancelling contracts in April, when the Allies were sweeping through Germany. More orders were revised after V.E. Day; and in the week following the dropping of the atomic bomb on

**Army  
Contracts  
Cancelled**

Hiroshima, the armed services sent out 30,000 telegrams cancelling the great bulk of remaining contracts. Almost immediately after victory, shipment of the armed forces home began. By the end of the year, over half of the 8,000,000 men in the Army had been demobilized, and nearly half of the 3,750,000 men in the Navy. Supply of civilian clothes to the demobilized caused such a drain on supplies that a civilian could not buy a shirt or suit of standard quality and size.

The housing shortage was an immense problem. During the war, residential construction had been limited to war housing, much of it temporary. Now some 3,000,000 returning men needed homes. There were none available in the larger cities except for purchase at inflated prices. More than a million families were sharing accommodation with others, and many people were living in trailer-caravans. In Atlanta, Georgia, 2,000 people answered an advertisement for a single flat. In Minneapolis, Minnesota, a man, his wife and baby spent seven freezing December nights in their car because they could not find even an hotel room. Home construction went slowly because materials were scarce and costs so high that houses of a type which sold for £1,500 before the war could not be built to sell for less than £2,500.

Reconversion brought the index of industrial production, which had reached a peak of 232 per cent of the pre-war

level in February and March, down to 163 per cent in October. Then it started to rise again. New cars, refrigerators and vacuum cleaners began to appear in shop windows, though few were available for purchase as yet.

Before the war's end, government economists had predicted that 8,000,000 people would be unemployed during the reconversion period; but at the end of 1945 the number without work was still under 2,000,000. Many women war workers had left the labour market, and many demobilized men were taking a rest before starting to work again. Low-paid jobs in service industries were still going begging. It was anticipated, however, that the £40,000 million national income of 1945 would decline to £30,000 million in 1946.

The greatest threat to an ordered changeover to peace economy was the wave of strikes. Patriotic pledges had held back both union leaders and members from striking during the war; but four days after V.J. Day the United Auto Workers (C.I.O.) presented the automobile industry with a demand for a thirty per cent wage increase, so that the workers' "take-home pay" would be as large for the peacetime forty-hour week as it had been for 48 hours (with 8 hours at overtime rates) during the war. The U.A.W. selected General Motors, the largest company, for the initial test, and called out 175,000 G.M. workers late in November. This in turn affected other companies depending on G.M. for parts. President Truman appointed a fact-finding board to try to



**KING AND PRESIDENT MEET IN PLYMOUTH SOUND**

H.M. King George VI and President Harry S. Truman of the United States met on board the 32,000-ton battle-cruiser H.M.S. 'Renown' as she lay off Plymouth Sound on August 2, 1945. The President, who was on his way back to the U.S. from the Potsdam Conference (see Chapter 380), lunched with the King and afterwards received him on board the American cruiser 'Augusta.' The two heads of State are here pacing the quarterdeck of the 'Renown.'

*Photo, G.P.U*



Three-fourths of the public thought that social security legislation should be extended to cover all workers, instead of excluding those in homes, on farms and in very small businesses. And by a vote of five to two, Americans told interviewers for the National Opinion Research Centre that they thought President Truman should take a stronger stand in trying to get Congress to carry out his recommendations.

The record of Congress was much better in the international field than in domestic affairs. Congress approved the ratification by the Senate of the United Nations Charter on July 28 by a vote of 89 to 2, after only two weeks of hearings and debate. Every measure presented by the Administration in the field of foreign policy was similarly approved, although sometimes by much narrower margins. After some delay, the full appropriations requested by U.N.R.R.A. were voted. Membership in the Food and Agriculture Organization was approved. The Reciprocal Trade Agreements Act was renewed and extended, and the lending powers of the Export-Import Bank increased. The Bretton Woods agreements for an International Bank and Monetary Fund were approved after a bitter fight. The entire Administration programme for an orderly expansion of world trade was thus approved by the same Congress that blocked the entire Administration domestic programme.

The end of the war was the signal for President Truman, on August 15, to release the findings of the Army and

#### Pearl Harbor Inquiries

Navy inquiry boards into the circumstances which had enabled the Japanese to make so successful an attack on Pearl Harbor on December 7, 1941. The Navy report criticized Rear-Admiral Husband Kimmel, in command of Pearl Harbor at the time, and Admiral Harold Stark, C-in-C. Pacific Fleet, though it found no "serious offences committed nor serious blame incurred" by any of its personnel. The Army report extended its censure from Lieutenant-General Walter Short, in command at Hawaii at the time, to include Mr. Cordell Hull, the Secretary of State, and General George C. Marshall, the Chief of Staff. Courts-martial were not recommended, but the reports did tell a shocking tale of unpreparedness, confusion and lack of co-operation between the service branches.

On September 6 the Senate voted unanimously for a Congressional investigation, and eight days later a committee of ten, all lawyers—five members of the Senate, five of the House



#### U.S. INDUSTRY TURNS FROM WAR TO PEACE

By the end of 1945, America's major industries were being reconverted to produce peacetime goods. Above, workers in a California factory finish a wartime order for aircraft wings, while in the foreground others produce food cabinets and soda-fountain equipment. Below, some of the 40,000 U.S.A.A.F. aircraft on an Arkansas dump. Engines and other salable parts have been removed, while the metal is earmarked for salvage.

*Photos, Associated Press; Keystone*



of Representatives—was set up. It opened its investigations on November 15; its report, issued after it had listened for weeks to testimony from almost everybody still living who had had any connexion with the disaster, was published on July 21, 1946. Eight members signed the majority report which, placing the blame squarely on

the local commanders, Admiral Kimmel and General Short, found them guilty of errors of judgement, but not of dereliction of duty.

They exonerated President Roosevelt (placed first in the list accused by the two Senators who signed a sharp and bitter dissent from the majority report) from all blame; but both the War and



bring the sides together, and asked the board to examine the company's books to determine whether the increase could be afforded. But G.M. refused to agree to this procedure, arguing that ability to pay was no criterion for wage increases, and its representatives walked out of the hearing. Industrialists generally seemed disposed to stage a sit-down strike rather than submit to peacetime regulation of profits and higher wage rates. At the end of the year over 400,000 workers were on strike, and if the stoppages spread, increasing lack of consumer goods, with a consequent increased danger of inflation, threatened the country. The danger was heightened by the facts that union membership had

soared during the war to a total of 14,500,000 members, while industry had acquired a cushion of some £10,000 million in wartime profits with which to soften the impact of labour troubles.

During his first months in office, President Truman followed a middle-of-the-road course in domestic politics. But with the war's end, he asked the Congress to enact a far-reaching programme providing for legal authority for his fact-finding committees on labour disputes, government planning for full employment, increased unemployment compensation, extension of social security legislation, protection of Negro job rights, a housing programme, and other liberal measures as a precaution

against post-war chaos. A combination of Republicans and conservative Democrats operated through the peculiar American system of Congressional committees to bottle up virtually all of this legislation before it could come to a vote.

The American public was disposed to back Truman. The C.I.O. was critical of his proposal to give fact-finding committees power to delay and investigate strikes; but labour supported every other portion of his programme. A majority of Americans believed that big businessmen were making more than a fair profit, and that the government should have the right to decide what a fair profit was. Nine out of ten wanted price control continued; two-thirds of all Americans favoured the forty-hour week, and almost as many favoured a legal minimum wage of 65 cents an hour.

**Public  
Backing  
for Truman**

### NEW YORK CELEBRATES JAPAN'S DEFEAT

Although the defeat of Japan was not officially celebrated in the United States until September 2, 1945, after the signature of the surrender terms in Tokyo Bay (see page 3824), there were wild scenes of enthusiasm as soon as the news of the 'cease fire' came through on August 15. Here a vast crowd gathers in Times Square, New York, round a replica of the famous Statue of Liberty erected as part of the 'drive' for the purchase of Liberty Bonds.

*Photo, Pictorial Press*







### ALLIED FAR EASTERN ADVISORY COMMISSION

On August 22, 1945, Washington proposed the creation of an Allied Far Eastern Advisory Commission to 'formulate policies for the carrying out of the Japanese surrender terms,' a proposal agreed to at the London Council of Foreign Ministers in September. The Commission's first meeting was held on October 29 at the State Department, Washington, under the chairmanship of Major-Gen. Frank R. McCoy. Russia was not represented. Front row, left to right: Mr. T. A. Stone (Canada); Mr. C. A. Berendsen (New Zealand); Mr. P. E. Naggiar (France); Mr. Wei Tao-ming (China); Lord Halifax (Great Britain); Mr. James F. Byrnes (U.S.A. Secretary of State); Dr. A. Loudon (Netherlands); Dr. H. V. Evatt (Australia); Major-Gen. McCoy (U.S.); Sir Girja Shahkar Bajpai (India); and General Carlos Romulo (Philippines). Photo, Keystone

Navy Departments were held to have failed in the full discharge of their duties, officers named in the committee's censure including Lieutenant-General Leonard Gerow (who commanded the U.S. 15th Army in Europe—see illus. in page 3797) and Admiral R. K. Turner

(director of amphibious operations in the Pacific—see illus. in page 2882).

The ending of Lend-Lease shortly after V.J. Day created hardly a ripple in the United States. The British reactions to President Truman's announcement on the subject, which

Britons considered unnecessarily abrupt, caused some surprise. Congress had voted Lend-Lease for war purposes only, and would have bitterly opposed its extension after the end of hostilities. The American public was never well-informed on the subject of Lend-Lease; more than two-thirds of the people thought that the United States should be paid back for the war materials sent to Britain, and almost as many did not know that they were getting "mutual aid" from Britain—the total value of such reciprocal aid up to June 30, 1945, being £1,080,300,000. Sixty-five per cent of college graduates, but only 29 per cent of those who had simply passed through the elementary schools, knew about "reverse lend-lease."

Opinion was similarly uninformed in regard to the British mission headed by Lord Keynes which came to America in September to negotiate a grant or loan to assist in restoring Britain's trade.

### PEARL HARBOR INQUIRY

On November 15, 1945 a U.S. Congressional committee of inquiry into the Pearl Harbor attack in 1941 began its sittings in Washington. It consisted of five members of the Senate and five of the House of Representatives. The Committee (right) here examines the first two witnesses. On the walls are relief maps of the Hawaiian islands.

Photo, Keystone





In a Gallup poll held while the negotiations were on, disapproval of "a loan of three to five thousand million dollars to help England get back on her feet" was expressed by sixty per cent, approval by only 27 per cent. Behind this unfavourable opinion was the memory of unpaid loans after the First Great War, kept alive by isolationist propagandists.

Lord Keynes was considered by American officials to be an extremely able negotiator, and the terms finally agreed

upon undoubtedly were as favourable as Congress could be expected to approve. When the agreement was announced early in December, after twelve weeks of negotiation, the concessions made by the British were sufficient to gain widespread editorial approval in the American press. One factor in favour of the loan was the widespread realization that American prosperity as well as military

security depended on full participation in world affairs.

The agreement was for a total U.S. loan of \$4,400,000,000 (£1,100,000,000) to Britain, consisting of a credit agreement for \$3,750,000,000 (£937,500,000), to be spent mainly on American goods needed for reconverting British industry, and a final sum in settlement of Lease-Lend of \$650,000,000 (£162,500,000). The credit, which could be drawn upon at any time between the date of ratification of the agreement and December 31, 1951, was to be repaid over a fifty-year period starting on December 31, 1951, with interest at two per cent, except during years when Britain's income from home-produced exports and invisible current transactions was less than the average annual amount of U.K. imports during 1936-38. For her part Britain agreed to support the American programme for an international policy of lowering barriers to world trade, including the modification of the sterling bloc policy after one year, and acceptance of the Bretton Woods proposals (see page 3256). The loan agreement, approved by the British Parliament before the end of the year, was ratified by Congress, after a stiff fight in both the Senate and the House of Representatives, on July 13, 1946.

The American public was profoundly shaken by the news of the atomic bomb. A great majority approved the use of the bomb as a means of ending the war; but they viewed it with mixed feelings, nevertheless, because of the danger that

it might be used against the United States at some future time. Most people realized that within a very short period—possibly five years—other countries could develop their own atomic bombs; nevertheless, they felt that such secrets as America possessed should be kept under American control for as long as possible. In the background was a feeling of guilt over having unleashed this new death-dealing device. Most Americans believed that in the end mankind would be better off as a result of atomic fission, and that it will make future wars less likely; but five people out of six thought that there was a real danger of the world's urban population being annihilated in another war.

Mr. Clement Attlee, British Prime Minister, and Sir John Anderson, who had supervised atomic energy research for the British War Cabinet, arrived by air in Washington on November 10 for talks between the United States, Britain and

**Mr. Attlee Visits the United States**

Canada on atomic energy, the conference lasting from November 11-14. A joint statement, signed by President Truman, Mr. Attlee and Mr. Mackenzie King and issued on November 15, declared their willingness to exchange fundamental scientific information with other of the United Nations that would fully reciprocate as soon as effective, enforceable safeguards against its use for destructive purposes could be devised, and advocated the setting up at



### BRITISH PREMIER IN WASHINGTON

Mr. Clement Attlee arrived in Washington on November 10, 1945, for talks between Britain, the U.S. and Canada. On November 13 he addressed a joint session of Congress when he declared: 'Man's material discoveries have outpaced his moral progress. The greatest task that faces us today is to bring home to all people before it is too late that our civilization can only survive by the acceptance and practice in international relations and in our national life of the Christian principle that we are members one of another.' Above, Mr. Attlee and President Truman at the White House. Right, the British Premier addresses Congress.

Photos, Keystone





A bill to provide for "Government control of the production, ownership and use of fissionable material," and imposing penalties up to twenty years' imprisonment or a fine up to \$20,000 (£5,000) or both for disseminating information "on restricted data with intent to injure the U.S.A. or to secure advantage for a foreign nation," proposed in December by Senator Brien McMahon, head of the Special Committee on Atomic Energy set up by the Senate, was approved by the full Senate on June 1, 1946, and sent to the House of Representatives.

During his stay in Washington, Mr. Attlee addressed a joint session of Congress, emphasizing the ties that bound the United States and the United Kingdom, and explaining the point of view and programme of the British Labour Party, with its freedom-loving tradition. "We in the Labour Party," said Mr. Attlee, "declare that we are in line with those who fought for Magna Carta and Habeas Corpus, with the Pilgrim Fathers and with the signatories of the Declaration of Independence."

In the United States the return to peace was marked by a wave of strikes, the workers' 'no-strikes-during-wartime' pledges no longer holding good. By the end of 1945, some 400,000 employees of General Motors alone were out. Below, a procession of workers with placards parade outside the G.M. works in Detroit

*Photo. Associated Press*

formulate policies for the carrying out of the Japanese surrender terms. Russia suggested that the Advisory Commission should be preceded by the appointment of an Allied Control Council for Japan—a proposal that was opposed by the U.S.A. (*see* page 3841); and no Russian representative was present when the Commission held its first meeting in Washington on October 29.

Two working committees were set up to consider (a) basic policies and objectives in Japan, including the study of directives sent to General MacArthur and the implementing of orders issued by him; (b) Japanese war crimes. Representatives of the Commission were appointed to visit Japan and familiarize themselves at first hand with the situation there. At the Moscow meeting of the Foreign Ministers in December (see page 3564), agreement was reached on the constitution of an Allied Control Council and a Far Eastern Commission for Japan, the latter to supersede the Far Eastern Advisory Commission; and on January 2, 1946, Lieutenant-General Derevyanko, who signed the Japanese surrender instrument on behalf of his country (see page 3825), was appointed Soviet delegate on the Allied Control Council, Mr. Andrei Gromyko, Soviet Ambassador in Washington, Soviet representative on the Far Eastern Commission.



On December 6, 1945, after 12 weeks of negotiation, agreement was reached in Washington between representatives of Great Britain and the United States for a loan to Britain of £1,100,000,000. Here the U.S. Secretary of State, Mr. James F. Byrnes, puts his signature to the agreement. On his left is Mr. Fred M. Vinson, Secretary of the U.S. Treasury, and on his right Lord Halifax, British Ambassador to Washington, and (extreme left) Lord Keynes, who led the British mission. Immediately behind Mr. Byrnes is Mr. Dean Acheson, U.S. Assistant Secretary of State. The agreement was ratified by Congress on July 13, 1946. *Photo, Keystone*

Many points of friction with the Soviet Union developed during 1945, most noticeably over the situation in the Far East. On the initiative of Mr. Byrnes, U.S. Secretary of State, while he was in London in September for the meeting of the Council of Foreign Ministers (*see* Chapter 378), a Far Eastern Advisory Commission was created to





**September 1.** Russians withdrew from British, American and French zones of occupation in Vienna. At Monte Cassino, Italy, Polish cemetery dedicated in ceremony attended by Field-Marshal Alexander.

**September 2.** Japanese signed instrument of unconditional surrender on board U.S. battleship "Missouri" in Tokyo Bay; 13,000 U.S. troops landed in Japan; Japanese forces surrendered in Luzon (Philippines). Annamites in French Indo-China attacked members of French colony in Saigon. Minesweeping of Malacca Straits begun. Censorship ended in Britain. U.S. Lend-Lease agreement with Britain terminated.

**September 3.** British prisoners of war and internees sailed for home from Tokyo. British troops landed at Hongkong. In Malaya, Royal Marines took over Penang. British military authorities lifted restrictions on fraternization. Allied victory march in Brussels to celebrate first anniversary of city's liberation.

**September 4.** General MacArthur ordered immediate demobilization and disarmament of Japanese army and prohibited broadcasts in foreign languages. General Sir Bernard Freyberg, V.C., appointed to succeed Sir Cyril Newall as Governor-General of New Zealand. Wake Island surrendered by Japanese commander. General Franco informed of decision of Allied conference on the re-establishment of international zone of Tangier.

**September 5.** British and Indian forces landed at Singapore. In Germany, Hugo Stinnes and 43 other industrialists arrested by British Control Commission. Rioting continued at Saigon, Indo-China.

**September 6.** Surrender of all Japanese in S.W. Pacific area signed on board H.M.S. "Glory" off Rabaul. General Eisenhower announced termination of Press censorship in Europe. Greek Regent, Archbishop Damaskinos, arrived in London.

**September 7.** British naval base at Singapore handed back to British control. British, American, Russian and French troops held victory parade in Berlin. Australian House of Representatives ratified United Nations Charter.

**September 8.** Troops of 1st U.S. Cavalry Division entered Tokyo; U.S. flag raised in presence of General MacArthur. Surrender of all Japanese on Bougainville and adjacent islands signed at Australian H.Q. Surrender of Japanese forces in Netherlands East Indies and Dutch Borneo signed.

**September 9.** Formal surrender of 1,000,000 Japanese signed in Nanking by General Okamura; the document specified that the surrender to General Chiang Kai-shek covered all ground, sea, air and auxiliary forces "within China (excluding Manchuria), Formosa, and French Indo-China north of latitude 16 N." U.S. troops landed on Korea, liberating hundreds of British and American prisoners of war; surrender instrument signed.

**September 10.** General MacArthur ordered dissolution of Japanese Imperial H.Q., established radio and Press censorship in Japan. Commander of Japanese forces in N. Borneo surrendered at Labuan. In Malaya, S.E.A.C. troops landed at Port Swettenham and Port Dickson. Quisling sentenced to death by Norwegian court. Sweden suspended neutrality regulations in force since the outbreak of the war.

**September 11.** Japanese General Tojo arrested after attempting to commit suicide. Surrender of Dutch Timor signed off Koepang. Chinese forces entered Hanoi, Indo-China. First meeting of Foreign Ministers opened in London. Sir Arthur Tedder promoted Marshal of the R.A.F.

**September 12.** Surrender of Japanese forces in S.E. Asia received at Singapore by Lord Louis Mountbatten. First S.E.A.C. troops flown to Bangkok, Siam. Field-Marshal Montgomery made "Citizen of Honour" of Brussels. Revealed that Field-Marshal von Busch died on July 17 in prisoner of war hospital in England.

**September 13.** Japanese 18th Army finally surrendered at Wewak, New Guinea, to Australians. Surrender of Japanese troops in Burma took place in Rangoon to British 12th Army. Japanese Military H.Q. formally abolished. Anglo-U.S. trade and financial discussions began in Washington.

**September 14.** Surrender of all Japanese forces in Malaya made at Kuala Lumpur. Field-Marshal Montgomery granted Germans in British occupation zone the right to form political parties.

**September 15.** Togo, former Japanese Foreign Minister, surrendered to the U.S. 8th Army. Aircraft of R.A.F. Fighter Command flew over London to commemorate the Battle of Britain.

**September 16.** Japanese in Hongkong surrendered to Admiral Harcourt. Lord Wavell arrived in Delhi.

**September 17.** Trial began at Lüneburg of Josef Kramer, commandant of Belsen concentration camp, and 44 of his staff. Chinese national flag hoisted over Formosa after 50 years of Japanese occupation. Yugoslav Government claimed whole of province of Venezia Giulia on the ground that it is "geographically, economically, and by the will of its population" a constituent part of Yugoslavia.

**September 18.** President Truman announced the resignation of Mr. Stimson as Secretary of War, succeeded by Mr. Robert Patterson. First shipment of rubber left Singapore. New graving-dock, second largest in the world, opened at Cape Town.

**September 19.** Mr. Attlee and Lord Wavell broadcast on Government's proposals for self-government for India. International traffic resumed on the Rhine from Duisburg to the sea. William Joyce ("Lord Haw-Haw") sentenced to death for treason in the Central Criminal Court, London.

**September 20.** British and American warships arrived in Shanghai. New British submarine "Achates" launched at Devonport.

**September 21.** Field-Marshal Montgomery given a civic reception in Prague.

**September 22.** In Germany British Military Government announced that local and provincial councils, composed of selected Germans, would be established at once and that when these were functioning satisfactorily the Germans would be allowed to elect their own local councils. The liner "Ile de France" handed back to French authorities at Southampton.

**September 23.** Announced that a further relaxation of non-fraternization orders would, from October 1, permit British occupation troops to enter German homes. Denmark declared to be the first Continental country free of mines, 2,000,000 having been lifted.

**September 24.** General MacArthur issued orders to the Japanese calling for the establishment of economic control and for the production of essential commodities; war production prohibited and all heavy industries placed under Allied control. Petroleum agreement signed by Great Britain and the United States.

**September 25.** American troops landed at Aomori, southern terminus of the rail ferry between Honshu and Hokkaido. World Trade Union Conference met in Paris. Diplomatic relations resumed between U.S.S.R. and Hungary. Announced that British ships would cease to use the Panama Canal to conserve foreign dollar payments.

**September 26.** U.S. officer killed and other Allied casualties sustained in clashes with Annamite nationalists near Saigon, Indo-China.

**September 27.** Emperor Hirohito made formal call on General MacArthur at U.S. Embassy in Tokyo. In Germany, larger food rations announced for children between 9-17 and for victims of Nazi persecution approved by Allied Kommandatura in Berlin. In London, international agreement signed for establishment of European Central Inland Transport Organization, signatories including Britain, the U.S.S.R., and France.

**September 28.** General Patton reported to General Eisenhower on "de-nazification" programme in Bavaria. Malta again became Mediterranean H.Q. of British Fleet. King and Queen visited ships of the Home Fleet in the Firth of Forth.

**September 29.** British troops began the occupation of Java without interference from Indonesian nationalists. Dutch forces landed at Batavia.

**September 30.** British officials in Germany announced the inauguration of a clothing levy to be made on the Germans. U.S. Marines landed at port of Tientsin (China). Hungarian Provisional Government recognized by the United States.



# DEMOCRATIC ITALY VOTES FOR A REPUBLIC

*Internal affairs in the increasing area of Italy under Italian control are described by Friedl Orlando in this chapter, which follows events up to the declaration of the Republic in June 1946. The last stages in the military campaign in Italy are recorded in Chapter 361; the history of German-occupied Italy after the Italian surrender is told in Chapter 360*

THE year 1945 opened with a serious revolt of the Sicilian separatists. Ever since the Allied landing in Sicily, the separatist movement had grown in strength, and by illegal means had obtained arms. It was supported by the big Sicilian landowners and local Fascists who feared

that, in the new democratic Italy, there would be no room for them. Their propaganda met with some success amongst the population. The armed rising in the beginning of January had to be quelled by force.

The episode brought home once more to the Allies the necessity of conferring

greater prestige, power and freedom of action on the central Government in Rome. Several steps were successively taken in that direction: on January 15 the control of news and information was handed back to the Italian Government; on February 24 the political section of the Allied Control Commission was abolished. Henceforth the Italian Government could enter into direct negotiations with Allied and neutral countries, although it was required to keep the Allies informed of all its more important dealings in the international field. Internally, it could promulgate laws and degrees without prior consultation with the head of the Allied Commission.

Official representatives had already been dispatched to London and Moscow (see page 3241). Alberto Tarchiani was now appointed Ambassador in Washington and Giuseppe Saragat Ambassador in Paris. Both were political personalities, chosen because no trained diplomat free from the taint of Fascism was available.

The main preoccupations of the Bonomi Government were the political purge and the improvement of economic conditions. The most spectacular Fascist trial opened in Rome on January 22 against General Mario Roatta (see page 3231), retained by Badoglio as Chief of Staff until the Allies asked for his removal, and 14 other prominent Fascists. Startling revelations were made during the hearings concerning Fascist intervention in the Spanish Civil War, and the murder of Mussolini's political opponents in exile. The public conscience was badly shaken when, in the middle of the trial, Roatta suddenly disappeared on the night of March 4 from a military hospital to which he had been removed on February 3 following a heart attack. Complicity in high quarters was suspected. The Bonomi Government announced that in future it would keep a firmer hand on men held in connexion with the purge: "socially dangerous elements of the old regime" were to be interned; Military Intelligence passed under the direct control of the Minister of War; the



## ANTI-FASCIST RIOTS IN THE ITALIAN CAPITAL

There were violent anti-Fascist demonstrations during March 1945 after the mysterious escape of ex-Lieutenant-General Mario Roatta, then on trial as a war criminal. Roatta, former Italian Chief of Staff, had been dismissed by Marshal Badoglio at the request of the Allies on November 12, 1943. Here, the crowds, under the shadow of the Red Flag, demonstrate outside the Colosseum against the Government's slackness in carrying out the 'purge.'

Photo Keystone





Commander-in-Chief of the Carabinieri was replaced by General Brunetti.

On March 12 the High Court found all the accused, except four minor persons, guilty. Among the heaviest sentences were: Filippo Anfuso, at the time of his arraignment "Republican-Fascist" Ambassador in Berlin, condemned in his absence to death; Roatta (in absence) and Santo Emanuele, of the Secret Service, to life imprisonment; General Angioi, head of the Military Intelligence Service, to twenty years' imprisonment.

On June 4 the High Court condemned to death Pietro Koch, head of the Fascist counterpart of the S.S., who, after the Italian surrender, was detailed to suppress the underground resistance movement, and equipped a torture chamber in Rome which vied with the worst set up by the Gestapo. He made no effort to defend himself.

After the surrender of the German forces in Italy (see page 3717), northern Italy also came under Allied Military Government, though the retirement of the Germans was followed by certain local difficulties. Yugoslav troops entered Venezia Giulia (see page 3707) and, contrary to previous understanding between Marshal Tito and Field-Marshal

**Venezia** Alexander, now occupied the whole province.  
**Giulia** The French occupied the Aosta Valley in Pied-

mont, an area which had long been Italian, although the inhabitants speak French. After discussions between the French and Italian Governments and the Supreme Allied Command, the French withdrew from the Aosta Valley in June, and were replaced by Americans. The Italian Government subsequently granted a large degree of autonomy to the area.

The position in Venezia Giulia (Istria) was complicated by the rival claims of Yugoslavia (see opposite page) and Italy



#### A.M.G. AIDS FOOD DISTRIBUTION IN ITALY

Among the many duties of Allied Military Government in Italy up till almost the end of 1945—when virtually the entire country was handed back to Italian control—was the co-ordination of supplies and distribution of wheat. Here, at a northern port, sacks of cereal go into the hold of a schooner bound for the south. Above, also under A.M.G. supervision, Indian Pioneers repair a railway track at Ancona to help food distribution.

*Photos, U.S. Official*

to the area, which included the port of Trieste—the core of the dispute. All sections of opinion in Italy were opposed to the Yugoslav claim. Even Togliatti, the Communist leader (see illus. in page 3239), after at first supporting it as "an act of justice and restitution," on May 16 came out, like the leaders of all other political parties, in support of Italy's claim.

Trieste itself was meanwhile garrisoned by British, Dominion, United States and Yugoslav troops. No incidents occurred, but the situation was confused and feeling was tense. On May 15 the British and United States Ambassadors in Belgrade presented notes in friendly and identical terms, emphasizing that the disposal of the disputed territory must form part of the peace settlement and could not be affected by military occupation following the enemy's withdrawal. Field-Marshal Alexander,

Supreme Allied Commander, Mediterranean, also sent his Chief of Staff, Lieutenant-General W. D. Morgan, to Belgrade, for discussions with Marshal Tito, without any immediate useful result. But negotiations between the Allied and Yugoslav authorities continued; while in Washington on May 29 President Truman saw Dr. Subasitch (Yugoslav Foreign Minister, then in the United States for the San Francisco Conference).

On June 9 an agreement for the temporary military administration of Istria was announced, its principal terms being (1) that part of the area including Trieste, the railways and roads from Trieste to Austria via Gorizia, Caporetto, and Tarvisio, as well as Pola, to be under command and control of the Supreme Allied Command; (2) Yugoslav troops in this area, limited to a detachment of Regular troops not exceeding 2,000, to occupy a district selected by the Supreme Commander and not to have access to other areas; (3) Marshal Tito to withdraw Yugoslav forces in the area to come under Allied Military Government by 8 a.m. on June 12; (4) the agreement not to prejudice the ultimate disposal of Venezia Giulia.

Yugoslav withdrawal proceeded in quiet and orderly fashion and without incident. On June 12 the Yugoslav



flag was lowered from the Trieste town hall, and the Stars-and-Stripes and the Union Jack were run up. Great pro-Ally demonstrations occurred in the city, which was bedecked with Italian flags.

General Morgan, for Allied Mediterranean H.Q., and General Jovanovitch, for the Yugoslav High Command, signed an agreement on June 20 defining the demarcation between Allied and Yugoslav zones of occupation (see map in column 3, where this line is shown as the Morgan Line): it ran from a point four miles south of Trieste to the Italo-Austro-Yugoslav frontier. This agreement also stipulated that the Allies should hold the town, airfield and port of Pola, from which the Yugoslav troops withdrew on June 21.

The rival claims to Trieste continued, however, to present a major problem to the Allies. The Italian Government made repeated offers to enter into direct negotiations with the Yugoslav Government, but these led to nothing, Tito maintaining his claim to a frontier on the Isonzo. At the London meeting of the Council of Foreign Ministers held

in September (*see* Chapter 378), Signor de Gasperi, Italian Foreign Minister, presented his country's case, declaring that Italy was ready to make sacrifices to compensate for Fascist aggression, but reaffirming the Italian character of Trieste and the coastal towns of Istria. Dr. Kardelj, deputy Prime Minister of Yugoslavia, reiterated Yugoslav claims to the whole of Venezia Giulia.

The Foreign Ministers on September 19 instructed their deputies to conduct investigations and report (a) on a line which would in the main be the ethnic line leaving a minimum under alien rule; (b) on an international régime which would assure that the port and transport facilities of Trieste should be available for use on equal terms by all international trade, and by Yugoslavia, Italy, and the States of central Europe. A commission of experts, appointed by the Foreign Ministers' deputies to study the question on the spot and make recommendations, presented its report to the Foreign Ministers of Great Britain, U.S.A., the Soviet Union and France when they met in Paris on April



VENEZIA GIULIA

Trieste and the surrounding country, in Italian possession since 1918, was claimed by Yugoslavia at the end of the Second Great War. This map shows various frontier lines suggested between Italy and Yugoslavia, and the area which the Foreign Ministers' Conference of June 1946 proposed to place under international administration.

*By courtesy of The Daily Telegraph*

25, 1946. The commission could not agree on a definite line for the future Italo-Yugoslav frontier, but it was in general agreement on the ethnographic and economic aspects of the region. Once more the Italians and Yugoslavs were invited to present their points of view. Italy advocated a frontier approximating to the proposed Wilson Line of 1919 ; while Yugoslavia claimed the restoration roughly of the 1914 frontier (*see map above*). All the Foreign Ministers advocated different frontiers, the Soviet Minister supporting the Yugoslav claim in its entirety. No agreement was reached, and the discussion was deferred to a later meeting.

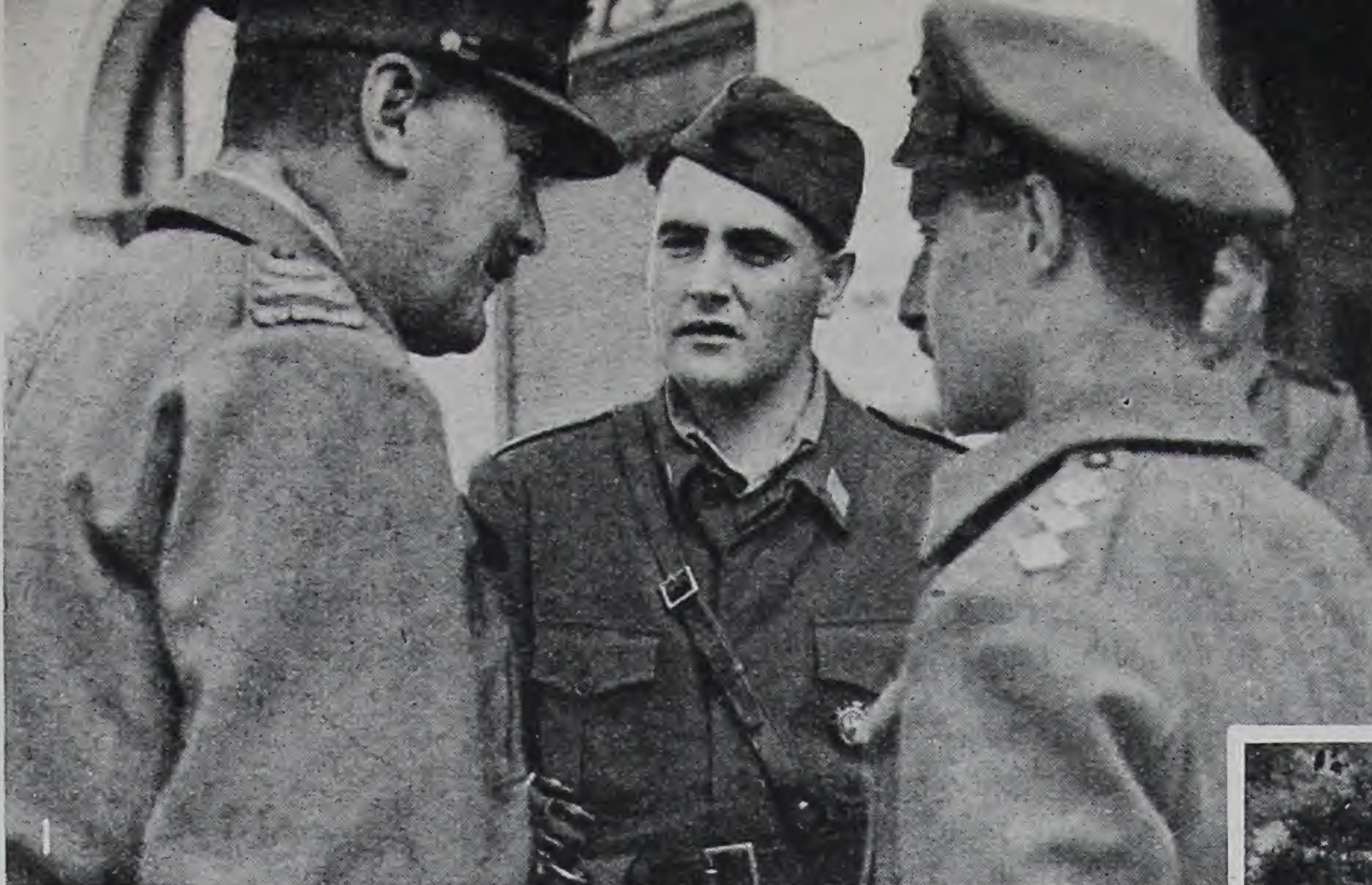
When the Foreign Ministers met again in June they finally agreed to the main provisions of the treaty with Italy, to be put before the Peace Conference on July 29. Trieste and an area round it, indicated in the map, should, they thought, become a free territory guaranteed by the Security Council of the United Nations, in direct contact with both Italy and Yugoslavia, the Italo-Yugoslav common frontier to follow roughly the line advocated by the French in April. Certain readjustments of the Franco-Italian frontier in favour of France were included. Italy was to renounce all rights and titles to her territorial possessions in Africa, which should continue for twelve months



## RESTORING HIDDEN WORKS OF ART

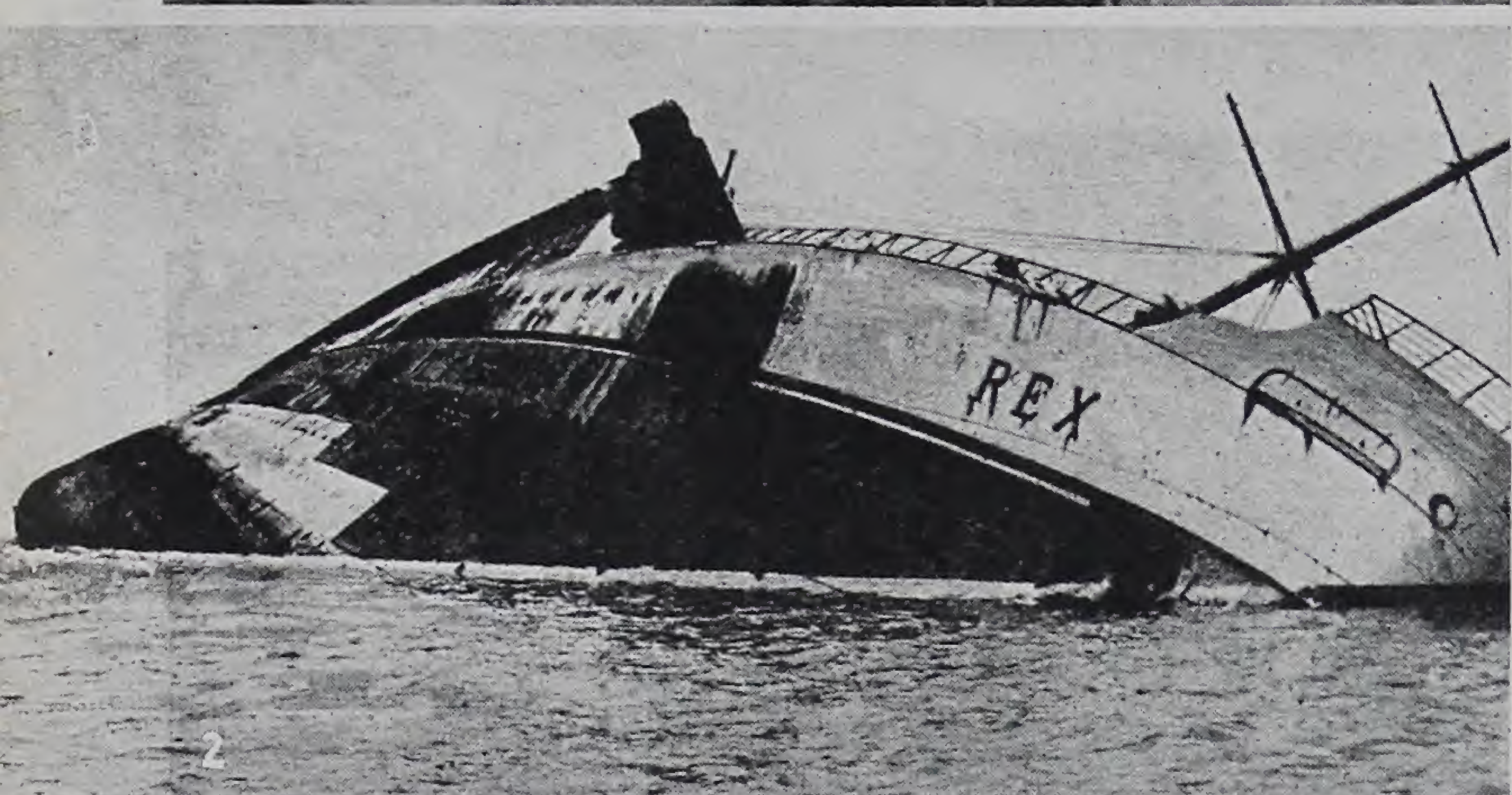
The Allied Government in Italy in February 1944 announced the setting up of a Commission for Monuments and Fine Arts whose tasks included compiling inventories of famous works of art and restoring looted masterpieces to their owners. Here, paintings are being returned to Florence in a U.S. lorry in July 1945. They had been stowed away on the Upper Adige river, near Bolzano, as the Allies advanced. Heralds in medieval dress trumpet their arrival.





## TRAGEDY FOR TRIESTE

Rival claims of Italy and Yugoslavia to Trieste after the surrender of the Germans there (see page 3718) produced a situation with international complications. 1. Lt-General Sir Bernard Freyberg, V.C., commanding the New Zealand 2nd Division, meets Marshal Tito's representative, General Borstnar, in Monfalcone, 15 miles from Trieste, on May 1. 2. Among the wrecked ships lying in the harbour was the overturned Italian liner 'Rex,' once holder of the Atlantic Blue Riband. 3. Vatican City relief lorry, labelled 'Food for Trieste,' is escorted by a British military policeman. 4. On November 4, crowds demonstrate in support of Yugoslav claims.





under the existing Allied administration: the final disposition of the territories to be made by the four Powers on one or a combination of the bases of (a) independence; (b) incorporation in neighbouring territories; (c) trusteeship under the United Nations as a whole or any one of the United Nations. Italy was to pay reparations to Russia to the value of \$100,000,000.

Through the swift and concerted action of Allied Armies and the partisan forces, most of the northern Italian industrial plants had been saved. Yet they received during 1945 little raw material and no coal, nor was transport working. As A.M.G. gradually handed the provinces back to Italian authority, the Government was faced with a huge unemployment problem, intensified by the return of Italian prisoners of war. Moreover, at the end of 1945, Italy was still in complete uncertainty about her future. Until the Government knew how much reparations

Italy would have to pay, and the rate at which the Allies were willing to back the A.M.-Lire (money issued to Allied occupation troops), economic reconstruction was extremely difficult. Trade between the industrial north and the agricultural south helped to stabilize prices. During the summer, U.N.R.R.A. abolished the restrictive clauses (*see* page 3447) concerning supplies to Italy, and in the second half of the year started importing fertilizers, coal and raw materials. On August 1 the Italian Government regained control of foreign trade, and in the same month Italy concluded a commercial agreement with Switzerland. An economic delegation left for Warsaw and Prague to negotiate coal supplies



#### BRITISH IN ITALY

During 1945, Allied military control in Italy was steadily relaxed, until by December 31 the Allied Commission had returned to Italian administration the whole country except Venezia Giulia, South Tyrol, and Udine. 1. Allied soldiers early in November outside the H.Q. of the British Military Police in Rome which had been named 'New Scotland Yard.' 2. Major-General I. B. Erskine, head of the British Military Police, holds an inspection in Milan. 3. Battalion cooks prepare an *al fresco* meal near Trieste in Venezia Giulia.



from Poland and Czechoslovakia. American credit to Italy was further extended, and Britain, too, announced a small sterling credit to back part of the A.M.-Lire spent by British troops in Italy.

After the liberation of northern Italy, negotiations between the Northern and Southern Committees of Liberation followed in Rome for the formation of a new Cabinet that would include all sections of Italian political opinion. These negotiations were long and protracted: the main stumbling block was disagreement amongst the parties concerning the future position of the Committees of National Liberation. These bodies, covering the six anti-Fascist parties which had worked together during the clandestine period, had organized the resistance in the north

under the German occupation and had even administered patches of territory behind the lines (*see* pages 3701-3703). Now, the Left wing parties were unwilling to restrict the rights and activities of bodies which had proved efficient, had sprung spontaneously from the people and undoubtedly commanded their support. The Liberals, on the other hand, held that the C.N.L. would now but double the functions of the regular organs of Government.

At the beginning of June the six parties agreed that in future the C.N.L. should have merely consultative functions. In territory administered by A.M.G., the Allies adopted the same view. With this controversy settled, the Bonomi Government resigned on June 12 and on the 19th Ferruccio Parri, of the Action





#### ATOMIC BOMB HELPED TO END THE WAR AGAINST JAPAN

The first atomic bomb to be used in warfare was dropped on Hiroshima, Japan, on August 6, 1945, by a Super-Fortress of the U.S.A. 20th Air Force. It was followed three days later by another on Nagasaki. Both bombs caused unbelievable destruction, which provided the Japanese with an excuse for capitulation. Preliminary experiments were carried out on Alamogordo bombing range, New Mexico on July 16, when this awe-inspiring mushroom of smoke and flame rose to a height of 40,000 feet. Photo, U.S. Army





#### WITH THE BRITISH AND CANADIANS IN NORMANDY

One of the turning-points in the struggle following the Allied invasion of France was reached on July 18, 1944, after the capture of Caen—most important road-junction in Normandy—nine days earlier, when British and Canadian troops of the British 2nd Army broke into the area east of the river Orne. This attack, which took them across the river and into the plains, was preceded by the most devastating tactical bombing operation carried out to that date. (See Chapter 314.) Above, wounded being carried from the battlefield near Colombelles—an industrial district north-east of Caen. Left, British and Canadian troops round up Germans in the same area.

*Direct colour photographs by  
Associated Press*







#### GERMANS SURRENDER UNCONDITIONALLY TO FIELD-MARSHAL MONTGOMERY AT LUNEBURG

ON May 4, 1945, there was signed at 21st Army Group H.Q., on Lüneburg Heath, near Hamburg, a field surrender of all German forces in north-west Europe. The signing was preceded by 'feelers' from the Germans. On May 2—the day on which hostilities ceased in Italy—General Blumentritt, commanding all German forces between the Baltic and the Weser river, sent an envoy to Field-Marshal Montgomery's H.Q., saying that he wished to surrender his Army Group to the British next day. On May 3, instead of Blumentritt, there arrived a German delegation headed by General-Admiral von Friedeburg, C.-in-C. of the German Navy in succession to Admiral Doenitz, and General Kinzel, chief of staff to Field-Marshal Busch, C.-in-C., North-West Germany, offering surrender of the three German armies facing the Russians in Mecklenburg, between Rostock and Berlin.

Field-Marshal Montgomery refused this offer, pointing out that this was a matter for the Russians and demanding instead the unconditional surrender of all German forces in Holland, Friesland, Schleswig-Holstein and Denmark. The Germans, who had no powers to discuss these points, returned to Hamburg. Next evening (May 4) they arrived back at Lüneburg to sign—without protest—the surrender document which declared that all hostilities would cease at 8 a.m. B.D.S.T., next day, the Germans to lay down their arms and to surrender unconditionally. The German Command further agreed to carry out 'at once and without argument or comment' all orders issued by the Allied Powers 'on any subject.' In the event of any doubt or dispute arising, the decision of the Allied Powers was to be final. The instrument of surrender was written in both English and German, the former being described as the 'authentic text.' Here, Field-Marshal Montgomery reads the terms to the Germans. On his right is Admiral Friedeburg, next to whom is his staff officer, Admiral Wagner. Friedeburg committed suicide at Flensburg on May 23.





WITH VICTORY THE LIGHTS GO UP AGAIN IN BRITAIN

Lifting of the lighting restrictions, which had been in force all over Britain since the outbreak of war, was a symbol that danger in Europe was over. On May 8, 1945, after Mr. Churchill's broadcast had announced the end of hostilities, all public buildings in London were floodlit, among them the Guildhall of the Middlesex County Council in Parliament Square (left) and the Clock Tower of the Houses of Parliament (right). On September 17, 1944, a system of half-lighting, or 'dim out' had been introduced, and on April 23, 1945, normal lighting was allowed—except in a five-mile coastal belt. On May 10, all lighting restrictions were lifted.



Party (see illus. in page 3707), became Prime Minister. Parri, a Milan intellectual, had been Vice-Commander of the Partisan Army. He was one of the most popular men in the country, highly respected for his integrity, and his appointment as Prime Minister was a gesture expressing the pride and gratitude with which the whole country regarded the Resistance movement. But the Government had no electoral mandate. In anticipation of elections as soon as the country (or the greater part of it) was returned to Italian control, the preparation of electoral laws and lists was put in hand; constituencies were defined; a system of proportional representation was worked out, and universal suffrage was proclaimed. For the first time in Italian history women were given the vote.

The purge was continued by the Parri Government. Many prominent Fascists such as Bottai, Federzoni, Rossoni, were sentenced to death

The 'Purge' or to life imprisonment, some of them in their absence. It

was the Government policy to strike at the leaders while showing leniency towards people in secondary positions. But the scrupulousness with which the Government proceeded led to great



#### DE GASPERI ADDRESSES CONSULTATIVE ASSEMBLY

At the abortive Foreign Secretaries' meeting in London in September 1945 (see Chapter 378) Italy's case was presented by Mr. Alcide de Gasperi, Foreign Minister in the Parri Government, who here reports to the Consultative Assembly on his return. (Count Sforza, President of the Assembly, is seated in the chair, top left.) On December 4 Mr. de Gasperi succeeded Parri as Premier.

delays in the opening of trials and the pronouncement of verdicts; and this caused dissatisfaction among the people, and the holding for a long time under great suspense of those under suspicion.

These difficulties, the prevailing economic distress, and the popular reaction to Yugoslav claims resulted in the resurgence of right-wing parties. Conservative policies, advocated by elder statesmen like Orlando and Nitti, found followers. Discontented elements formed themselves into a group, the *Uomo Qualunque* (man-in-the-street) movement, which described itself as anti-anti-Fascist, and opposed the purge in any form. This movement gained some support among big industrialists.

On November 23 the Liberal Ministers, belonging to the only right-wing group represented in the Government, resigned, partly through dissatisfaction at their failure to secure increased representation in the Cabinet, and partly in protest against a new purge decree promulgated by the Government. These resignations caused a grave crisis, threatening as they did the end of the coalition of the six parties which had fought the Germans. Parri resigned, and it was ten days before, on December 4, Alcide de Gasperi succeeded in forming a new coalition Government. As leader of the Christian Democrats, he was somewhat more acceptable than Parri to right-wing opinion.

By the end of the year A.M.G. had handed back to Italian control all Italy except Venezia Giulia, Udine and South Tyrol. The Allied Supreme Command had restored control of the Italian army to the Government.



#### ITALIAN PRISONERS RETURN FROM RUSSIA

Unemployment in Italy in late 1945 was complicated by the repatriation of prisoners of war who began arriving home in thousands. Those seen above had come from Russia. Dejected and clad in miserable rags, they were once part of the forces sent by Mussolini to Hitler's aid which had suffered heavy defeats during the siege of Stalingrad and along the Voronezh-Volga line (see page 2497 and illus. in page 2498).

Photos, Keystone





# **U.N.R.R.A. RELIEF IN ITALY**

During 1945, Italy received through U.N.R.R.A. only medical supplies and relief for women and children and displaced persons. From January 1946, however, she began to participate in U.N.R.R.A.'s full-scale relief programme. (Top) Unloading at Naples a cargo from Canada which included oats, canned meats, macaroni, and agricultural implements. (Above) Food distribution at an U.N.R.R.A. centre (Right) In the children's ward at an U.N.R.R.A. hospital.



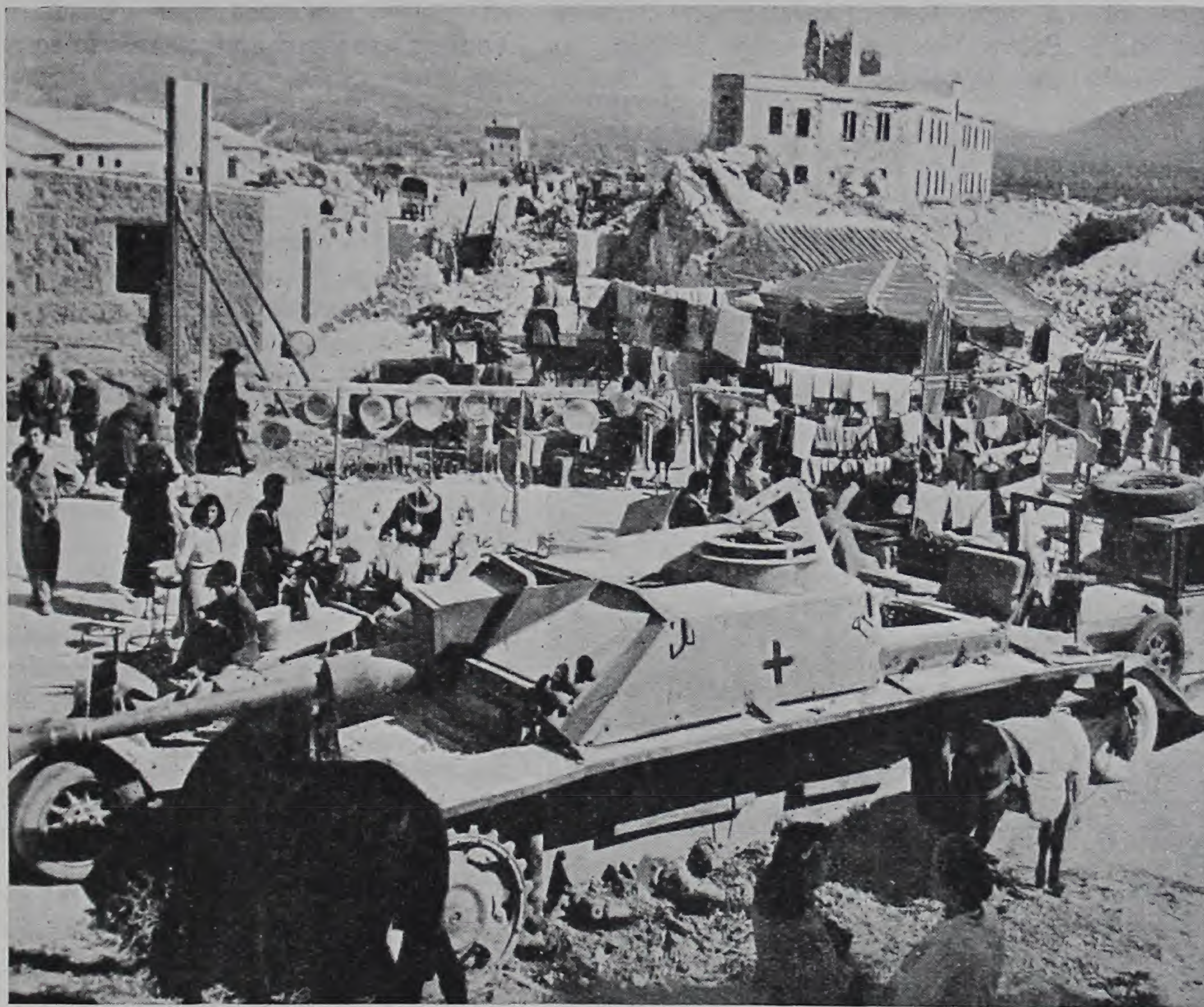
Italy had been promised admission to the United Nations, once the peace treaty had been signed, by the Potsdam decisions published on August 2, in which Great Britain, the United States, and the Soviet Union acknowledged that "Italy was the first of the Axis powers to break with Germany, to whose defeat she had made a material contribution . . . Italy has freed herself from the Fascist régime and is making good progress towards the re-establishment of a democratic government and institutions."

The *Consulta*, a nominated consultative council set up to serve as a parliament pending the election of a Constituent Assembly, met for the first time on September 25, 1945. On March 9, 1946, it approved bills concerning the elections and the organization of the Constituent Assembly. June 2 was chosen as the date for the general election and also for a referendum to decide whether Italy should remain a monarchy or become a republic—a question which had caused dissension and difficulty in Italian politics ever since the fall of Mussolini (*see*

**Victor  
Emmanuel III  
Abdicates**

the first time on September 25, 1945. On March 9, 1946, it ap-

proved bills concerning the elections and the organization of the Constituent Assembly. June 2 was chosen as the date for the general election and also for a referendum to decide whether Italy should remain a monarchy or become a republic—a question which had caused dissension and difficulty in Italian politics ever since the fall of Mussolini (*see*



**TWO YEARS AFTER—IN WAR-SHATTERED CASSINO**

By the end of 1945 a semblance of life had begun to reappear in Cassino, scene of one of the fiercest battles in the Second Great War (*see* Chapter 302 ; also page 3879). Here, former shopkeepers display their wares in what was once the town's main thoroughfare. A disabled German tank stands in the foreground. Above, in October this sign-board warned the troops that the town, where rebuilding was in progress, was 'out of bounds' because of malignant malaria. In the background is Monastery Hill.

*Photos, Associated Press ; Keystone*

Chapter 319). The abdication of King Victor Emmanuel III in favour of the Crown Prince was announced on May 9, and next day the Prince was proclaimed King Umberto II.

The final results of both election and referendum were announced by the Court of Cassation on June 18. Of the 556 seats for which votes were cast, the Christian Democrats secured 207, the Socialist Party 115, the Communist Party 104, the National Democratic Union 41, Uomo Qualunque 30, the rest going to splinter parties. Eighty-nine per cent of registered electors voted in the referendum, the result being: for a Republic, 12,717,923 ; for the Monarchy 10,719,284 ; invalid papers, 1,498,136. The King disputed the validity of the provisional result issued on June 10 (Republic, 12,672,767 ; Monarchy, 10,688,905) ; but wiser counsel prevailed. On June 13 he followed his father and his wife and children into exile, and on June 28 the new Constituent Assembly elected Enrico de Nicola Provisional President of the new Italian Republic.



# FIGHTING ENDS IN THE BALKANS

*In this chapter Miss Edith Trumpler summarizes briefly the trend of events in Greece, Rumania, Bulgaria, Hungary, Yugoslavia, and Albania in the months preceding and following the end of the war in Europe. Fighting was at an end, but political tension was high throughout the period. For the history of these countries in 1944, see Chapters 327 and 331. The rebirth of Austria is also recorded here*

**T**HE newly appointed Regent (see page 3371) vainly appealed to all parties to cease fighting, while the Republican General Nikolaos Plastiras, head of the Govern-

**GREECE** ment formed on January 3, threatened to lead an "army of liquidation" against the insurgent E.A.M. troops. Punitive measures by the British army gradually forced E.A.M. troops northwards and, as E.A.M. loosened its military grip, moderate leaders of the Left ceased to support it.

A Trades Union Congress mission of inquiry, headed by Sir Walter Citrine, was in Greece from January 22-30. It found that "scarcely any person of note in Greek public life, including the trade union movement, seemed to be completely clear from suspicion of undesirable collaboration of some kind." It also found "a very widespread dread

among all kinds of people that the British Government might throw overboard its responsibility by a premature withdrawal of British troops."

Negotiations between E.A.M. and the Government continued, and the Varkiza agreement, signed on February 12, brought the civil war to an end. In the "Peace without Vengeance" the resistance leaders agreed to the handing over of their arms and the return of prisoners and hostages, while the Government promised amnesty for all political acts committed before December 1944, an early free plebiscite to decide the constitutional question and the subsequent election of a constituent assembly.

Increasing discontent led to the fall of the Plastiras Government on April 7. A new Government under Admiral Petros Voulgaris included Republicans and Royalists. But political tension

developed again, and on August 11 Voulgaris, at the Regent's request, formed a "Service" government.

In view of their obligations to Greece, the British and U.S. Governments suggested to the Hellenic Government that the forthcoming elections should be supervised by British, American, Soviet and French official observers—a suggestion accepted by the Greeks and agreed to by the French, but not by the Russians, who declined to participate because they were "opposed in principle to supervision of national elections by foreign states." The Greek Cabinet announced January 20, 1946, as the intended date of the elections. Royalist and right-wing parties supported this proposal, but the Left and Centre parties opposed it, on the ground that all parties had not been consulted. Voulgaris resigned and, unable to solve the Government crisis, the Regent assumed office as Premier until on November 1, Panagotis Kanellopoulos, leader of the National Unionist Party, formed a Government whose main object was to prevent financial disaster: the drachma, fixed at 2,000 to the £ in June, had continued to fall.

Three weeks later the 82-year old Liberal leader, Sofoulis, replaced Kanellopoulos, including in his Government the "best known moderate and republican parties" (Bevin, House of Commons). At the same time, the Regent announced the postponement until 1948 of the plebiscite on the King's return—a decision which provoked a sharp protest by King George of the Hellenes. The Regent resigned, but following urgent appeals from the British and U.S. ambassadors in Athens consented to withdraw his resignation.

On January 20, 1946, the Regent by decree fixed the general elections for March 31. Despite E.A.M.'s threat, carried into effect, to boycott the elections, they were held and showed a sweeping victory for the Populist (Royalist) party, which secured 191 seats out of 317. The Allied Electoral Mission, which comprised 240 observer teams, reported that the elections "were

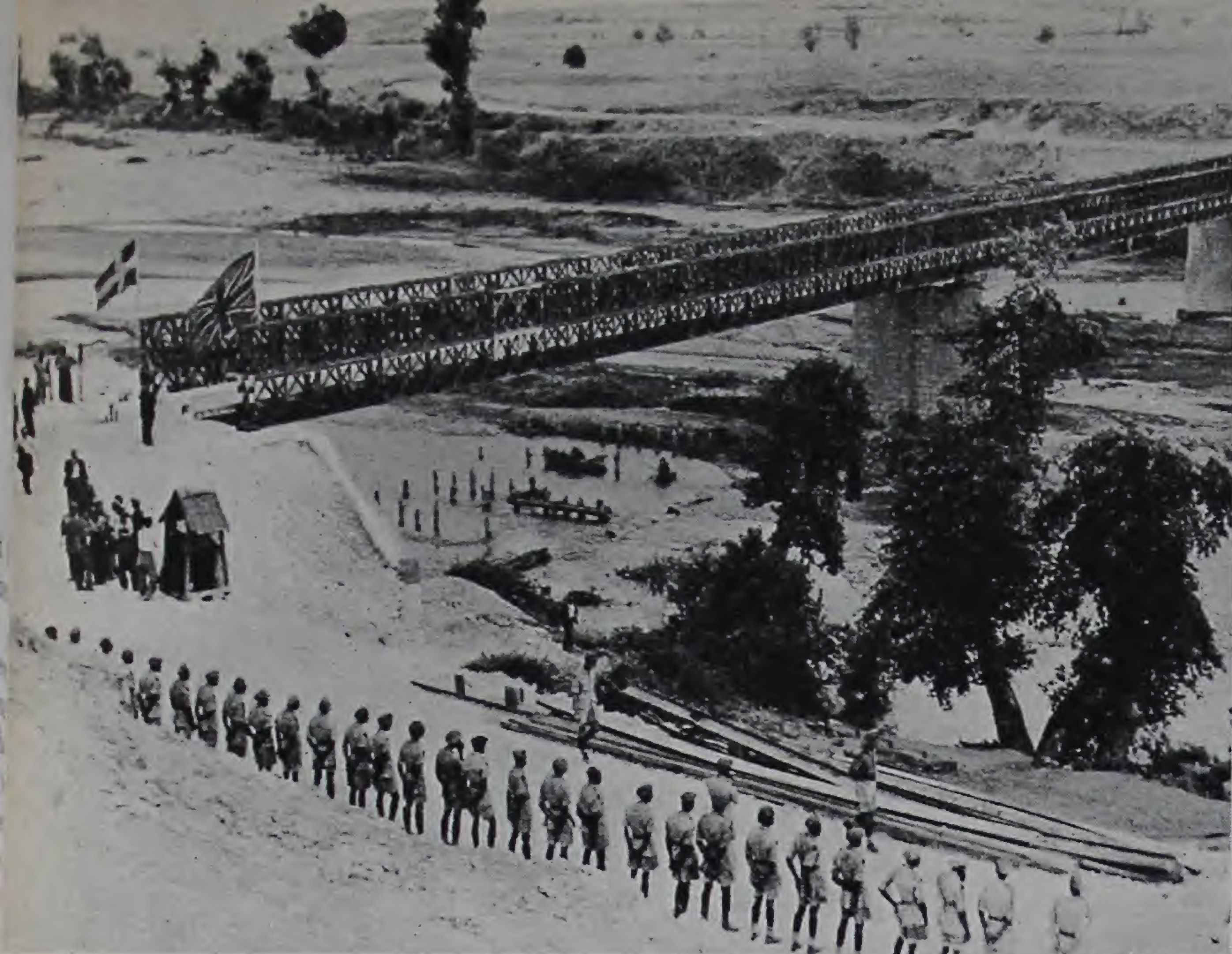


**GREECE'S HIGHEST AWARD FOR BRITISH GENERAL**

At a ceremony in Athens on March 24, 1945, the Greek Regent, Archbishop Damaskinos, presented Lieutenant-General R. M. Scobie, commanding Allied forces in Greece, with Greece's highest military award—the Grand Cross of George I (with swords). Here are (left to right) Lieutenant-General Scobie, Archbishop Damaskinos, and General Plastiras, then Premier of Greece, after the presentation.

*Photo, British Official*





#### WITH BRITISH AND INDIAN FORCES IN GREECE

Named 'Red Eagle Bridge' in honour of the 4th Indian Division, whose sappers built it, this Bailey bridge (above left) spanning the Aliakhmon River on the main Salonika-Athens road is here being opened to traffic in September 1945. It greatly aided distribution of food supplies. Right, British troops pile up arms surrendered by E.L.A.S. under the Varkiza agreement of February 12.

on the whole free and fair, and the results represented a true and valid verdict of the Greek people. Even had the Leftist parties which boycotted the election taken part... [it] would not have altered the general outcome." A right-wing Cabinet was formed by Mr. Konstantinos Tsaldaris.

The Dodecanese islands, where the Germans surrendered on May 9 (*see* page 3493), remained under British military rule pending the signing of the peace treaty with Italy: the Foreign Secretaries, meeting in Paris in June 1946, favoured their cession to Greece.

The Rumanian Coalition Government under General Radescu (*see* page 3322) broke up from within because of the determined struggle of

**RUMANIA** the National Democratic Front to gain supremacy. Widespread disturbances in Bucharest and the provinces were followed by Soviet intervention, on the ground that Rumania was a back area of the Red Army where order must be maintained.

Mr. Vyshinsky, Vice-Commissar for Foreign Affairs, flew to Bucharest on February 27 and demanded and secured Radescu's dismissal. Prince Stirbey tried and failed to form a Government, and then King Michael called upon Dr. Petre Grozea, leader of the Ploughman's Front (*see* page 3322), to do so, a change which led Radescu to seek sanctuary with the British Political Representative.

Rumanian administration of Transylvania (*see* page 3326), suspended in October 1944 by Marshal Malinovsky on account of excesses against the Hungarian inhabitants, was restored during March; and a far-reaching land reform decree was signed by the King on



#### U.N.R.R.A. RELIEF CENTRE IN GREEK MOUNTAINS

Among relief distribution centres for U.N.R.R.A. in Greece in 1945 was the village of Karpenision in the Aetolian mountains. During the German occupation it had been the H.Q. of the British Military Mission and of the E.L.A.S. 15th Division. The Germans raided it twice—in November 1943 and in 1944—leaving it in ruins. Here Greeks with mules set out for their homes from the village with U.N.R.R.A. supplies.

*Photos, British Official*





## PARTISANS ON CRETE

It was announced on April 9, 1945, that the R.A.F. had established a base at the eastern tip of Crete and was flying in supplies to the Greek partisans engaged in harassing the German garrison of some 10,000 men still holding out in the north-west corner of the island. Here partisans lend a hand at servicing R.A.F. Spitfires at the base.

Photo. British Official

had been taken into custody by the Red Army (see page 3325), had been handed over to the Bulgarian authorities for trial. The three former Regents, Prince Kyril, Professor Filoff and General Michoff (see illus. in page 2798) were executed on February 1. Ninety-eight other persons, including two former Prime Ministers, Bojiloff and Bagrianoff, 68 deputies and eight of King Boris's personal advisers, were condemned to death at the same time; Muravieff (see page 3324) and 26 others to life imprisonment with hard labour. In the first three months of 1945, 11,000 persons were tried by the People's Courts for collaboration, and death sentences were passed in 2,680 cases, among the condemned being many senior army officers.

When in August the U.S.A. and Britain insisted that more liberal election laws were required than those existing if the general elections proposed to be held on August 26 were to be free, the Bulgarian Government decided, after a show of resistance, to postpone the elections. Four opposition parties—the Independent Agrarians, the Independent Socialists, the Democrats and the Radicals—were given legal status on September 9; but they decided to abstain from voting, "not wishing to expose Bulgarian voters to the terror perpetrated by the Government." Bulgaria went to the polls on November 18 with only an unofficial opposition. Eighty-six per cent of votes cast were for the Fatherland Front, twelve per cent for the opposition.

At the Foreign Ministers' Conference in Moscow in December, Russia agreed to give friendly advice to the Bulgarian Government to include within it two representatives of democratic groups not already participating in it. Negotiations between Colonel Gheorghieff, the Prime Minister, and Opposition leaders opened on January 4, 1946, but broke down after a few days. Discussions with Government and Opposition leaders held by Mr. Vyshinsky in Moscow equally failed.

At the beginning of 1945, Hungary was a battlefield (see page 3326), but by the early part of April the Red Army had cleared the Germans from the country (see **HUNGARY** Chapter 354). On January 21, an armistice was signed in Moscow between the U.S.S.R., Great Britain, and the U.S.A. and the Hungarian Provisional Government: it was on similar lines to the surrenders signed by Bulgaria and Rumania (see page 3328), and included the proviso that Hungary was to evacuate Czechoslovak,

March 22. But Britain and the U.S.A. refused to recognize the Grozea Government, which they did not regard as truly representative. King Michael

**King Michael  
Breaks with  
Government**

called upon Dr. Grozea to resign in order that a wider government could be formed, a demand Dr. Grozea ignored. The King thereupon appealed to Russia (which had conferred the Order of Victory on him on July 19), Great Britain and the U.S.A., to assist him in setting up a government that would be recognized by all three of them so that the country would be in a position to conclude peace treaties and join the United Nations, and on August 23 he broke with the Government and left the capital.

Grozea went to Moscow in September and secured substantial relaxations in the armistice terms (see page 3328), such as reduction in deliveries to Russia of food and industrial plant, handing back of railways to Rumanian control, and the repatriation of Rumanian prisoners of war.

The opposition leaders Maniu and Bratianu continued to denounce the

Government as a dictatorship. On November 8, the King's birthday, large crowds demonstrated in Bucharest in favour of the monarchy. Some fifteen lorries and buses loaded with Communists drove among the crowds, and a struggle ensued in which eleven were killed and 85 injured.

At their meeting in Moscow in December (see page 3564), the Foreign Ministers of the U.S.S.R., Great Britain and the U.S.A., in reply to King Michael's appeal of August, advised him to include one member of the National Peasant Party and one member of the National Liberal Party in the Government and appointed a commission consisting of Mr. Vyshinsky, Mr. Averell Harriman and Sir Archibald Clark Kerr to proceed to Bucharest to consult with the King and the Rumanian Government. Two members were added to the Government on January 7, 1946. Great Britain and the United States recognized it on February 5, provided elections were held in the following May.

On January 1, 1945, Moscow announced that persons mainly responsible for Bulgaria's entry into the war, who

## DOWNING ARMS AT RHODES

On May 9, 1945, all German forces in the Dodecanese and the Aegean, including the garrison at Rhodes, totalling some 20,000 men, were surrendered on the island of Symi (see page 3493) to Brigadier J. Moffatt on behalf of the Allied Supreme Commander, Mediterranean. Here, German troops on the island of Rhodes stack their arms, ammunition and equipment after the surrender of their C.-in-C., Major-General Wagner.







### ALLIED CONTROL COMMISSION FOR RUMANIA

The Allied Control Commission began its sittings in Bucharest in October 1945. Left to right : Major Jiglov, Russian liaison officer ; Lt.-Colonel Bolton, British liaison officer ; Air Vice-Marshal Stevenson, British Commissioner ; Major-General Vasilev, Chief of Staff ; Admiral Bogdenko, assistant Vice President ; General Schuyler, head of the U.S. Mission ; Lieutenant Balic, U.S. Navy ; and Mr. Finagenov, head of the Economic Section. *Photo. British Official*

Yugoslav and Rumanian territory occupied since December 31, 1937.

One of the new Hungarian Government's first acts was the promulgation on March 18 of a far-reaching measure of land reform that ended the ancient feudal system of land tenure under which, in 1938, 36 magnates owned more than a million acres, while 1,200,000 peasants owned only 950,000 acres.

A law providing for universal, secret and equal suffrage for all Hungarians (men and women) was passed on September 19, and general elections

**Smallholders' Victory in Hungary** were announced for November 4, each party to put forward its own list of candidates. On

October 6, however, municipal elections in Budapest resulted in an overwhelming victory for the Smallholders' party, which secured 151 seats against 52 for the Communists, 51 for the Socialists, and ten others. On October 17, Marshal Voroshilov, chairman of the Allied Control Commission, informed the party leaders that elections should be held on a single Government list as in Rumania. This method of election was not favoured by either the American Government, which had made recognition of Hungary conditional on free elections there, or that of Britain. The Hungarian Government therefore rejected Voroshilov's demand, but agreed to the formation of a coalition Government, whatever the outcome of the elections. These, held on November 4 "fairly, freely and without disturbance,"

gave the Smallholders 245 seats, the Communists 70, the Socialists 69, National Peasants 23, Democrats 2. The Smallholders' leader, Zoltan Tildy, formed a new coalition Government recognised by all three Allies.

A five-year economic treaty with Russia which would have given the U.S.S.R. virtually a fifty-fifty share in Hungary's entire economic life was initialled in Moscow on August 27. The British and American Governments lodged vigorous protests against the

signing of a treaty with a country with which the Allies were still technically at war, and the agreement was never ratified by Hungary. The new Government liquidated the Russo-Hungarian trading company formed to operate it.

King Peter refused to accept the Tito-Subasich agreement (*see* page 3361), and demanded Subasich's resignation. This provoked Mr. Churchill to declare in the House of Commons on January 18 that the agreement would be put into effect "even if we were so unfortunate as not to be able to obtain the consent of King Peter." Subasich did resign, but was asked by the King to form a new Government. On February 15 he left for Belgrade. A fortnight later the King chose as Regents three out of six candidates proposed to him by Subasich and on March 7 a new Government of National Unity was announced headed by Tito and including Dr. Milan Grol, a well-known democrat, and Dr. Subasich.

### YUGO-SLAVIA

Field-Marshal Alexander, C.-in-C., Mediterranean, visited Belgrade towards the end of February to co-ordinate future Allied operations with those of the Yugoslav army, to arrange for further material help to Yugoslavia, and to decide on administrative arrangements between the Allied forces in Italy and Tito's forces when they linked up.

On April 11 in Moscow Marshal Tito and Mr. Molotov signed a twenty-year treaty of friendship, mutual alliance, and post-war collaboration. While in Moscow, Tito made an official claim for the cession of Trieste and the Istrian peninsula, in an interview with the

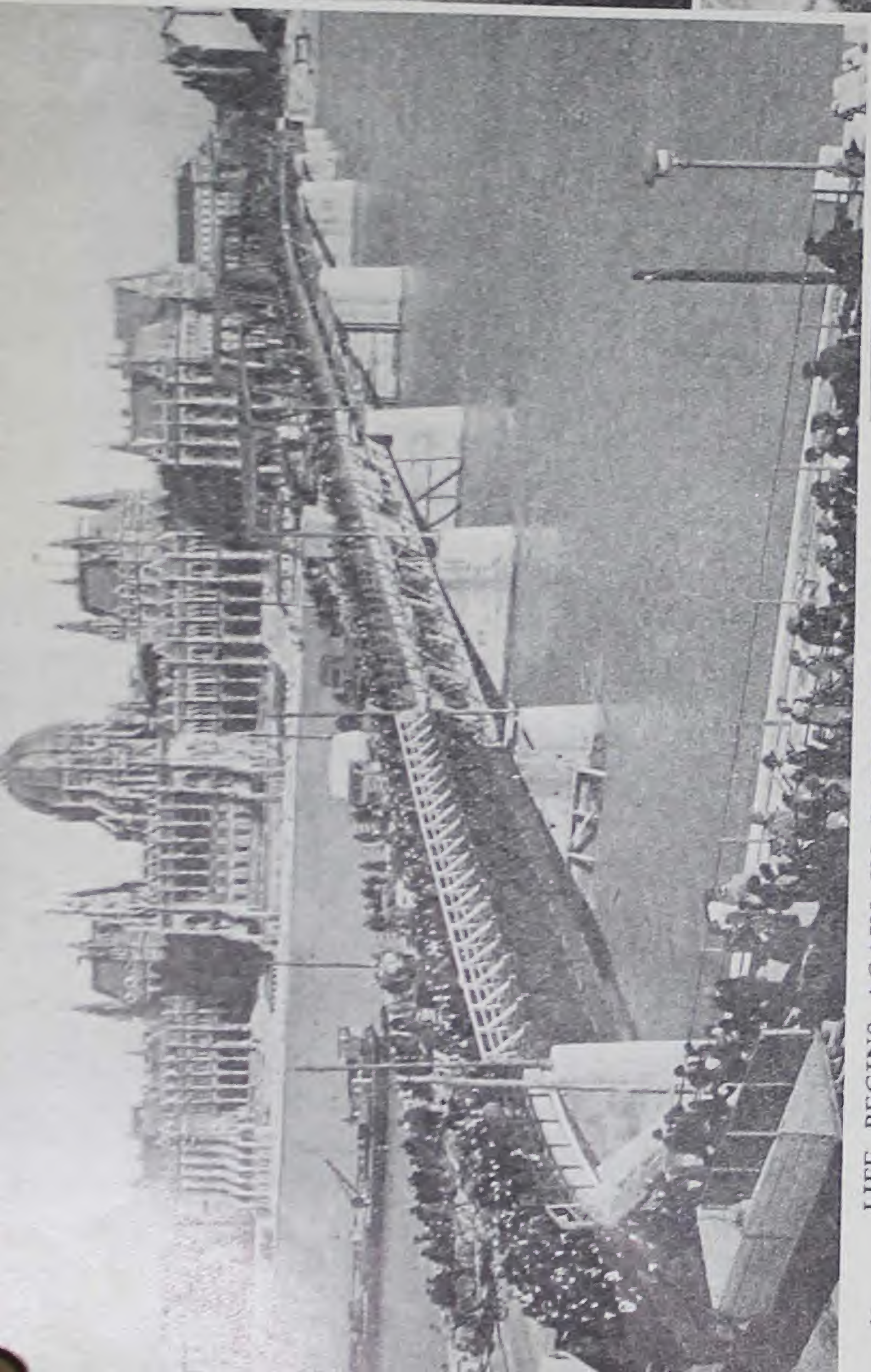
### POLITICAL RIOTS IN BUCHAREST

On November 8, 1945, the twenty-fourth birthday of King Michael of Rumania, large crowds in Bucharest, the capital, demonstrated in favour of the monarchy. As a result of clashes between monarchists and Communists, eleven people were killed and 85 injured. Here, the crowds gather in Royal Parade, outside the Palace. The equestrian statue is that of King Carol I.

*Photo. Associated Press*







#### LIFE BEGINS AGAIN IN HUNGARY'S CAPITAL

1. Crowds stream across the Kossuth bridge, first to be patched up, towards the Parliament building, which escaped major damage. 2. Marshal Tolbukhin (right) whose troops helped to capture Budapest on February 13, 1945, with Field-Marshal Alexander and (behind) Major General Lemnitzer, U.S. Army. 3. In December 1945 internal postage on a letter cost 60 pengos. The pengo (pre-war value about a shilling) had slumped to over 60,000 to the pound sterling. 4. First meeting of the newly elected National Assembly on November 29. The Rev. Zoltan Tildy, Premier and leader of the Smallholders' Party, is fourth from the right

*Feladó: Dr. Molnár Györgyi Judga  
székfőnöke: Vitély Babatúró-13.*





"Red Star" on April 15. (For the developments arising from this claim, see page 3859.) Yugoslavia also demanded Carinthia (Austria), where Yugoslav troops overran another area under 8th Army operational control but withdrew on May 20 under protest.

A new Federal State of Yugoslavia was created during the months of April and May, in furtherance of Tito's announcement of December 1944 (see page 3362). Regional governments were set up for Serbia, Croatia, Slovenia, Montenegro, Bosnia-Herzegovina, and Macedonia.

Among laws passed during the third session of the National Liberation Council from August 7-26 were one



#### TITO-ALEXANDER TALKS

Field-Marshal Alexander had talks in Belgrade with Marshal Tito which began on February 24, 1945. They discussed coordination of Allied-Yugoslav operations and the delivery of Allied help to the partisans. Above, the Field-Marshal and the Marshal discuss tactics with the aid of a map.

concerning the form of the Constituent Assembly, which was to be sovereign and to consist of two Houses, separate and equal—the Federal Assembly chosen by direct vote to represent political trends, and the Assembly of the Nations to express local and regional aims; two laws governing the elections for the new Constituent Assembly; and a fourth law providing for agrarian reform based on the principle that "the land shall be owned by him who tills it."

Elections were announced for November 11. But before then the two non-Communist Ministers of any standing had resigned—Dr. Grol on August 18, because he considered the electoral laws "restricted and in many cases suspended political liberties," Dr. Subasich at the beginning of October on the ground that his agreement with Tito was not being carried out. The oppo-



#### RESTORING TIRANA, CAPITAL OF ALBANIA

British parachute troops, with Albanian partisans, played an important part in freeing Albania in late 1944. On November 18 the Germans announced their evacuation of Tirana, though its capture by partisans was not officially disclosed until three days later. Here, repair work goes on in Tirana after its liberation. The peacetime population was some 40,000.

sition, led by these two ex-ministers, decided to boycott the elections, in which, however, an additional ballot box was provided at each polling station so that electors who wished could record their vote against the National Front. Ninety per cent of votes cast went to the National Front.

On November 29 the Constituent Assembly, meeting for the first time, proclaimed Yugoslavia a republic, the Assembly assuming the functions of head of the State pending the drawing up of a new constitution. The British and U.S. Governments recognized the republic on December 22.

During the war, ten per cent of Yugoslavia's population was killed. Italian and German invasion and civil strife shattered her economic life and destroyed her communications. Famine was rife. It was estimated that she had lost sixty per cent of her national wealth, and that her national income had fallen by seventy per cent. Only U.N.R.R.A. assistance saved thousands from starvation, the food available in many of the ruined villages being still well below 1,500 calories a day at the beginning of 1946.

General Draha Mihailovich, leader of the Chetniks and most noted of the alleged quislings and war criminals tried in Yugoslavia, was captured on March 13, 1946, after being hunted "from mountain to mountain, and from wood to wood." Accused of collaboration with the Germans and of having used his forces against Tito's partisans, he was brought before a military tribunal in Belgrade in June, condemned to death on July 15, and was executed two days later.

After the evacuation of Tirana by the Germans (see page 3371) a Provisional Government set up at Berat in October 1944 **ALBANIA** under 38-year-old Colonel Enver Hoxha, leader of the Communist-controlled Democratic Front, moved to the capital on November 28.

Elections held in December 1945 and stated by Allied correspondents to be free and orderly, gave the Provisional Government 93 per cent of all votes cast. Early in January 1946, the newly elected Constituent Assembly proclaimed Albania a republic and forbade King Zog to return.

In the declaration published on November 1, 1943, following the Moscow



#### TITO MONEY IN ISTRIA

Limits of the Yugoslav occupation zone in Istria were defined on June 20, 1945 (see page 3860). Left, Yugoslav 1-lira note, depicting a partisan, issued in Istria.





#### AUSTRIA UNDER ALLIED CONTROL

The Allied Control Council for Austria, announced on August 8, 1945, consisted of the four commanders of the occupying armies here seen at the opening of the Parliament of the Austrian Republic in Vienna on December 19. Left to right: Lt.-General Sir Richard McCreery (Great Britain), who commanded the 8th Army in Italy; General Mark Clark (U.S.), former Allied C.-in-C., Italy; Marshal Ivan Koniev (U.S.S.R.), former Commander of the 1st Ukrainian Army; and General Emile Marie Béthouard (France).

*Photo, Associated Press*

Conference (see page 2940), the United Kingdom, the U.S.A. and the U.S.S.R. stated their wish to see a free and independent Austria re-

**AUSTRIA** established. Vienna was freed from the Germans by the Red Army on April 13 (see pages 3625 and illus. in page 3627). The formation of a Provisional Government headed by Dr. Renner, the 75-year-old Social Democrat who had headed the Austrian peace delegation in 1919, was announced by Moscow radio on April 29. On May 2, Mr. Law, Minister of State, stated in the House of Commons that the matter of the Austrian Provisional Government was being taken up with Moscow by the British and U.S. Governments; and that the occupation of Austria was to be carried out by British, American, Russian and French forces, whose zones were under consideration.

On August 8, the setting up of the Allied Control Council was announced. The country was divided into four zones (see map facing page 4014), each under a Military Commissioner, who together formed the Control Council. Vienna, like Berlin, was divided into four different sectors, and was the seat of the Control Council. Formal entry of British, U.S. and French troops into the city took place on August 23.

Vienna had been badly damaged in the fighting; all bridges except one

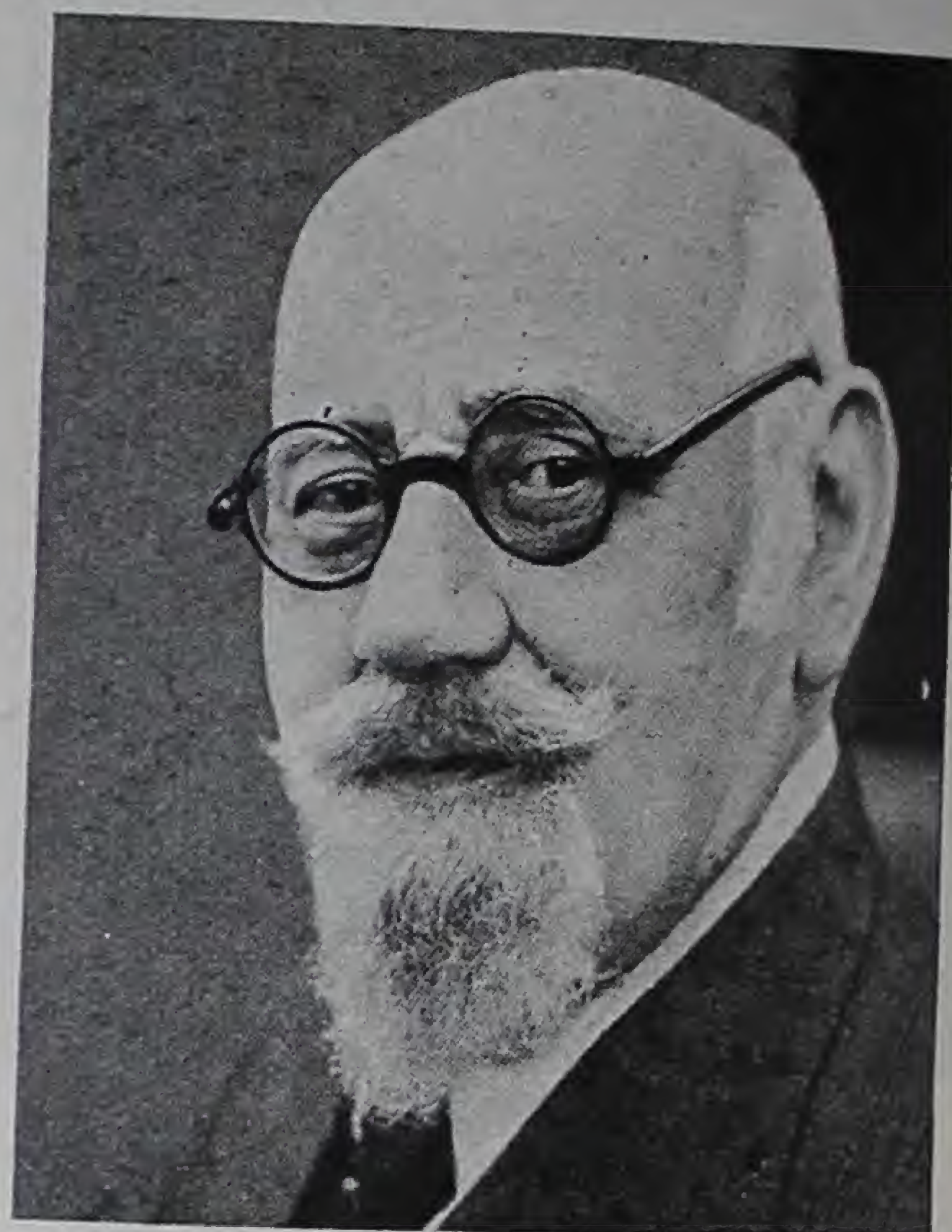
across the Danube were down; there was no gas and only about half an hour's electricity a day; garbage, not removed for six months and piled high in the streets, led to outbreaks of typhus. The food situation, too, was grave, and was aggravated by the division of the city into sectors.

The Allied Control Council, meeting for the first time on September 11, issued a proclamation that (1) free elections were to be held as soon as the necessary conditions existed; (2) free activity would be allowed to three parties, Socialists, Communists and the People's Party (Catholics); (3) Vienna's food rations would be raised from 800 to a minimum of 1,550 calories a day from September 23. Communications between the zones of occupation were restored, following which, from September 24-26, a conference of provinces was held, with Allied approval and under the chairmanship of Dr. Renner, to discuss the personnel of the more representative government he formed on September 27. Full liberty of the Press, subject only to Allied military security, was restored on October 1.

On condition that elections were held not later than December 31, 1945, Great Britain, the U.S.A., France and the U.S.S.R. formally recognized the Austrian Provisional Government on October 20. On November 25, the first free general elections to be held for

fifteen years drew 90 per cent of registered voters to the polls. Members of the National Assembly and of the diets of the eight provinces were elected. The People's Party secured 85 seats, the Social Democrats 76, the Communists 4 in the National Assembly. The same party secured majorities in all diets except those of Vienna and Carinthia, where the Social Democrats were first. The parties had agreed to continue government by coalition, whatever the election results. Dr. Renner resigned, and on December 4, Dr. Leopold Figl, 43-year-old leader of the People's Party, was appointed Chancellor by the new Assembly. Dr. Renner was unanimously elected first post-war President of Austria.

On December 22, 1945, the Austrian Government lodged a formal claim to



#### AUSTRIA'S PRESIDENT

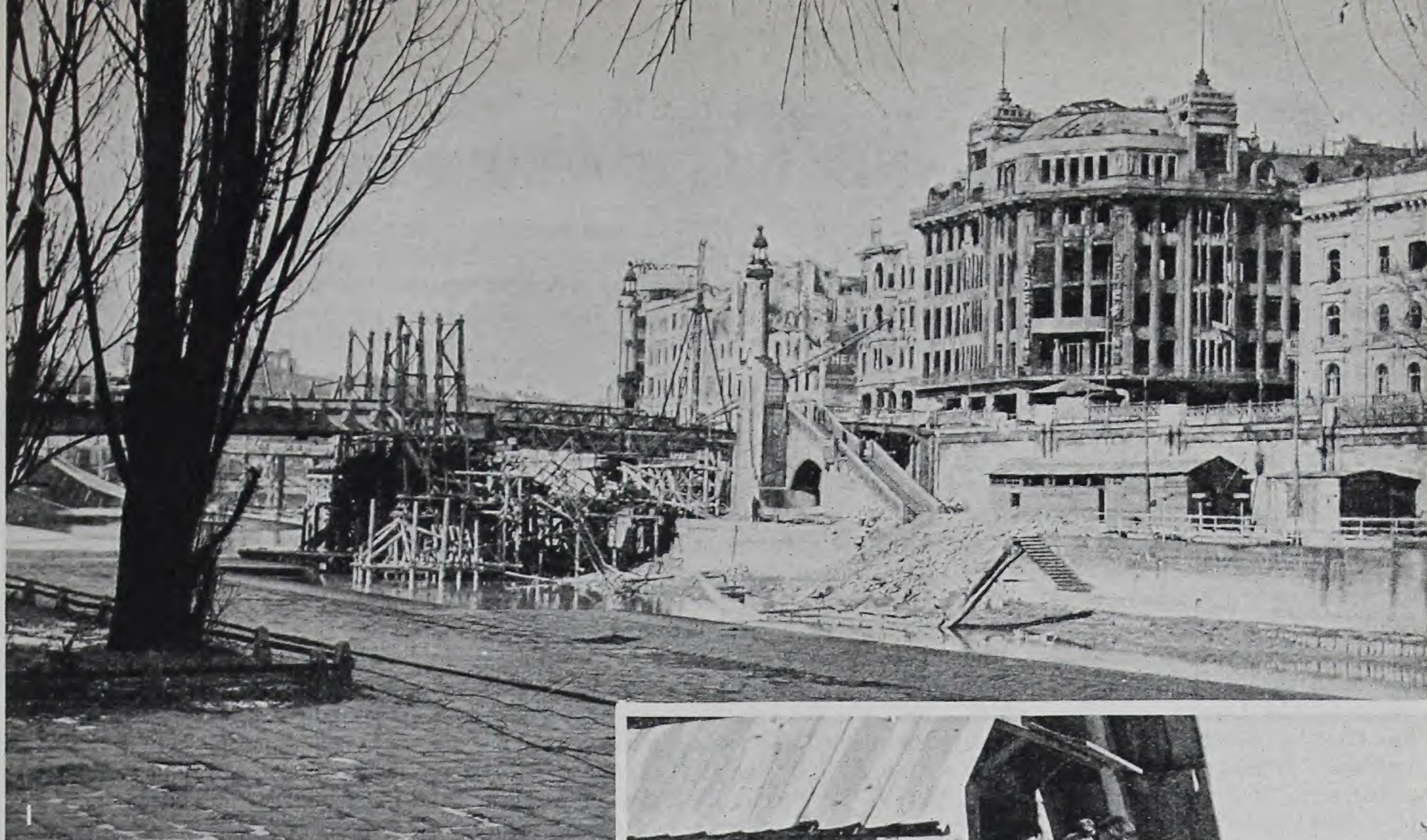
Dr. Karl Renner, who, at a joint session of the National Assembly and the Bundesrat (an assembly representing the provinces), was on December 20, 1945, chosen unanimously as first President of Austria's post-war Republic. Born in 1870, he founded the Workers' Bank. He was imprisoned by the Nazis in 1934.

*Photo, New York Times Photos*

the northern part of South Tyrol, the former Austrian province of Alto Adige (no claim was made to Trento—formerly Trentino—the southern part). The claim was discussed, but not accepted, at the Foreign Ministers' Conference in May 1946.

Notes in identical terms from the British, American, Russian and French Governments were handed to President Renner and Chancellor Figl on January 7, 1946, recognizing Austria as a State "with the same frontiers as 1937 pending a final delimitation," President Renner as duly elected head of it, and the new Government as the *de jure* Government.





### LIFE IN LIBERATED AUSTRIA

1. Repair work in progress in the autumn of 1945 on one of the bridges spanning the Danube Canal in Vienna. The canal and its locks had been damaged in the fighting between the Germans and the advancing Russians, rendering it useless. 2. Arrival of an U.N.R.R.A. train at the Ostbahn station in Vienna on March 8, 1946. Carrying wheat supplies, it was met by Chancellor Figl and members of the Austrian Government. 3. A patrol of the 2nd Battalion London Irish Rifles, stationed at Turrach See, searches for S.S. troops who had been living as bandits on the countryside. 4. In the main square at Spittal, a British military policeman and an Austrian police officer share point duty.

*Photos, British Official; Associated Press*





# A NEW POLAND WITH NEW FRONTIERS

*Poland, first victim of the war of 1939-45, was completely freed from the Germans before the end of February 1945. This chapter records the political difficulties that arose after her liberation, and the changes that were proposed in her frontiers as a result of the Second Great War. For her history in 1944, see Chapters 316 and 317*

ON the same day that the Lublin Committee proclaimed itself the first Provisional Government of Liberated Democratic Poland (see page 3204), the Polish Government in London issued a statement in reply in which it said, "The Polish Government protests emphatically against this attempt against the sovereign rights of the Polish nation made by the Lublin Committee which has illegally assumed the title of Provisional Government . . . The direction of the struggle rests in the hands of the [London] Polish Government, recognized as the only legal representative of the Polish State by the United Nations and by the neutral countries." The Soviet Government, however, recognized the new Provisional Government on January 5, 1945.

On January 17, Warsaw, in enemy hands since September 1939, was freed (see page 3554). Next day the Lublin Government moved to the capital. By the time Mr. Churchill, President Roosevelt, and Marshal Stalin

met at Yalta (see page 3563) the Germans had been expelled from pre-war Poland except in the "Polish Corridor" and the city of Poznan (see illus. in page 3559). In the statement issued by the heads of government of Great Britain, the United States, and the Soviet Union on February 12, they said: "A new situation has been created in Poland as a result of her complete liberation by the Red Army. This calls for the establishment of a Polish Provisional Government which can be more broadly based than was possible before the recent liberation of western Poland. The Provisional Government now functioning in Poland should, therefore, be reorganized on a broader democratic basis with the inclusion of democratic leaders from Poland itself and from Poles abroad. This new Government should then be called the Polish Provisional Government of National Unity."

"Mr. Molotov, Mr. Harriman, and Sir. A. Clark Kerr are authorized as a Commission to consult in the first instance in Moscow with members of

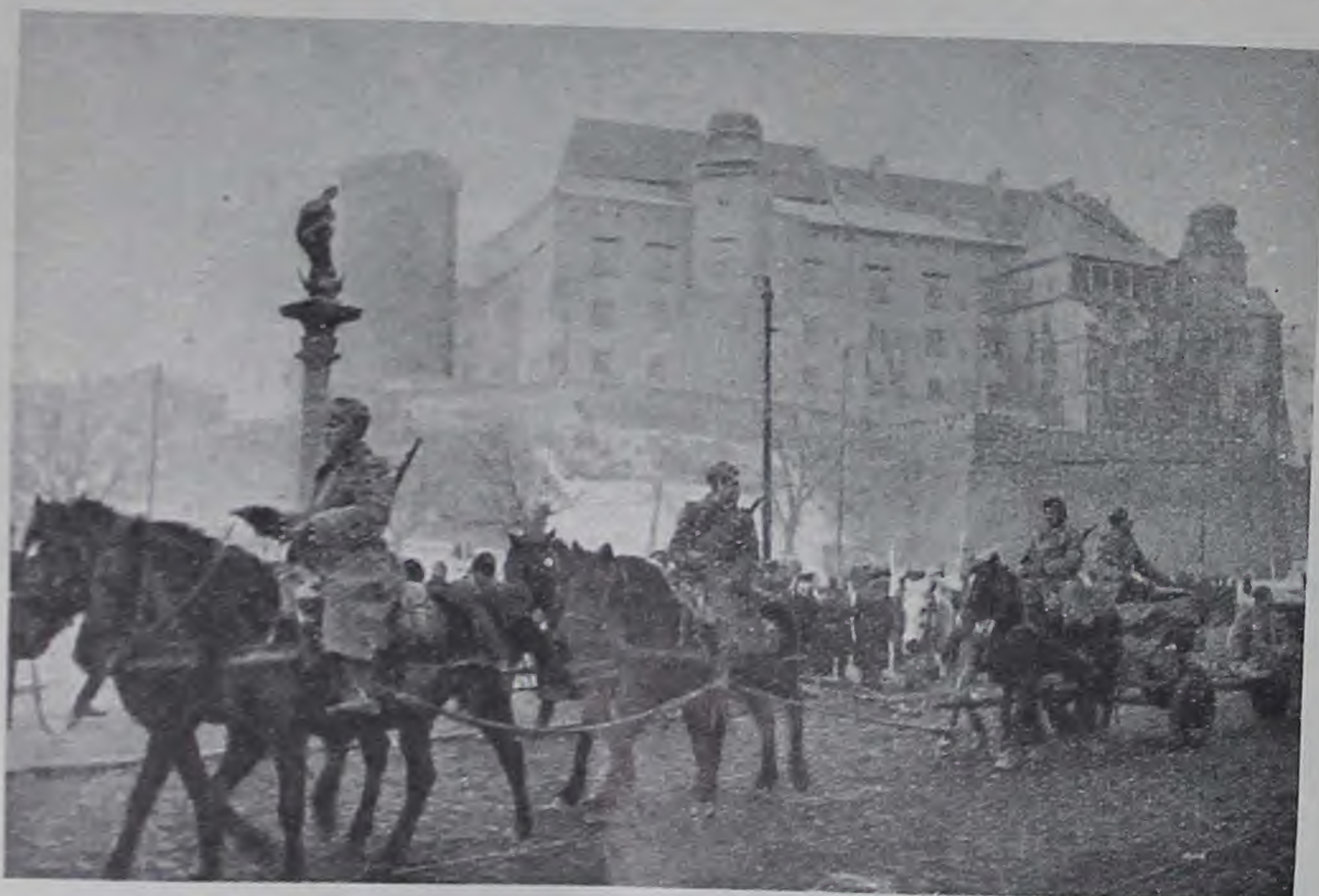
the present Provisional Government and with other Polish democratic leaders from within Poland and from abroad, with a view to the reorganization of the present Government along the above lines. This Polish Provisional Government of National Unity shall be pledged to the holding of free and unfettered elections as soon as possible on the basis of universal suffrage and the secret ballot. In these elections all democratic and anti-Nazi parties shall have the right to take part and put forward candidates.

"When a Polish Provisional Government of National Unity has been properly formed in conformity with the above, the Government of the U.S.S.R., which now maintains diplomatic relations with the present Provisional Government of Poland, and the Governments of the United Kingdom and the United States, will establish diplomatic relations with the new Polish Provisional Government of National Unity . . .

"The three heads of Government consider that the eastern frontier of Poland should follow the Curzon line, with digressions from it in some regions of 5-8 kilometres in favour of Poland (see map in opposite page). They recognize that Poland must receive substantial accessions of territory in the north and west . . . The final delimitations of the western frontier of Poland should await the peace conference."

Immediately the Yalta decisions were made public, the Polish Government in London declared that neither it nor the Polish nation could recognize them, and went on, "The intention of the three Powers to create a Polish Provisional Government of National Unity can only legalize Soviet interference in Polish internal affairs." General Anders, appointed on February 26 Acting C.-in-C. of all Polish Armed Forces in place of General Bor-Komorowski (see pages 3205-06), said in an Order of the Day that he was assuming his duties "in Poland's direst hour" and that "with our standards covered with glory we are facing the greatest tragedy of our nation." (General Bor, liberated

**Anders  
Becomes  
C.-in-C.**



**SOVIET ARTILLERY IN THE STREETS OF CRACOW**

Save for its rubber-tired wheels, this horse-drawn Russian artillery entering Cracow (which fell to troops of the 1st Ukrainian Army on January 19, 1945) might have stepped from the pages of "War and Peace." Cracow, on the Vistula, medieval capital of Poland and a powerful stronghold in the enemy defences covering the Silesian coal basin, was taken by the Red Army during one of its greatest weeks of the war when it liberated vast areas of Polish territory. See also illus. in page 3555.

Photo, Pictorial Press



by the U.S. 7th Army on May 6, resumed the functions of C.-in-C on May 28.)

Not all the London Poles, however, were in agreement with the policy of the Arciszewski Government. A number

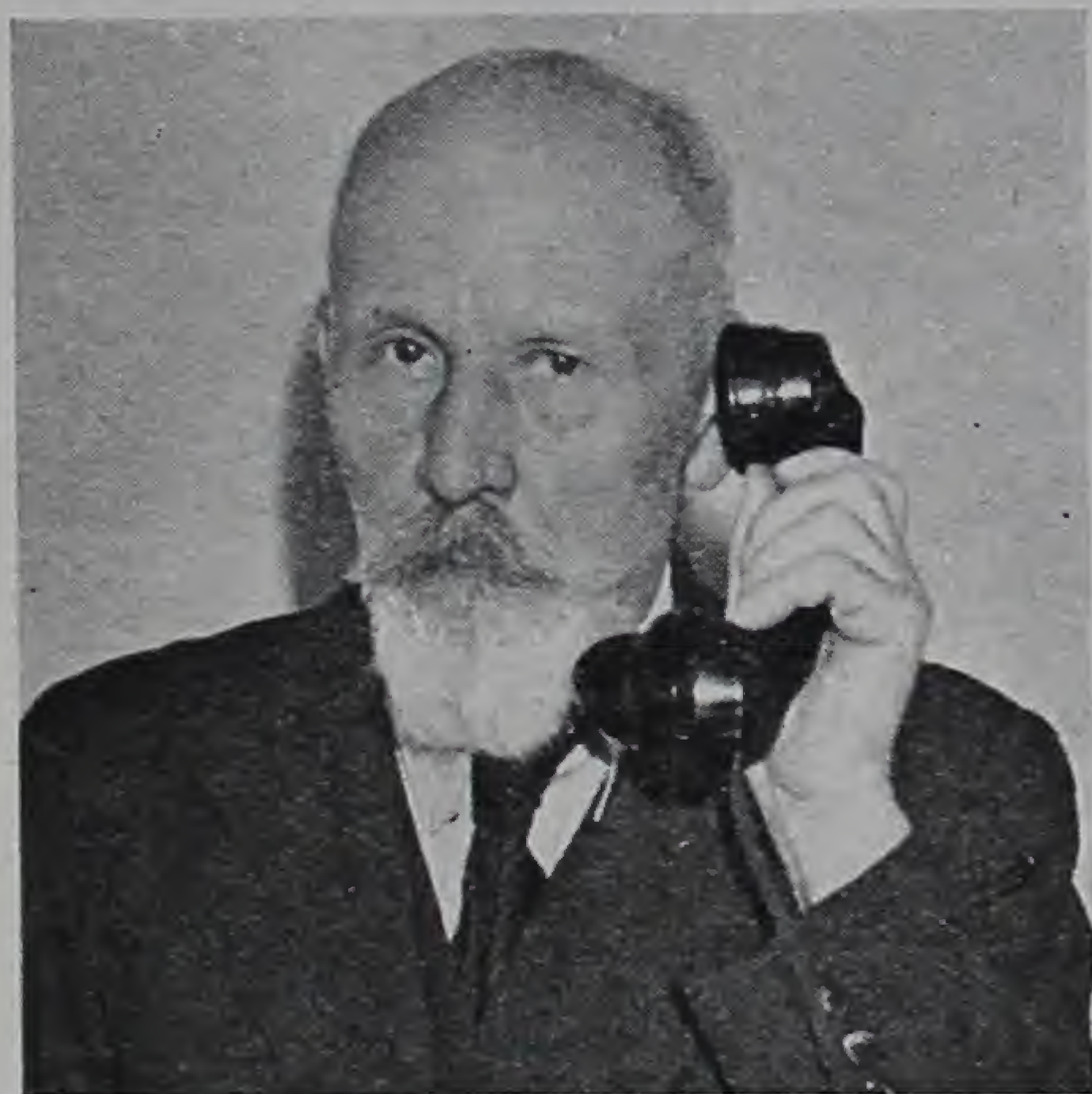
resigned from the National Council, and on March 15 Mr. Mikolajczk, the former Premier (see page 3212) and leader of the opposition group, made the following statement of policy:

"1. I consider close and lasting friendship with Russia, within the wider friendship of the United Nations, is the keystone of a future Polish policy.

"2. To remove all doubt as to my attitude, I wish to declare that I accept the Crimea decision in regard to the future of Poland, its sovereign independent position, and the formation of a Provisional Government representative of national unity.

"3. I support the decision arrived at in the Crimea that a conference of leading Polish personalities be called, with a view to constituting a Government of national unity as widely and fairly representative of the Polish peoples as possible and one which will command recognition by the three major Powers."

The difficulties between the London Government and the Soviet Union were not helped by the arrest in February of Madame Archiszewska and other workers with the Polish Red Cross by the Russian political police, announced on March 1; nor the disappearance, announced on April 6, of the Deputy



#### POLISH LEADER

Mr. Tomasz Arciszewski, Premier of the London Polish Government, 1944-45. Born in 1877, he began life as a factory worker. In the First-Great War he led the armed resistance of Polish workers against the Germans. He was appointed head of the Executive of the Polish Socialist Party in 1931 and from 1939-44 was leader of the Underground Socialist Party in Poland.

Photo. Keystone



#### POLAND'S PROPOSED NEW FRONTIERS

A treaty between the U.S.S.R. and the Polish Provisional Government of National Unity, signed in Moscow on August 16, 1945, accepted the Curzon Line, with variations indicated on the map, as the Soviet-Polish frontier. The parts of East Prussia, Silesia and Pomerania (with 1939 population figures), taken over by Poland at the end of the Second Great War, subject to ratification in the peace treaty with Germany, are also shown. Courtesy of "The Observer."

Prime Minister, Mr. Jan Jankowski, leader of the Christian Democrats, and fifteen other leaders who, on March 27 and 28, had presented themselves, at an indirect invitation from the Soviet Commander, to General Ivanov, representing the High Command of the 1st White Russian Front. The negotiations of the Commission in Moscow consulting on the reorganization of the Polish Government reached a deadlock a few days after the second announcement, which was followed on April 11 by another, that Mr. Wincenty Witos, three times Premier and for twenty years leader of the Peasant Party, had been taken from his home to an unknown destination.

The Commission of Three having failed to make headway in the formation of a new Government, Mr. Molotov, Mr. Eden and Mr. Stettinius discussed the Polish question in Washington on April 22-24, prior to the meeting of the San Francisco Conference. The discussions were continued in San Francisco parallel with the main Conference, until on May 3 Mr. Molotov informed Mr. Eden and Mr. Stettinius of the arrest of the missing leaders. The talks were suspended, and at a press conference a week later, Mr. Eden said, "I must emphasize that the list of sixteen Poles reported as having disappeared . . .

included nearly all the leading figures of the Polish underground movement. . . . Most of them were just the type who should, in our view, have been consulted about the new National Government." Three of them, indeed, had been mentioned by the British Government to the Commission of Three as entitled to be consulted.

Marshal Stalin, in a statement published on May 18, denied that the arrested Poles had been invited for negotiations by the Soviet authorities, and said that they had been arrested "in accordance with the law protecting the Red Army rear from diversionists," and by agreement between the Polish Provisional Government and the Soviet Military Command.

The Commission of Three later resumed their work in Moscow, and on June 13 announced that they had agreed to invite to Moscow four members of the Provisional Government, including Mr. Edward Osobka-Morawski, the Prime Minister (see page 3204); three other leaders from inside Poland, and three from abroad, including Mr. Stanislaw Mikolajczk. In a series of talks from June 17-21, conducted exclusively between the Poles, the three groups reached agreement. A week

Stalin on  
Polish  
Arrests





#### U.N.R.R.A. SUPPLIES FOR STARVING POLAND

The return to peace in late 1945 found Poland heavily scarred with war-wounds, her population virtually starving and with over 1,100,000 war orphans. Left, the hollow shell that was the railway station in the former free city of Danzig. Right, at Gdynia, Poland's Baltic port, the U.S. ship 'Virginia' unloads U.N.R.R.A. supplies which included 397 horses and 318 cows

*Photos, Associated Press*

later the formation of a new Cabinet headed by Mr. Osobka-Morawski (Socialist), and in which Mr. Mikolajczk (Peasant Party) and Mr. Wladyslaw Gomulka (Communist) were Deputy Premiers, was announced in Warsaw.

The trial of the arrested Poles took place in Moscow from June 18-21. All the accused except one admitted the charges wholly or in part. General Leopold Okulicki, commander-in-chief

of the Polish Home Army, was condemned to ten years' captivity, Mr. Jankowski to eight years; others received lesser sentences. Three were acquitted (including two who had

pleaded guilty). Great freedom was allowed the prisoners in setting forth their political views, and the trials, by bringing into the open fears, hatreds and misunderstandings that had previously been only hinted at, provided a healthier atmosphere in which the new Polish Government, recognized by Great Britain and the United States on July 5, could begin the difficult work of reconstruction.

The setting up of the new Polish Government, and subsequent withdrawal of recognition from the London Government, placed the Polish forces under Allied command in a curious position. On July 2, Polish Military Headquarters in London issued a statement that "the status of the Polish forces, which total about 250,000 men and women, remains unchanged, despite the apparent changing character of the political situation in Poland. . . . There is no question of troops not getting their pay. There is no fear of mass desertion . . . .

"The II Polish Corps in Italy under General Anders's command remains an integral part of the 8th Army, under the Supreme Command of Field-Marshal Alexander, and continues to take orders from him. The 1st Polish Armoured Division and the Parachute Brigade in Germany continue to accept responsi-



#### POLISH-SOVIET AGREEMENT SIGNED

A treaty on the Soviet-Polish frontier and an agreement on the payment of reparations or damage done during the German occupation of Poland were signed in Moscow on August 16, 1945, by Mr. Molotov, Soviet Foreign Commissar, and Mr. Osobka-Morawski, the Polish Premier. Here, the Polish premier signs, watched by Generalissimo Stalin, Mr. Molotov, and Mr. A. Y. Vyshinsky, Foreign Vice-Commissar.

*Photo, Planet News*





bility under the supreme command of Field-Marshal Montgomery. Polish troops quartered in Britain continue to perform their duties under the supreme command of the British military authorities. The Polish Air Force and Navy are still operating under the direct command of the R.A.F. and British Admiralty respectively."

Mr. Churchill, in his speech to the Commons of February 27 on the Yalta conference, had said: "H.M. Government are resolved that as many as possible of the Polish troops shall be enabled to return in due course to Poland of their own free will . . . In any event, H.M. Government will never forget the debt they owe to the Polish troops who have served them so valiantly, and for all those who fought under our command I earnestly hope it may be possible to offer them the

citizenship and freedom of the British Empire if they so desire."

The communiqué issued on August 2 following the Potsdam Conference said, "The Three Powers are anxious to assist the Polish Provisional Government in facilitating the return to Poland as soon as practicable of all Poles abroad who wish to go, including members of the Polish armed forces and merchant marine. They expect that those Poles who return home shall be accorded personal and property rights on the same basis as all Polish citizens."

Speaking in the Commons on November 23, Mr. Ernest Bevin, the Foreign Secretary, said that some 23,000 out of the 67,000

Poles in Britain, 14,000 out of the 110,000 in Italy and the Middle East, and a few hundreds of those in north-west Europe had so far expressed a wish to return, and added, "The Polish Provisional Government have agreed to concert with our Ambassador in Warsaw the terms of a statement covering the points on which the Polish soldiers, sailors and airmen under our command particularly want information. I hope this will enable many more to take the decision to go back to Poland and to help in the reconstruction of their country. I want to make it clear, however, that there is no intention of using compulsion." But six months later, only 29,800 had in fact opted to return to Poland, leaving about 100,000 overseas and 60,000 in the United Kingdom to be settled outside Poland.

When the new Government took office, hostilities in Poland had been over for four months, but what was little



### PEACE RETURNS TO RUINED WARSAW

The clearing of the enemy from Warsaw, capital of Poland, brought almost insuperable problems of reconstruction for its inhabitants. After five years and four months of German occupation, it was liberated on January 17, 1945, by troops of the 1st White Russian Army with units of the 1st Polish Army (see illus. in page 3554), but as a result of both the German bombing in September 1939 and the ill-starred 63-day rising in the summer of 1944 (see pages 3205-3206) it had virtually been obliterated. 1. Mobile repair-unit in October 1945 restores the city's public services. 2. Buyers and vendors in an open-air market in a badly-bombed street. 3. All that remained of the once-famous Ghetto quarter.





less than chaos existed in the country. There was a universal shortage of consumer goods and livestock; the splitting up of the great estates was under way, involving the creation of an entirely new economy; the upper and middle classes had been largely dispossessed of their capital and property. A decree of January 3, 1946, nationalizing the mines, petroleum resources, armament factories, and other enterprises brought some forty per cent of the working population into State employment.



#### END OF A CAMPAIGN

Poles enlisted by the Polish (London) Government were placed in a curious position with the setting up of the Polish Provisional Government of National Unity. 1. General Wladyslaw Anders, who commanded Polish forces in Russia, Middle East and Italy (see pages 2736 and 3054, also illus. in page 1948). 2. Polish tanks 'laid up' in Italy. 3. Some of 2,000 Polish troops who had elected to return to Poland sail from Tilbury on December 30, 1945.

Photos, G.P.U. and Associated Press

In Warsaw, the seat of the Government, there was scarcely a habitable building. In many places typhus and typhoid raged. Throughout the country people were ill and ill-fed—Mr. Hoover in March 1946 said that the situation in Poland was the worst he had seen in Europe, that 5,000,000 children there were undernourished, and that despite gallant efforts by Polish organizations, U.N.R.R.A. and other bodies, there was no overall organization to care for and rehabilitate Poland's 1,100,000 war orphans.

Armed bands, some of them remnants of the resistance movement antagonistic to the government, some of them just bandits, infested the forests, ravaging the villages and the countryside. Under an amnesty proclaimed on June 1, about 6,000 members of the former Home Army came in up to October 1; but on October 15 the Provisional Government announced an agreement with Marshal Rokossovsky, Russian Commander in Poland, under which a general of the Red Army with special

powers and having at his disposal a military unit was to be attached to every provincial capital in order to combat "all acts of banditry and marauding."

Throughout the country a pathetic stream of returning refugees trickled sadly and anxiously towards what was left of their homes. Another stream poured steadily westwards, many from the areas returned to the Soviet Union under the readjustments of Poland's frontiers, to find homes in the four new "voivodships" (administrative districts) of Western Pomerania, Upper and Lower Silesia, and Mazuria (East Prussia), from which those Germans who had not fled before the Red Army were being ruthlessly driven into the Allied-occupied zones of Germany. A treaty, signed on August 16, and ratified on January 3, 1946, between Poland and the Soviet Union settled Poland's eastern frontier (see map in page 3875). Under an agreement signed at the same

Refugees  
and  
Settlers



time the Soviet Union relinquished in favour of Poland all claims on German assets in the whole territory of Poland, including the areas newly acquired from Germany, and ceded to Poland fifteen per cent of all reparations due to Russia from Germany, the Polish Government in return undertaking to make coal deliveries to the Soviet Union at a specially agreed price.

Politically the state of the country remained confused. Despite the broadening of the Government, power rested mainly in the hands of the Communists. Political freedom was restricted, and when

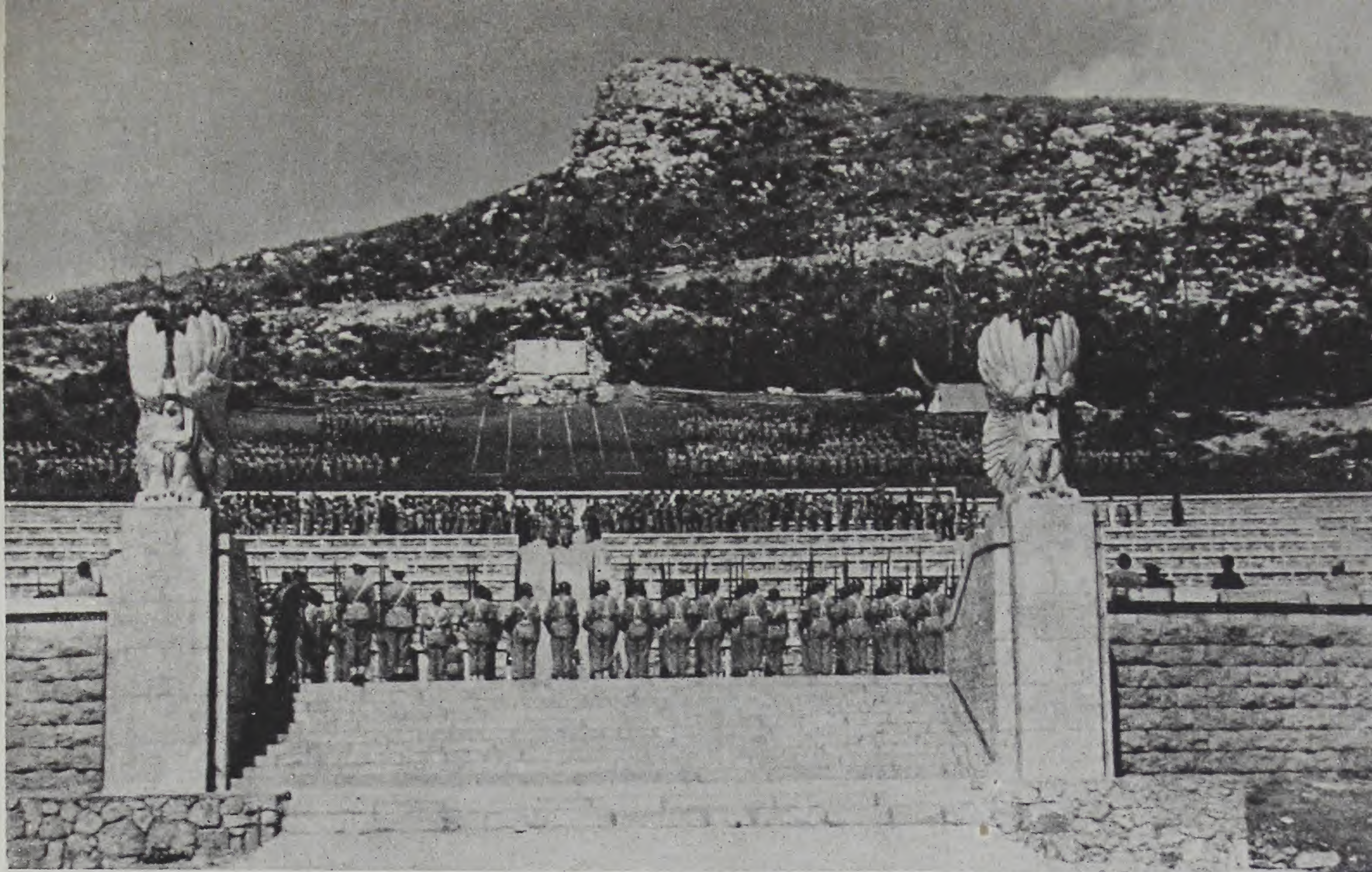
Political  
Confusion

a month after the formation of the new Government there was a demonstration in Lublin in favour of the Peasant Party (Mr. Mikolajczk's party), the demonstrators were arrested.

But Mr. Mikolajczk continued to challenge the Communist domination of the administration, and when the Government proposed that in the elections shortly to be held, the electorate should be asked to vote for a single list of candidates, he resolutely refused to agree.

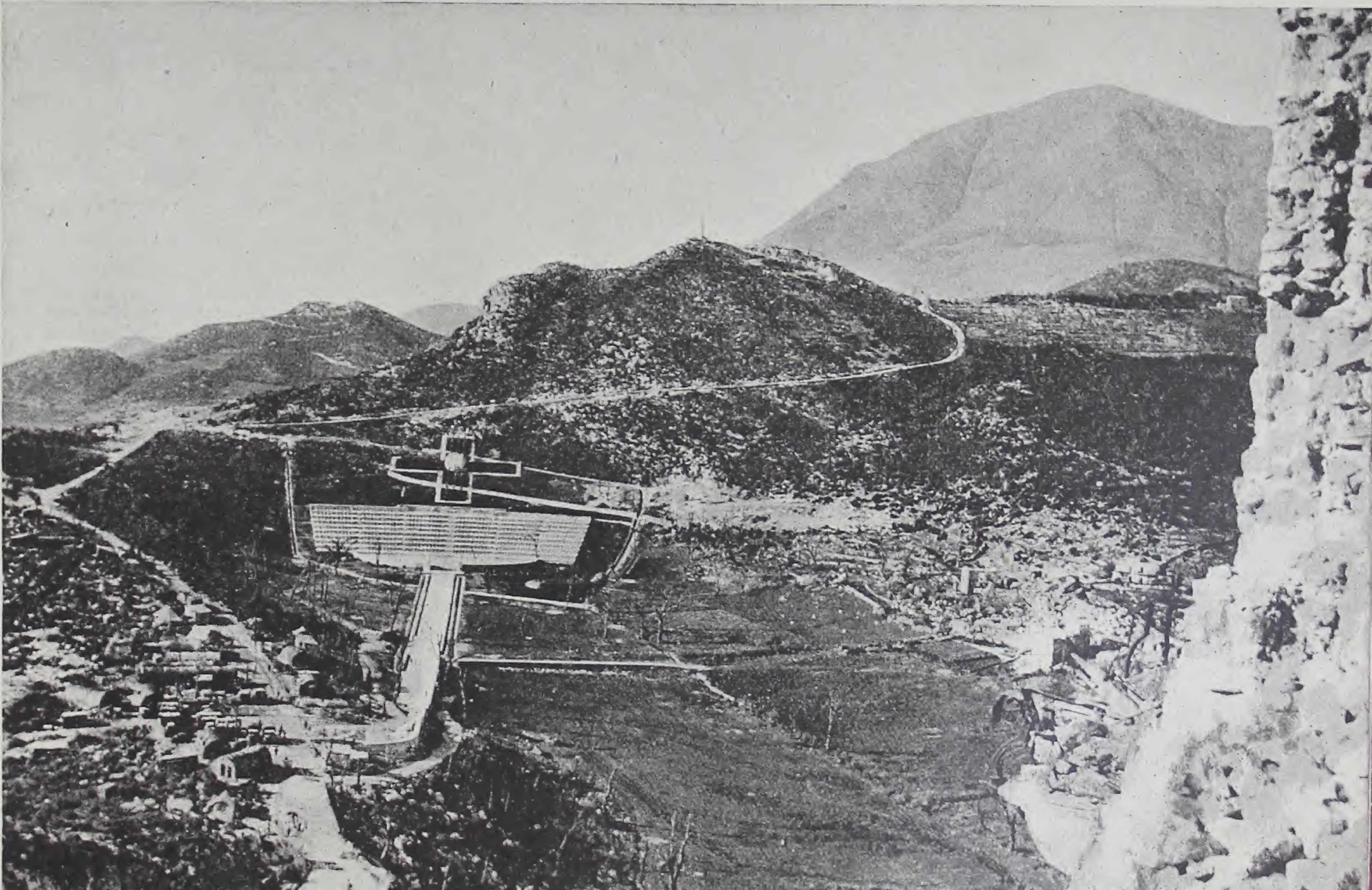






#### POLES' LAST RESTING-PLACE NEAR MONASTERY HILL, CASSINO

On September 1, 1945, sixth anniversary of the German invasion of Poland, the Polish cemetery at Monte Cassino, Italy, where a thousand Poles who fell in the attack on the Hitler Line (see Chapter 302 and page 3865) lie buried, was dedicated in a ceremony attended by Field-Marshal Sir Harold Alexander and General Wladyslaw Anders, G.O.C., Polish II Corps. The battlefield cemetery is constructed in a series of stone-revetted terraces in a dip between Monastery Hill and the ring of neighbouring heights round which the fiercest of the fighting raged. Above, the ceremony in progress. The entrance is flanked by two large Polish eagles, finely sculptured in stone. Below, the cemetery seen from Monastery Hill.







## OCCUPATION FORCES IN AUSTRIA'S CAPITAL

On August 8, 1945, a joint statement issued in London, Washington, Moscow and Paris announced the setting up of Allied control machinery in Austria and delimitation of the zones of occupation. Vienna, the capital, was to be administered by an inter-Allied governing authority under the direction of the Allied Council. Left, outside Vienna's famous Opera House, a group of Soviet soldiers stands beside one of many poster-portraits of Stalin, while a solitary American looks out across the square. Above, in the courtyard of the 18th-century Schönbrunn Palace—British H.Q. for Vienna—which had escaped serious damage in the fighting, the changing of the guard takes place for the first time on August 6. The 2nd Battalion of the Lancashire Fusiliers took over from the R.A.F. Regiment (seen here); the band of the 4th Hussars played during the ceremony.

*Photos, British Official; Pictorial Press*





Photo, Photopress

#### THE COMMONS GIVE THANKS FOR DELIVERANCE

The British Premier, Mr. Winston Churchill, on May 8, 1945, announced the end of the war in Europe in a broadcast at 3 p.m. (see page 3506), afterwards repeating the contents of his broadcast to the House of Commons. He then moved 'That this House do now attend at the Church of St. Margaret, Westminster, to give humble and reverent thanks to Almighty God for our deliverance from the threat of German domination,' the identical resolution moved at the time of the 1918 Armistice. Here, the Premier and the Cabinet, preceded by the Speaker and the Serjeant-at-Arms bearing the Mace, cross to St. Margaret's. (Mr. Attlee and Mr. Eden were in San Francisco.)



# CZECHOSLOVAKIA RESUMES INDEPENDENCE

*Of all the countries in Central and Eastern Europe, Czechoslovakia alone enjoyed a tolerably smooth transition from occupation by the Nazis to renewed independence. Dr. Frederik Heymann, formerly foreign editor of the Prague paper 'Bohemia,' describes the transition period here. For the history of Czechoslovakia and her exiled government during 1944, see Chapters 316, 317*

**T**HE liberation of Czechoslovakia began in the east (see page 3214), and it was in the east, too, that the Czechoslovak authorities started taking over the administration of the areas freed from German and Hungarian forces. As the provisional capital—while Prague was still in the hands of the enemy—they chose Kosice, the main city of eastern Slovakia. It was there that Dr. Frantisek Nemec, as representative of the Czechoslovak Government in London, began the task of unifying the various insurgent movements which had been organized—frequently under Communist leadership—in so-called National Committees. In Bohemia and Moravia these committees had still to work underground, but they had now come into the open in the east. In the first half of February this work of unification made considerable progress, and on the 17th of that month President Benes announced that the government would soon return from London to Czechoslovakia.

The President, accompanied by Mr. Jan Masaryk, left London on March 11, and arrived on the 17th in Moscow,

**Provisional Government Formed** where he had discussions with Marshal Stalin and Mr. Molotov and with other members of the Czechoslovak Government, including the Premier, Monsignor Jan Sramek. On April 3 the President arrived in the provisional Czechoslovak capital, and four days later the names of a new Provisional Government were announced. Mr. Zdenek Fierlinger (54), Czech and a diplomat of long standing who had been ambassador to the Soviet Union since 1943, became Prime Minister. Though he belonged to no party, he was a left-wing Socialist. Leaders of the Catholic, Social National, Communist, and Democratic Parties, five in all (three Czech and two Slovak), became Vice-Premiers, among them Monsignor Sramek (Czech, Catholic). Jan Masaryk, son of the founder of the Czechoslovak Republic, remained Foreign Minister.

On April 9 the new government announced its political programme with the following main points: a close alliance with the Soviet Union whose army was to be supported by every means; an alliance with Poland (the

Czechoslovak Government recognized the Lublin Committee as Provisional Government of Poland on January 31); friendly relations with Yugoslavia and Bulgaria; a rapprochement, if possible, with democratic governments of Austria and Hungary; and the consolidation of the existing friendly relations with Great Britain.

Under an agreement signed in London on February 26, food, medical supplies and other help from U.N.R.R.A. reached the liberated parts of the country by air and through Black Sea ports.

On April 23 a call went out from the government to the Czechs in Bohemia and Moravia to rise in arms against their German oppressors and to start a general strike. Czech resistance, indeed, came much more into the open, answered by fierce reprisals from the Germans, particularly in Prague, where street fighting

began early in the morning of May 5. Throughout the night of May 5-6 and during the following days, desperate appeals for help went out to the Allies from the Prague radio station held by the patriots—the Germans made an unexpected stand in Prague, and the patriots were insufficiently supplied with weapons and ammunition to overcome them. Red Army tanks (see page 3626) and American troops (see page 3807) entered the city on May 10, to receive an enthusiastic welcome.

The city suffered some damage, notably in the centre where the famous Old Town Hall was burnt down by the Germans. Compared with Warsaw or Budapest, however, Prague, one of the most beautiful cities in Europe, suffered little destruction.

On May 16 President Benes, after six years of exile, arrived in his capital,

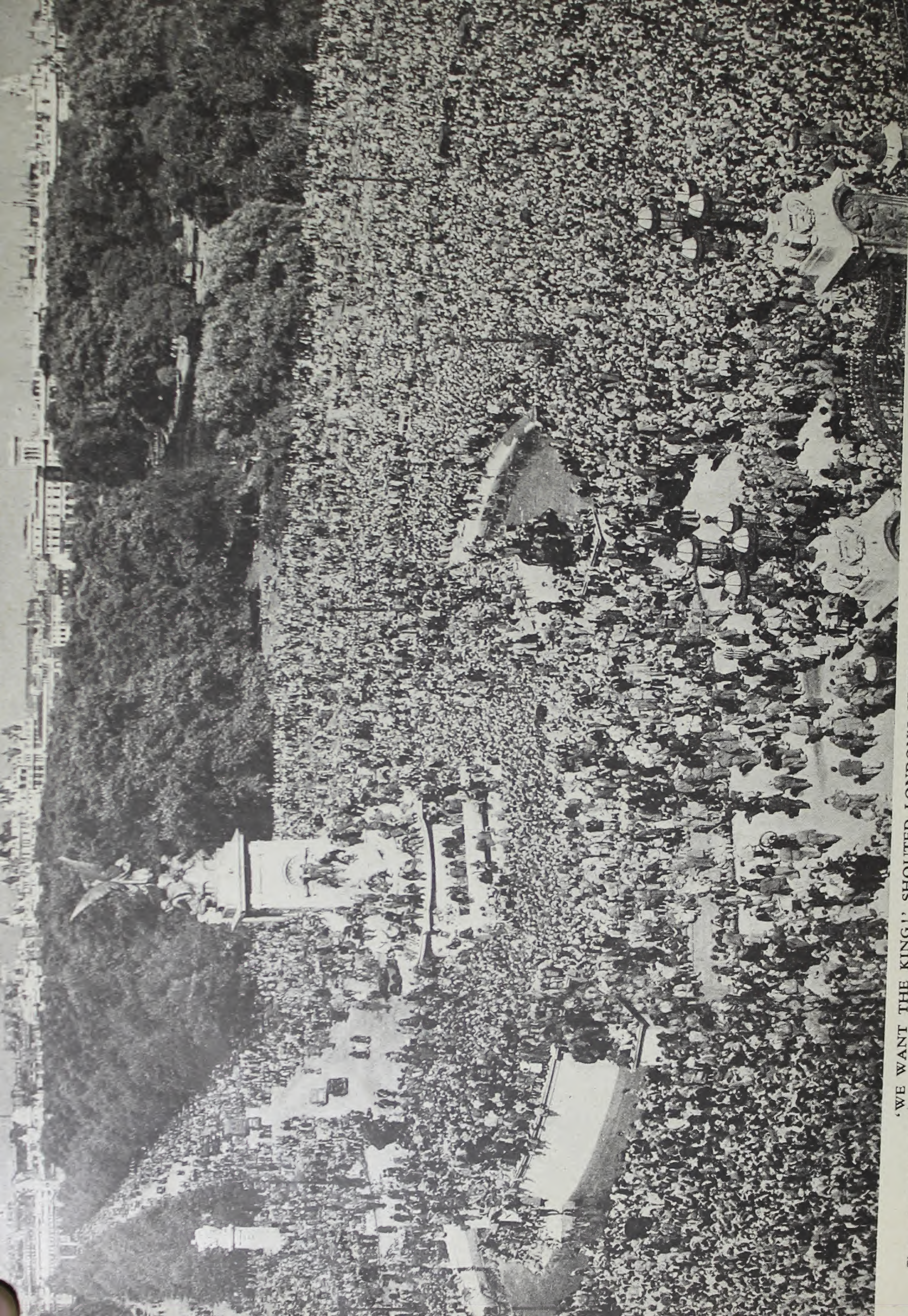
## CABINET GOES HOME

President Benes left London on March 11, 1945, to return to Czechoslovakia via Moscow, where he had talks with the Russians. Right, accompanied by his wife, he bids farewell to England. On his right are Mr. Gusev, Soviet Minister in London, and Mr. Jan Masaryk, his Foreign Minister (extreme left). Below, crowds at Kosice, the temporary capital, greet the President's return.

*Photos, Planet*







### 'WE WANT THE KING!' SHOUTED LONDON'S VICTORY CROWDS

Thousands of people who crowded into London on V.J. Day (August 15, 1945) thronged the Mall and the approaches to Buckingham Palace, many of them scaling the base of the Victoria Memorial. They sang and shouted 'We want the King!' The King and Queen, accompanied by the Princesses, responded to the calls by appearing on the balcony and were greeted with prolonged cheers. In all, the royal party appeared six times. By night the palace was flooded—as were many other famous London buildings for the occasion—and the crowds in the Mall continued to celebrate the end of the war until the small hours.

*Photo, P.N.A.*



together with the members of the government. He was greeted by huge crowds, who went wild with joy when the presidential banner rose again over the ancient Hradcany castle in place of the hated swastika.

Once freed and restored, the Czechoslovak Republic was faced with a number of difficult problems. Most of them arose out of the need to rebuild the state on safer foundations than those on which it had rested during the first two decades of its existence. Though Czechs and Slovaks formed the majority of its people, a large measure of freedom and minority rights, including participation in the government, as well as state-sponsored schools, universities, theatres, etc., had been granted to the national minorities within its borders, in particular to the Sudeten Germans who formed about one-fifth of the population. But Czechoslovakia's constructive solution of the minority problem had been frustrated by the violence with which the Sudeten Germans had embraced the Nazi creed with its German expansionism. Though some Sudeten Germans had remained faithful to Czechoslovakia, the majority had been a most active and efficient fifth column.

The use of the term "Sudeten" was banned by a decree of May 23, which changed the official name of the Sudetenland to "border areas," and there was complete unanimity among the Czechoslovak people that this dangerous and unreliable element must be moved from their country. The Berlin Conference (see page 3923) recognized the need, though it asked the Czechoslovak Government to carry out the expulsion

"in an orderly and humane manner."

The Prague Government gave assurance to this effect, but in the beginning little difference was made between Nazi Germans and those who had been anti-Nazis and had themselves suffered under the Nazi rule. Later anti-Nazis, though they too had to leave, were allowed to take along whatever movable property they possessed. Germans who had not been Nazis, but had not fought actively against them either, were allowed a limited amount of money and luggage; whereas Nazis had to leave everything behind. Things were made rather difficult for the reception areas (in the main the American zone of Germany) by the fact that in many cases only women, children and aged people were sent away while able-bodied men were kept to work in mines and factories. Later in the year, when Czech and some Slovak workers had moved in greater numbers into the "border areas," most of the German workers, too, were moved into Germany. Some Czechoslovak industries, however, continued to feel a serious shortage of manpower.

The problem of the Hungarian minority in Slovakia was, said Dr. Benes,

#### R.A.F. SERVICE BETWEEN LONDON AND PRAGUE

By the month of August 1945 R.A.F. Transport Command was operating a regular air service between the Croydon (London) airport and Prague, capital of Czechoslovakia. Here, R.A.F. Transport Command Dakotas and Stirlings are parked on the tarmac at Prague's airfield. The Stirlings were being used to repatriate Czechoslovak nationals from Britain.

*Photo, British Official*



#### U.N.R.R.A. AID FOR CZECHOSLOVAKIA

An agreement was signed in London on February 26, 1945, between Mr. Jan Masaryk, Czechoslovak Foreign Minister, and Sir Frederick Leith-Ross, Deputy Director-General of U.N.R.R.A., whereby U.N.R.R.A. supplies were made available for the rehabilitation of Czechoslovakia. Medical supplies had been sent by air a month earlier. Here, Mr. Masaryk signs the agreement. On his left is Sir Frederick Leith-Ross.

*Photo, Keystone*

capable of solution on an exchange basis. Moreover, the number involved was very much smaller (about 700,000). An agreement signed in Budapest on March 1, 1946, provided for the exchange of equal numbers, with compensation on a basis of equality, the position of the balance of Hungarians left in Slovakia to be considered in the peace treaty.

Those Czech and Slovak Jews who had survived the ordeal of concentration and extermination camps—they were a pitifully small percentage—returned and had their property restored. Those Jews who, in the census of 1930, had given their mother-tongue as German or who had studied at German schools and universities in Czechoslovakia, and had, many of them (in particular doctors), found refuge in England during the war, were repatriated by the Czechoslovak Government, but had great difficulty in obtaining permission to practise again. Some emigrated a second time.

**Jewish  
Property  
Restored**

There was another group of non-Czechoslovak people, though of Slav origin, in the easternmost and most backward region of Czechoslovakia: in Sub-Carpathian Ruthenia. There, mixed with a great number of other small minority groups (among them Hungarians, Jews, Rumanians and Gipsies), lived about half a million people whose language was almost identical with that spoken in the Ukraine. After a long period of Hungarian misrule, it became, under the Treaty of St. Germain, part of Czechoslovakia, whose government, from 1919 onward, helped this poor and backward region by building roads and hospitals, by giving land





## PRAGUE, LAST EUROPEAN CAPITAL TO BE FREED

On May 5, 1945, a rising was launched in Prague by the Czech National Committee. Later in the day the patriots urgently appealed by radio for help from the U.S. and Red Armies—though the capital was in Czech hands, 300 German tanks were approaching. Desperate street fighting developed, and German bombers attacked the city. Not until May 8 (three days after the general German surrender), did the enemy agree to withdraw. 1. In the uniform of a general of the Czechoslovak Army, President Benes inspects Soviet troops in the capital at a farewell parade on December 1, when all Russian and U.S. forces were withdrawn from Czechoslovak territory. 2. Entry of the first Soviet tanks into Prague on May 10. U.S. infantry entered the capital at the same time. 3. Citizens of Pilsen line the streets to welcome the U.S. 3rd Army on May 6.





to the peasants and creating new industries. By 1938 the Ruthenians had also achieved, within the framework of the republic, a remarkable measure of self-administration. A majority, however, mainly among the poorer people, had always been pro-Russian, and when the Curzon Line was accepted as the basis of the Polish-Soviet border (see page 3874), and the Ukrainians formerly under Polish rule were returned to the Ukrainian Soviet Republic, the Ruthenians (or Carpatho-Ukrainians) also voiced their desire to join that republic. Mr. Fierlinger arrived in

Ruthenia  
Ceded to  
U.S.S.R.

Moscow on June 21, and on the 29th concluded an agreement with the Soviet Government (unanimously ratified by the Czechoslovak Provisional National Assembly on November 23) by which Sub-Carpathian Ruthenia was transferred to the Soviet Ukraine.

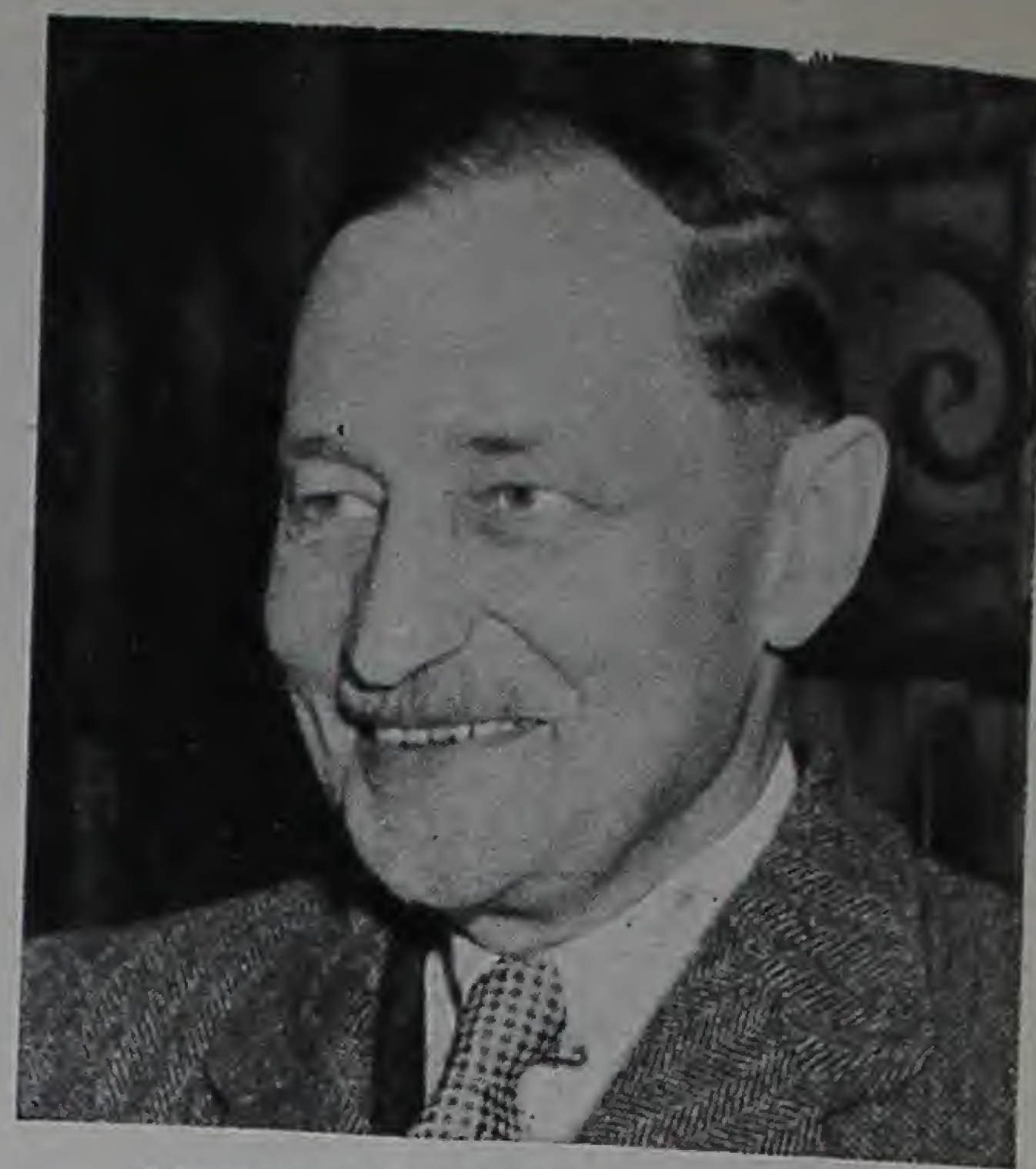
By this territorial change Czechoslovakia and Rumania—once closely allied in the "Little Entente"—lost their common frontier, while the Soviet Union acquired a "bridge-head" on the southern slopes of the Carpathian mountains and became a direct neighbour to Hungary.

Though the loss of this easternmost province caused little resentment, there was disappointment in some circles that it was to Soviet Russia Czechoslovakia was losing part of her territory. Hardly any open criticism was made, as Czechoslovakia could not now oppose Russia on any major issue. Altogether, the popularity of Russia, and of the

Red Army in particular, suffered some setbacks in the course of the year, less so in the western provinces than in Slovakia, where the Russian army had not in all cases treated the population as Slav brothers; but Russian influence remained nevertheless very strong indeed.

On August 30 Dr. Benes signed a decree setting up machinery for the creation of a Provisional National Assembly of 300 members (200 Czechs, 100 Slovaks): local National Committees elected District Councils on September 16, and these a fortnight later elected Provincial Councils by choosing names from a single list. These councils met in Prague on October 14 to elect members of the Provisional National Assembly, which held its first meeting on October 28.

Four decrees signed by President Benes on October 24 nationalized (1) the mines, natural resources, and big iron and steel enterprises (including armaments); (2) certain large enterprises in the food and drink industries; (3) the banks; and (4) the insurance companies. Small industries, communal enterprises and the distributive trades were not affected. Most of the undertakings involved had been under national administration since the surrender of Germany and the collapse of the Protectorate Government. Their value was to be assessed at "current market prices," and compensation was to be paid in Government bonds, cash or other values from a special fund, except in the case of "nationally unreliable" people and "disloyal" Czechoslovaks,



**CZECHOSLOVAK PREMIER**

On April 7, 1945, the constitution of the new Czechoslovak Provisional Government was announced, with Mr. Zdenek Fierlinger (above) as Premier. Formation of the new body had resulted from discussions in Moscow between Czechoslovak and Russian leaders. Aged 54, Mr. Fierlinger had been Ambassador in Moscow from 1943.

who were to receive no compensation. All foreign trade was brought under State control by a decree of October 29. The film industry was nationalized on August 13, production, distribution, import and export being brought under State control.

An agreement with the Soviet authorities made over to the Soviet Union as war booty factories set up in Czechoslovakia by the Germans during the war, except in the case of machinery earlier looted by the Germans from the country and reinstalled there after the beginning of the air war on Germany.

American and Russian troops withdrew simultaneously from Czechoslovakia on December 1.

Between August 1 and December 1 the Czech People's Courts sentenced a total of 1,370 German and Czech war criminals, 86 to death and 76 to long terms of imprisonment. Dr. Emil Hacha, puppet president of the Protectorate, died on June 27 while awaiting trial.

The first general elections since 1935 were held on May 26, 1946. In Bohemia-Moravia, the Communists secured 93 seats, Social Nationalists 55, Christian Democrats 46, Social Democrats 37; in Slovakia, Christian Democrats 43, Communists 21, Freedom Party 2, Labour Party 2. On June 4 President Benes (whose re-election as President of the Republic it was agreed by all parties should take place at the first meeting of the new Assembly on June 14) charged Mr. Klemens Gottwald, the Communist leader, with the formation of a new Cabinet, Mr. Fierlinger having refused a Communist invitation to remain as Prime Minister of a new Government.

#### REMEMBRANCE AT LIDICE

Czechoslovakia in June 1946 commemorated the fourth anniversary of the massacre of Lidice (see page 2569), the mining village, 20 miles west of Prague, wiped out by the Nazis on June 10, 1942, because, they alleged, it had harboured the killers of Reinhard Heydrich. All that marked the site was this cross erected by the Russians over the mass grave of the village's murdered men.





**October 1.** Czechoslovakia resumed diplomatic relations with Rumania. King Leopold of the Belgians issued proclamation to the Belgian people before leaving Austria for Switzerland.

**October 2.** In Indo-China truce declared between French authorities and the Annamites. Announced that General Patton had been relieved of his command of the U.S. 3rd Army and of his post as Military Governor of Bavaria, and had been replaced by Lieutenant-General Truscott. Council of Foreign Ministers in London terminated its first session. First travelling Post Office train for five years left Euston for Aberdeen.

**October 3.** In China fighting in Kunming between Chungking troops and Chinese Communists. French battleship "Richelieu" covered landings of Allied troops in Indo-China. Darnand, head of Vichy militia, sentenced to death, executed seven days later. Constitution of World Trades Union Federation adopted in Paris. General de Gaulle visited Saarbrücken in French occupation zone. President Truman recommended Congress to establish a commission on control of atomic energy development. First gap in Walcheren dykes sealed.

**October 4.** In Tokyo Allied H.Q. ordered removal of Japanese Home Minister Yamazaki, release of political prisoners, abolition of secret police and abrogation of all laws restricting freedom of thought. Trial opened in Paris of Pierre Laval on charges of treason.

**October 5.** Japan's Prime Minister, Higashi-Kuni, and his entire Cabinet resigned. In London troops of the Household Cavalry mounted guard in Whitehall for the first time since the outbreak of war.

**October 6.** Baron Shidehara, appointed Japanese Prime Minister, pledged that Japan would follow the course of democracy. General MacArthur abolished Shintoism as Japanese state religion. Indictment of leading German war criminals signed in Berlin by the chief prosecutors of U.K., U.S.A., U.S.S.R. and France.

**October 7.** In Paris Laval and his counsel withdrew from court as a protest against the conduct of the trial. First party of released prisoners of war from the Far East arrived in England, at Southampton.

**October 8.** Rudolf Hess flown from Britain to Germany to stand trial as a war criminal. Palestine Jews demonstrated in Tel-Aviv, Jerusalem and Haifa against British immigration policy. Indonesian extremists arrested all "moderate" officials, forbade sale of food or goods to Europeans or Eurasians. Norwegian General Election. President Truman declared at Press conference that U.S. would not share secret of atomic bomb production with any other nation.

**October 9.** Andaman Islands re-occupied by British troops. South Africa ratified United Nations Charter. Military Government in Burma gave place to civilian administration. British and Dutch officials arrested by Indonesian extremists. Laval sentenced to death while absent from court.

**October 10.** U.S. Secretary of State announced plans for the formation of Far East Advisory Council to sit at Washington. The U.S.A. recognized the Hungarian Government. In Britain, the Chancellor presented a bill to nationalize the Bank of England; 30,000 dockers out on strike.

**October 11.** General MacArthur presented Baron Shidehara, the Japanese Prime Minister, with a five-point programme for social and political reform. It was announced that all U.S. forces were to leave Palestine, beginning on October 12.

**October 12.** Negotiations between French and Annamites at Saigon broke down. Dutch Prime Minister, Mr. Schermerhorn, broadcast on position in Java. General de Gaulle declared: "We never want to see a German Reich again." Return of "Queen Elizabeth" and "Aquitania" to British service announced.

**October 13.** Indonesian People's Army declared war on Dutch, Eurasians, and Amboinese in Java. Announced that British, Chinese and Russian forces were to join the U.S. in the occupation of Japan. Syria and Lebanon agreed on a joint policy towards Palestine.

**October 14.** Major-General Hawthorn, British officer commanding Allied forces in Java, issued a proclamation listing offences against the military administration.

**October 15.** Conference of International Labour Organization opened in Paris. Laval executed. Sir Reginald Dorman-Smith, Governor of Burma, returned to Rangoon for the first time since 1942. General MacArthur declared Japanese disarmament completed. Dr. van Mook expressed willingness to open discussions with Indonesians on basis of Queen Wilhelmina's 1942 declaration.

**October 16.** At Batavia Indonesians held first "national" conference. Announced that British Government was prepared to recognize Dr. Renner's Austrian Provisional Government. Thirty nations signed Charter of United Nations Food and Agriculture Organization, Argentina and the U.S.S.R. abstaining.

**October 17.** Archbishop Damaskinos, the Greek Regent, assumed the Premiership. At Hamburg trial opened of U-boat crew accused of murdering British and Allied seamen in the Atlantic in March 1944. German H.Q. in Norway disbanded.

**October 18.** In Berlin Allied Military Tribunal held its first open session and received indictments against 24 leading Nazis. Indonesians rejected status within the Netherlands Empire offered them by the Dutch.

**October 19.** Marshal of the R.A.F. Sir Arthur Tedder succeeded Lord Portal as Chief of Air Staff. In Rome Signor de Gasperi, Italian Foreign Minister, disclosed that Italian Government was sounding the Allies about a revision of the international status of Italy.

**October 20.** Great Britain, the U.S., the U.S.S.R. and France gave official recognition to Dr. Renner's Provisional Government.

**October 21.** Elections to Constituent Assembly and Referendum on its standing held in France. British and U.S. Governments expressed strong regrets to the U.S.S.R. at the terms of the Soviet-Hungarian economic agreement (initialled in Moscow, August 27).

**October 22.** In the Shantung province of China, fighting broke out between Chinese Communists and Government forces. Allied Control Council announced "fundamental principles of judicial reform" for Germany. Announced that no more permanent commissions in the Indian Army would be granted to British officers.

**October 23.** Budapest radio announced the decision of the four major Hungarian political parties to hold elections on November 4, as arranged. Russia proposed to Austria an exchange of diplomatic representatives.

**October 24.** United Nations organization called into existence at Washington. Execution at Oslo of Norwegian traitor, Vidkun Quisling. Formal surrender at Rangoon of General Kimura, C-in-C., Japanese forces in Burma. Mr. Stalin received Mr. Harriman, U.S. Ambassador, at Sochi in the Caucasus.

**October 25.** Robert Ley, former German Labour Front leader and one of the leading Nazis on trial at Nuremberg, committed suicide in his cell. French 2nd Armoured Division arrived at Saigon, went into action.

**October 26.** Finnish-Russian border agreement announced. Mr. Bevin told House of Commons that there were from twenty to twenty-five million displaced people on the move in Europe. Sir Ben Smith, Minister of Food, said that world food prospects for coming year were "seriously disquieting."

**October 27.** In Navy Day Address in New York President Truman gave 12 points of U.S. foreign policy. Dr. Benes decreed the nationalization of some 1,000 Czechoslovak industrial and financial concerns. Sir John Boyd-Orr nominated Director-General of United Nations Food and Agriculture Organization.

**October 28.** Chinese Central Government offered terms to Yen'an Communists with view to stabilizing political situation in N. China. Dr. Benes declared that Sudeten Germans must leave Czechoslovakia in interests of European peace.

**October 29.** Mr. Attlee announced British Government's decision to set up atomic research station near Didcot. Fighting reported in N. China between Government and Communist forces. Trial of General Yamashita, "the Tiger of Malaya," opened at Manila.

**October 30.** Brigadier Mallaby, British commander in Sourabaya, murdered by Indonesian extremists while conducting "cease fire" parleys. Chinese Government troops began landing from U.S. ships at Chinwangtao. Czechoslovak Provisional National Assembly confirmed Dr. Benes as President.

**October 31.** General Christison, Allied C-in-C., announced that unless Brigadier Mallaby's murderers surrendered, the whole weight of Allied forces would be brought against them.



# MEMBERS OF BRITAIN'S LABOUR CABINET OF 1945



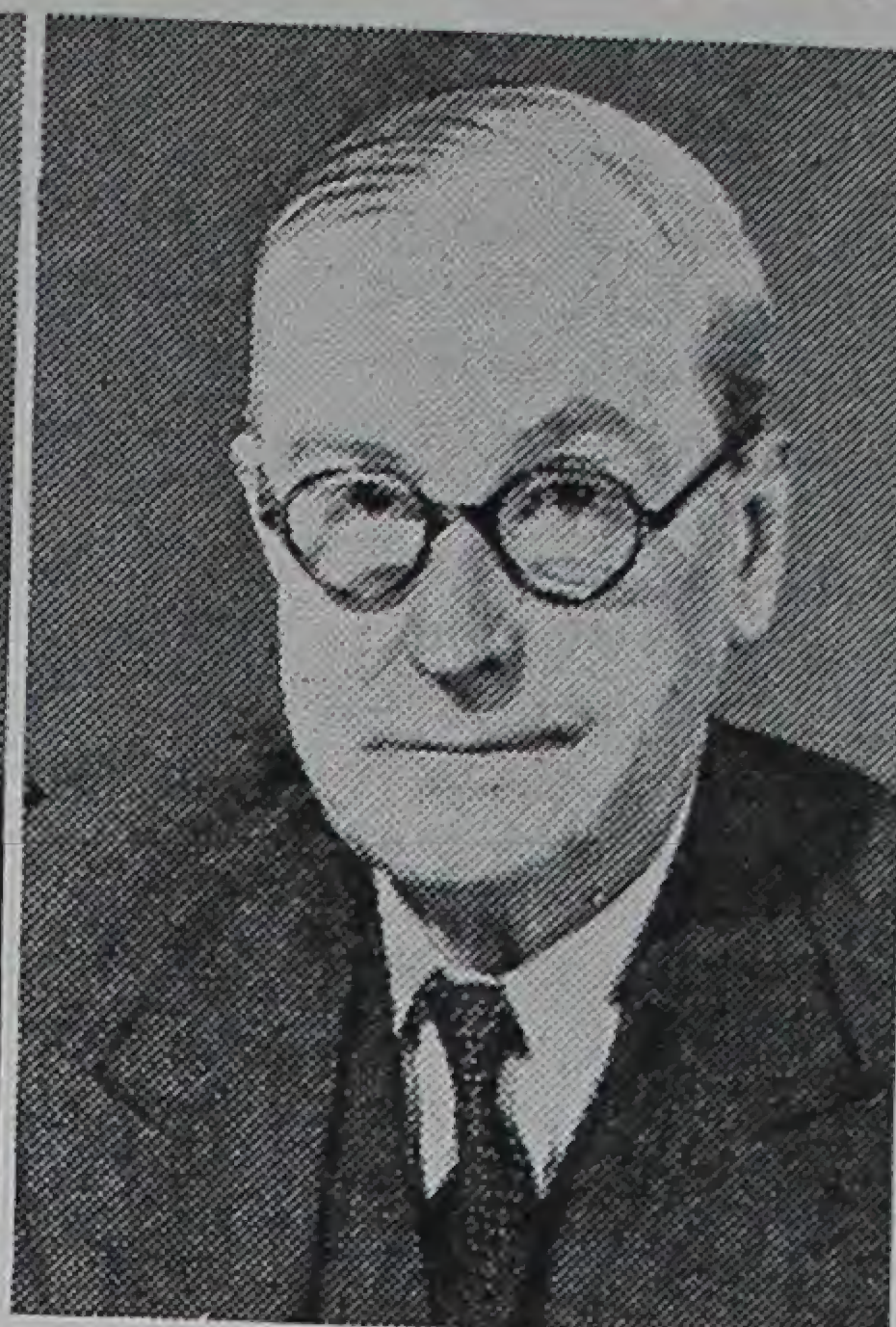
**CLEMENT R. ATTLEE**  
Prime Minister



**HERBERT MORRISON**  
Lord President of the Council



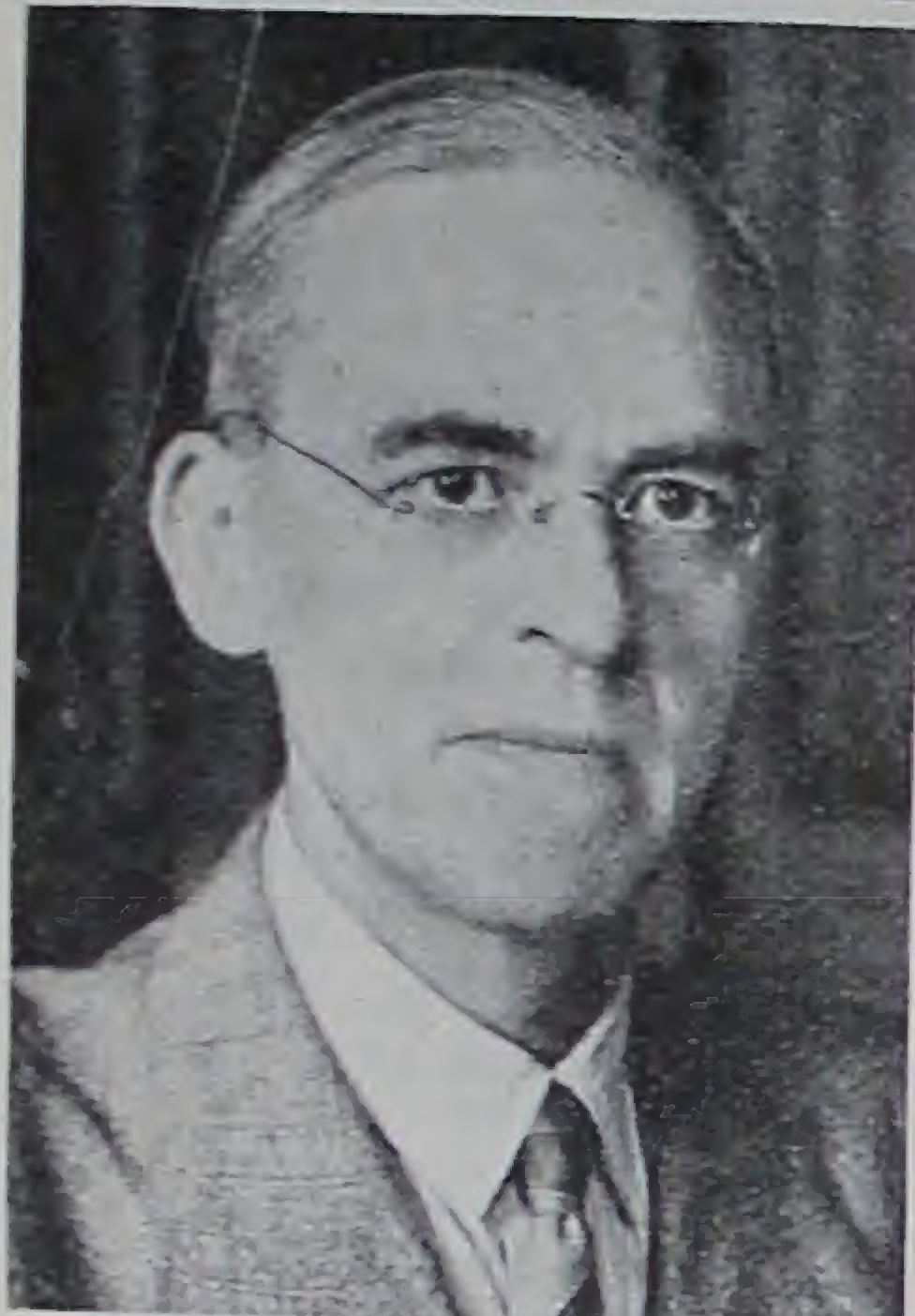
**ERNEST BEVIN**  
Foreign Secretary



**ARTHUR GREENWOOD**  
Lord Privy Seal



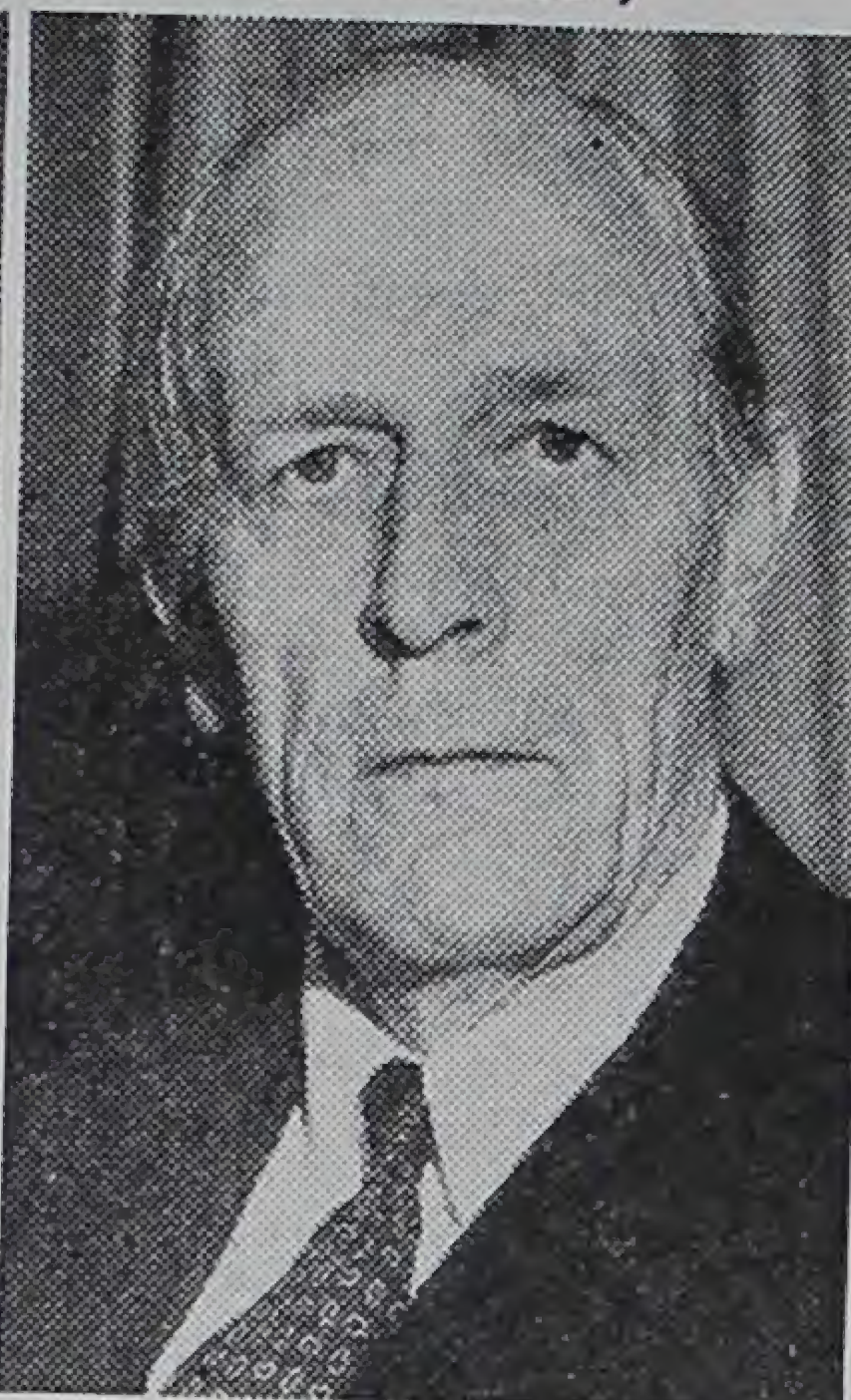
**HUGH DALTON**  
Chancellor of the Exchequer



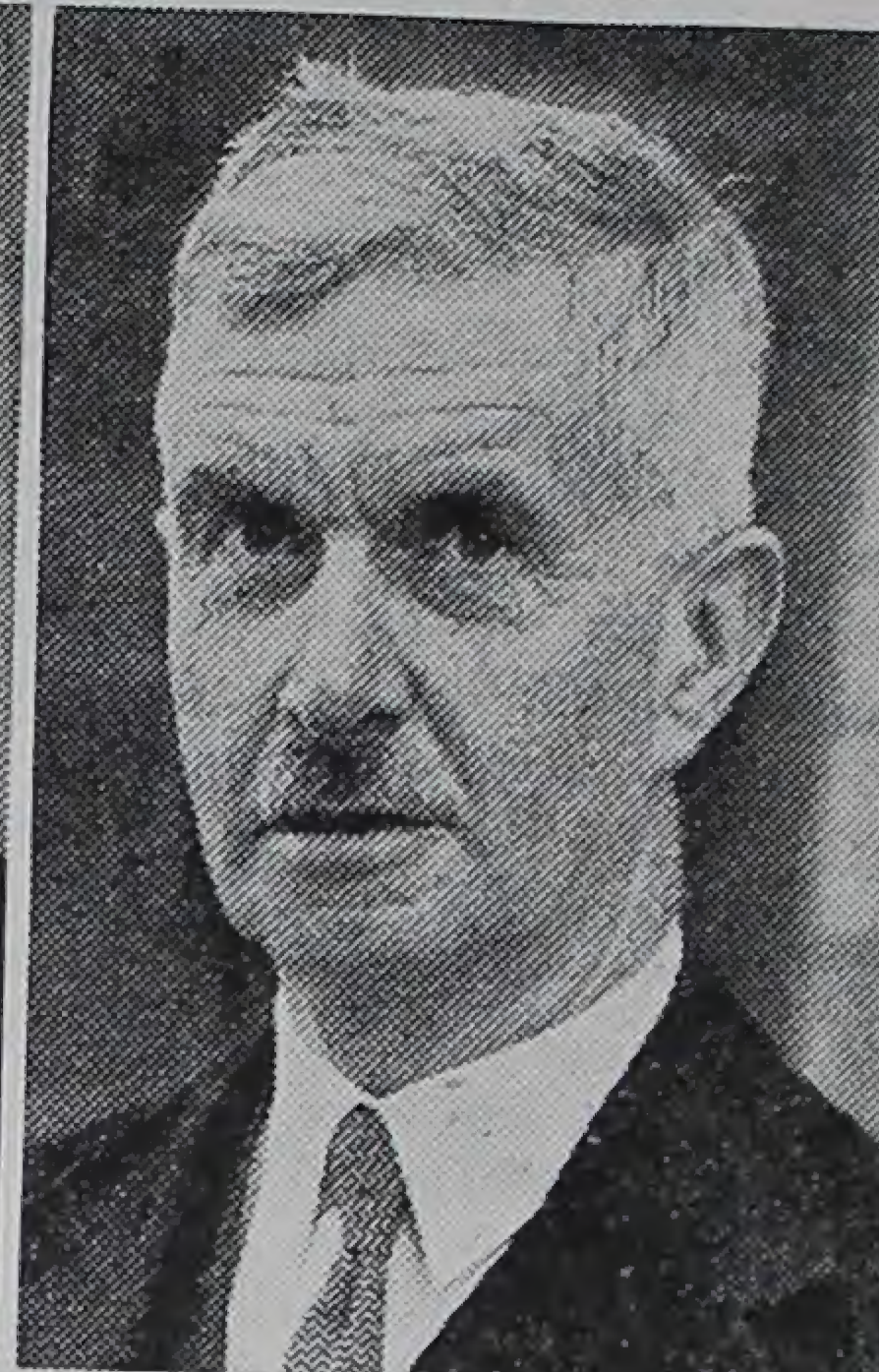
**SIR STAFFORD CRIPPS**  
President of the Board of Trade



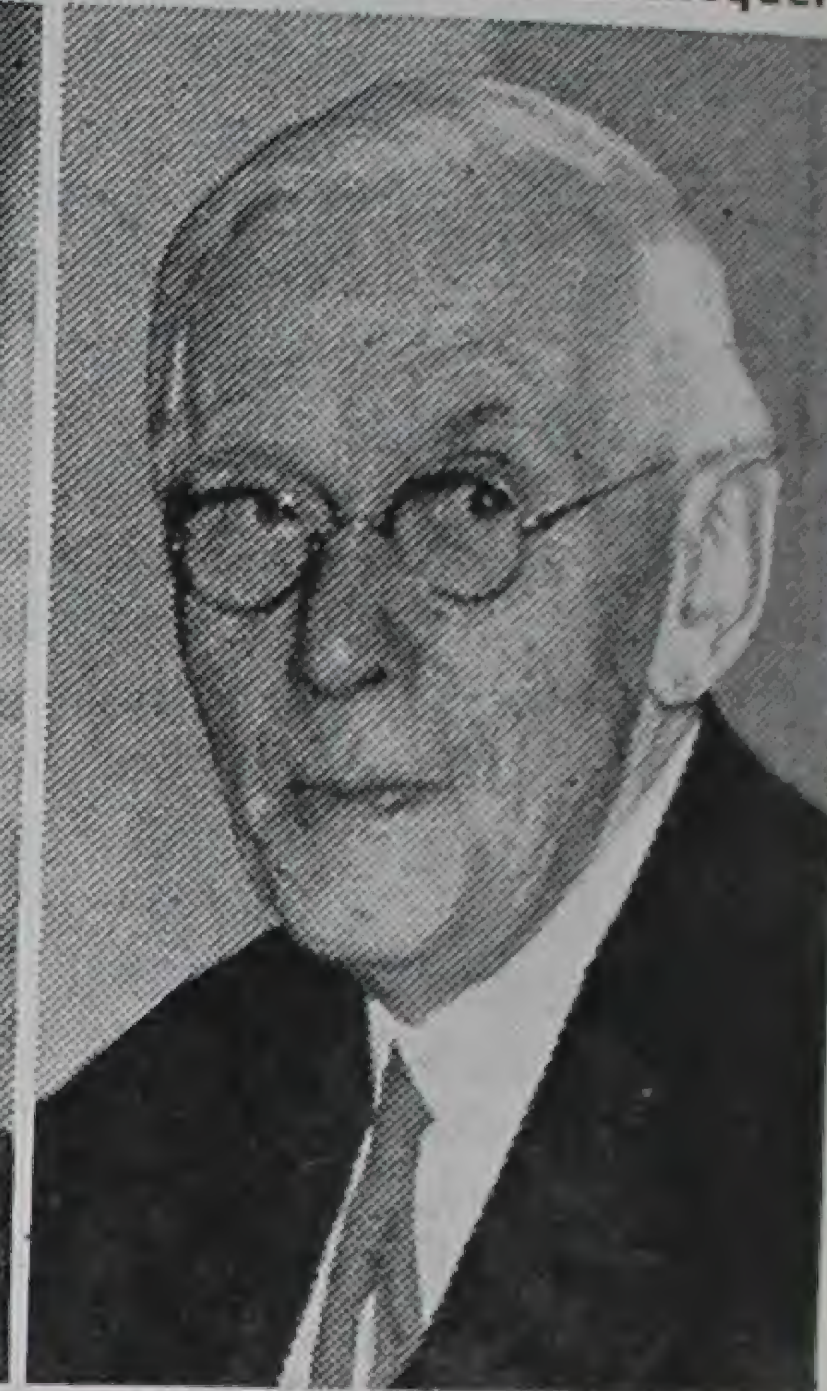
**A. V. ALEXANDER**  
First Lord of the Admiralty



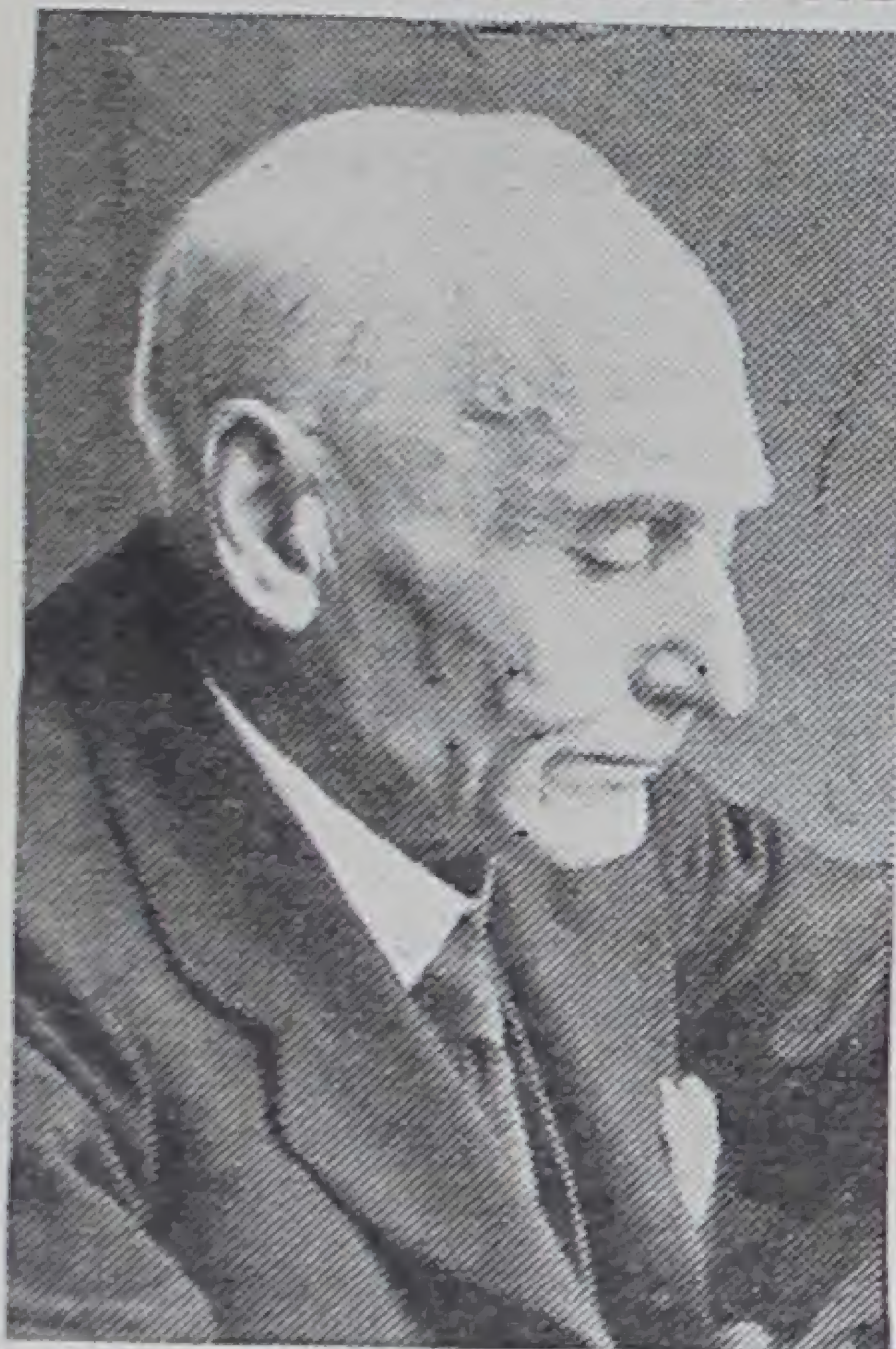
**LORD JOWITT**  
Lord Chancellor



**J. CHUTER EDE**  
Home Secretary



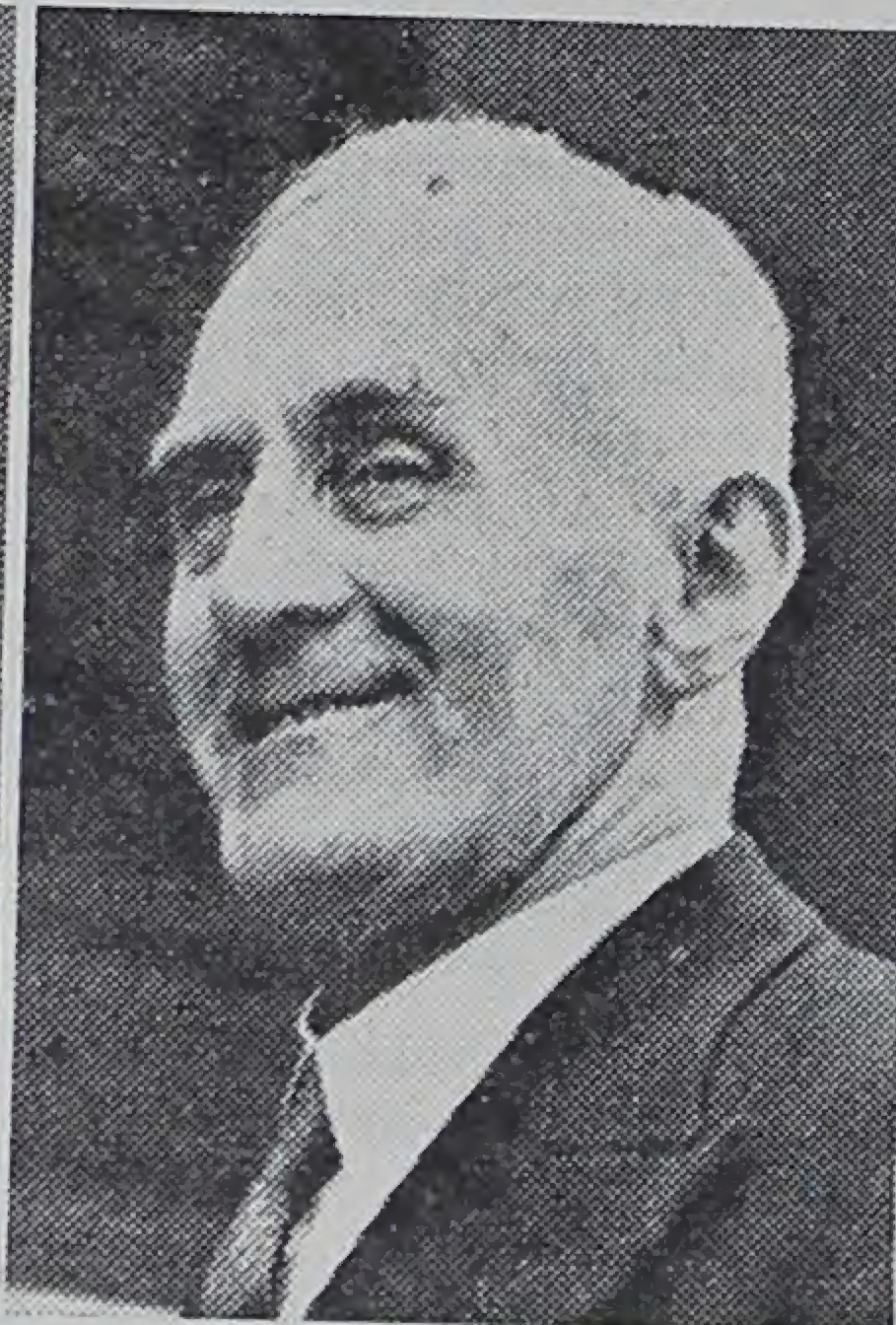
**VISCOUNT ADDISON**  
Dominions Secretary



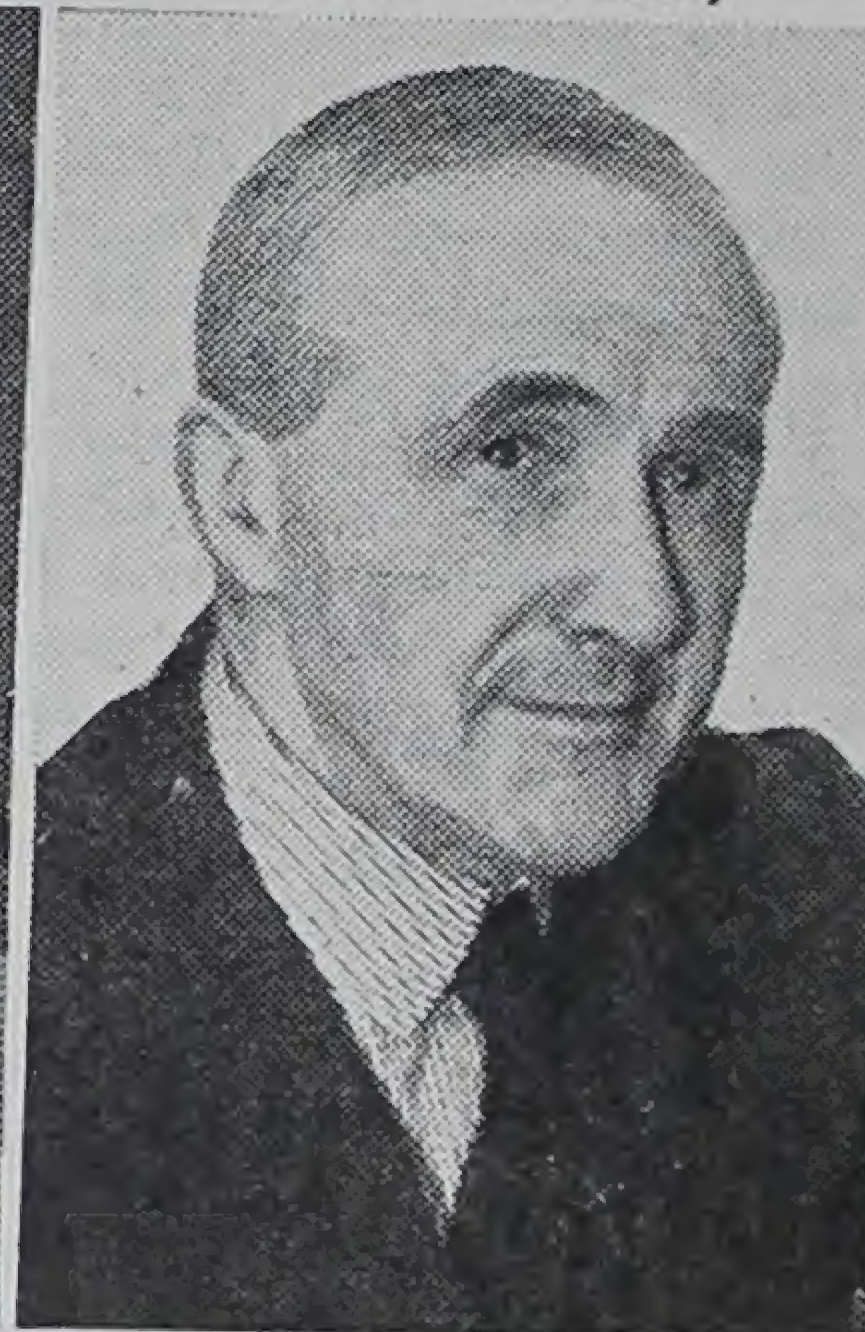
**LORD PETHICK-LAWRENCE**  
Secretary of State for India



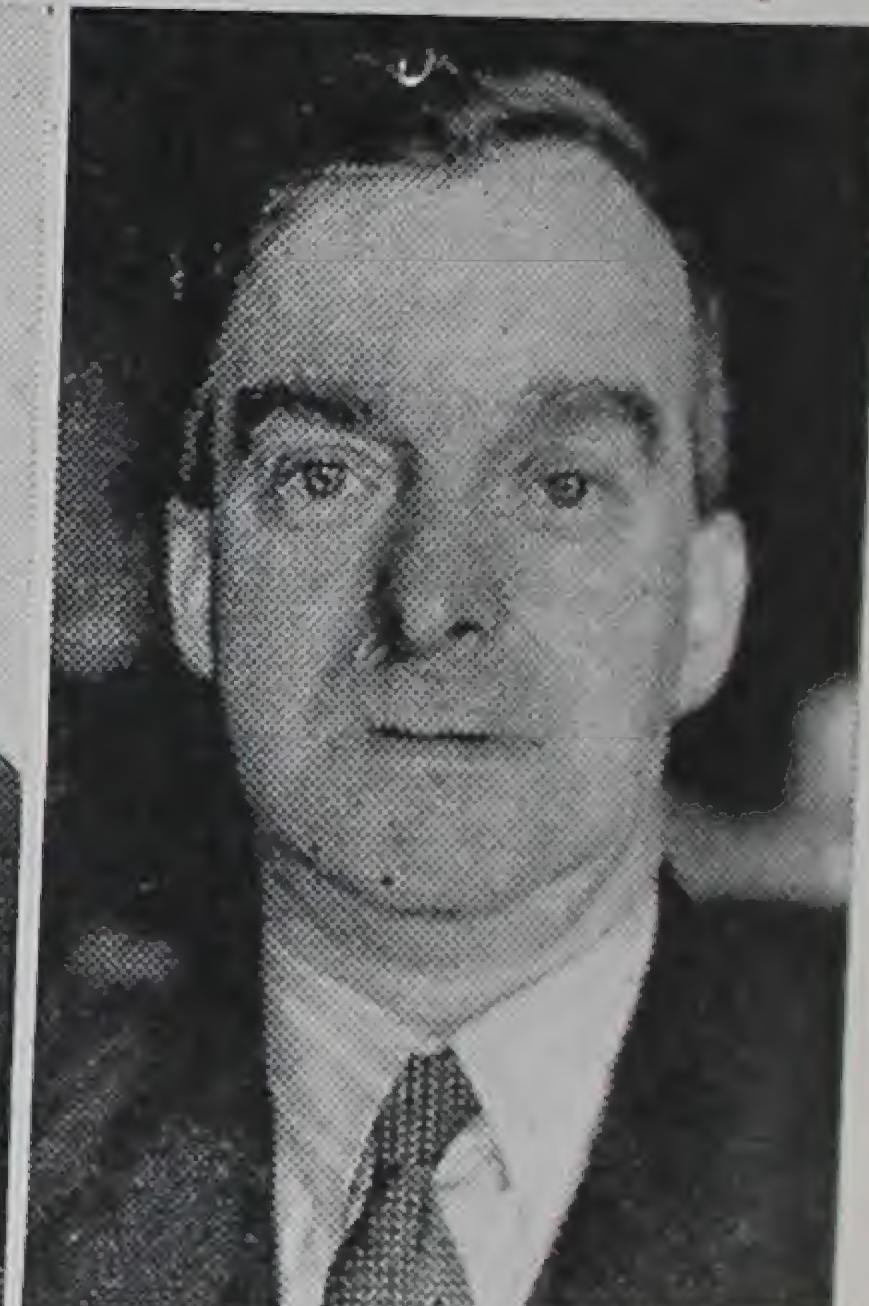
**G. H. HALL**  
Colonial Secretary



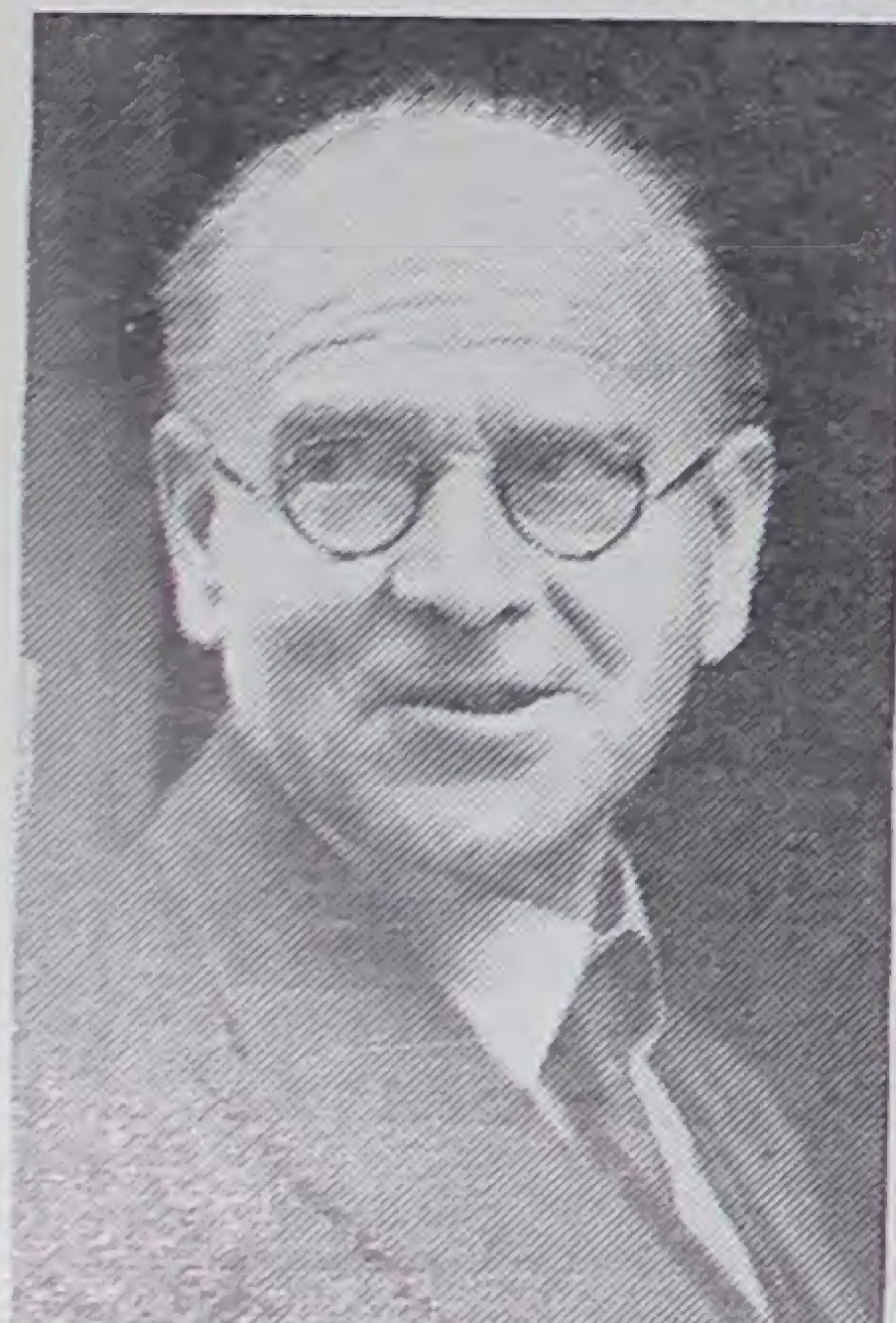
**J. J. LAWSON**  
Minister for War



**VISCOUNT STANSGATE**  
Minister for Air



**JOSEPH WESTWOOD**  
Secretary for Scotland



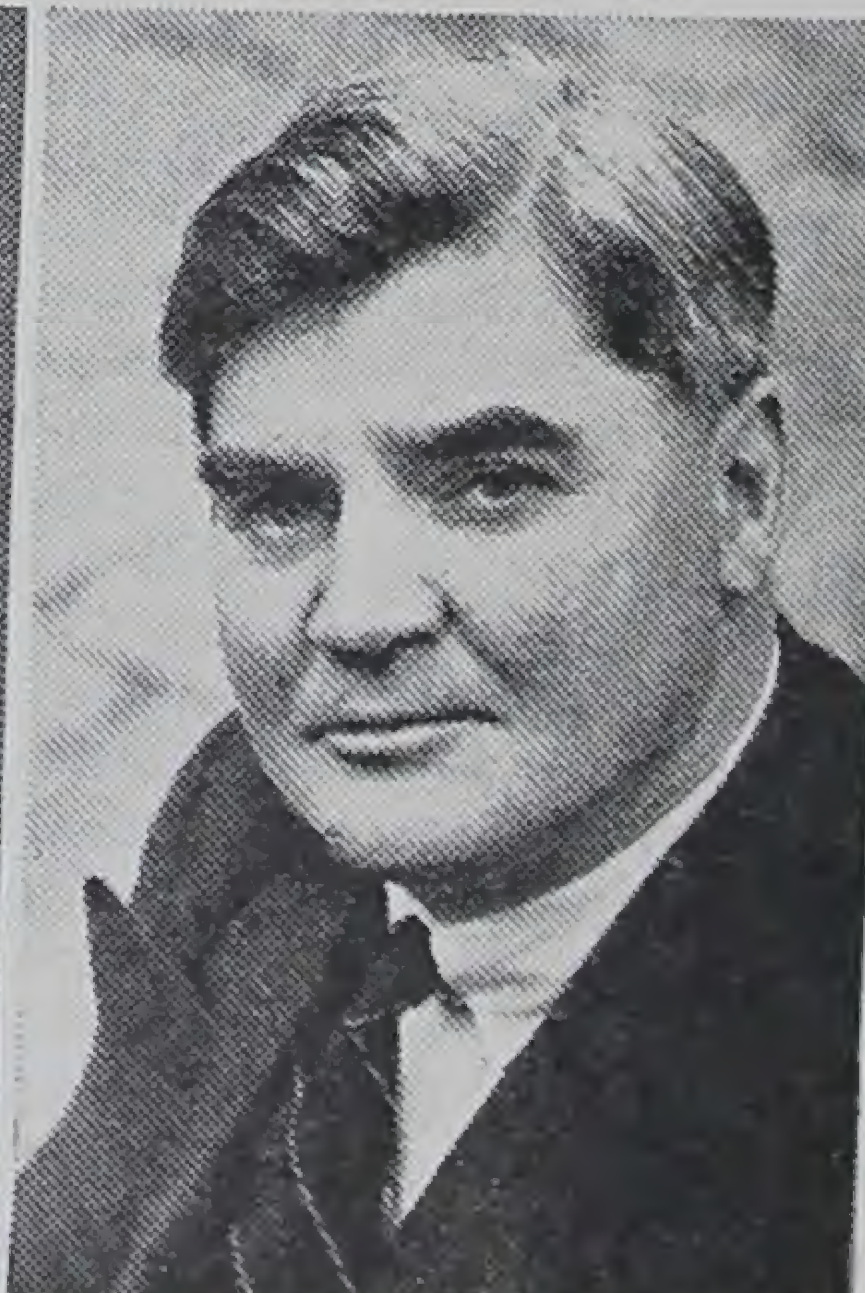
**GEORGE A. ISAACS**  
Minister of Labour



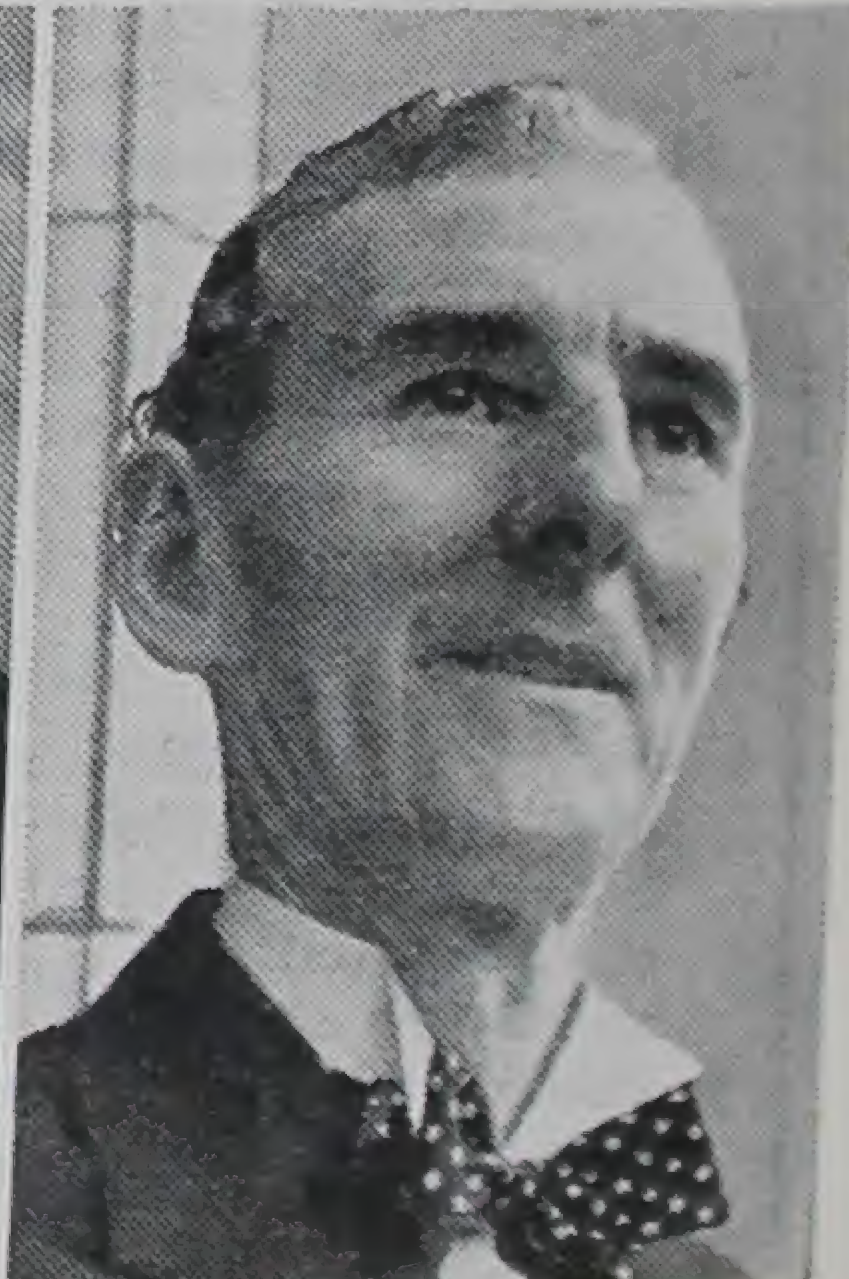
**EMANUEL SHINWELL**  
Minister of Fuel



**ELLEN WILKINSON**  
Minister of Education



**ANEURIN BEVAN**  
Minister of Health



**TOM WILLIAMS**  
Minister of Agriculture



# PEACE COMES TO BRITAIN AFTER SIX YEARS

*Describing the three months' interval between the end of the war in Europe and the cessation of fighting in the Far East on August 15, 1945, this concluding chapter on the Home Front tells of the coming to full power of a Labour Government. It then records outstanding events in Great Britain, Northern Ireland and the Channel Islands up to the close of the year. Some idea is given of how the gigantic task of directing the nation's whole way of life into the paths of peace was begun with courage and determination in face of manifold difficulties both at home and abroad*

**T**HE rejoicings over the end of hostilities in Europe were brief—Japan had still to be defeated, and though Allied leaders were hopeful that 1945 would see the end of that campaign too, the people had been warned of the possibility of a long-continued struggle in the Far East, and prepared themselves to face it.

On May 18, Mr. Churchill sent letters in identical terms to the leaders of the Labour, Liberal and National Liberal Parties proposing the maintenance of the Coalition Government "until a decisive victory has been gained over Japan." "If you should decide to stay with us," he said, "all united together until the Japanese surrender is compelled, let us discuss means of taking the nation's opinion, for example a referendum, on the issue whether, in these conditions, the life of this Parliament should be further prolonged."

The Labour Party Conference, then meeting at Blackpool, decided with only two dissident votes to reject the Prime Minister's proposals.

**Labour Wants Autumn Election** "The need for bringing to an end when conditions allow a

Parliament the life of which has been prolonged year after year has been recognized by all of us," said Mr. Attlee in his reply, "and by no one more emphatically than yourself. . . . We consider that the fair and just solution of the problem is an election in the autumn. . . . I do not think that it would be right or possible to obtain from Parliament another prolongation of its life. I could not consent to the introduction into our national life of a device so alien to all our traditions as the referendum. . . . Hitler's practices in the field of referenda and plebiscites can hardly have endeared these expedients to the British heart."

But Mr. Churchill, feeling that an election to be fought on a party basis pending in the autumn would interfere with the smooth working of the Coalition Government, decided on immediate resignation, and at noon on May 23, 1945, tendered the resignation of the Cabinet he had formed on May 11, 1940.

The King invited him, as leader of the strongest party in the House, to form a new government to hold office until a new Parliament was elected. Mr. Attlee resumed his position as Leader of the Opposition. With the breakup of the Coalition, the wartime ministries of Home Security and Economic Warfare disappeared, their residuary functions being taken over respectively by the Home Office and the Foreign Office.



## P.M. GOES ELECTIONEERING

The General Election campaign in Britain opened on June 4, 1945, when Mr. Churchill, Prime Minister of the 'Caretaker' Government which followed the breakup of the Coalition, outlined his party's policy in a broadcast. Here he begins his election tour, at Uxbridge, where he told his audience, 'It was not by my desire that the election has come about.' Photo, Sport and General

On June 15, the 37th Parliament of the United Kingdom—fourth longest in British history—was dissolved after a life of nine years six months and twenty days. The election campaign had already opened, on June 4, with a broadcast by the Prime Minister. Electioneering by broadcasting was on a much larger scale than in 1935, when five broadcasts were made by the Government, four by the Labour Party, and three by the opposition Liberals. In 1945, the Government was allotted ten

periods, the Labour Party ten, and the Liberals four following the 9 p.m. news bulletin, the peak hour of listening. The Government relied in its appeals almost exclusively on Mr. Churchill's immense popularity and success as a war leader. His portrait and the phrase "Help him to finish the job" constituted the major part of Conservative propaganda, and during the last days of the campaign the Prime Minister made a rush tour of the Midlands, the North, Scotland, and London. Everywhere he received an enthusiastic personal reception, but encountered lively political opposition.

The principal points in the policy put forward by the Labour Party were the nationalization of the coal mines and the transport system, an effective and comprehensive scheme of social security, a clear cut programme for export trade, rapid rehousing to provide good accommodation for all, a foreign policy based on loyal co-operation in the United Nations organization, and the maintenance of controls to the extent required to effect a smooth transition from war to peace conditions. Polling day was July 5, except in 23 constituencies where, owing to local holidays, polling was, by a special act, held in 22 cases on July 22, and in one case on July 19. To allow time for the receipt of Service votes from overseas, to record and collect which elaborate steps had been taken, the results were not declared until July 26, in the middle of the conference of representatives of the United Kingdom, the United States, and Soviet Russia which met at Potsdam on July 17 (see page 3923). The Labour Party secured a sweeping majority: 393 seats (compared with 164 in the previous House) against the Conservatives' 189 (formerly 358). Only 12 Liberals were returned (instead of 18); Liberal Nationalists, now indistinguishable from Conservatives, numbered 13 (instead of 26). Independents numbered 14, Northern Ireland representatives nine Unionists and two Nationalists. Four "splinter" parties secured only eight seats between them.



Among Cabinet Ministers in Mr. Churchill's interim government who lost their seats were Mr. L. S. Amery, Mr. Brendan Bracken, Sir James Grigg, Mr. Hore-Belisha, Mr. Richard Lloyd, Mr. Harold Macmillan. Mr. Churchill's son-in-law, Mr. Duncan Sandys, and his son, Major Randolph Churchill, were also defeated. Sir Archibald Sinclair and Sir William Beveridge, whose social security report formed the basis for the social security plans of all parties, both lost their seats.

Mr. Churchill, who had flown back from Berlin to London to hear the election results, tendered his resignation at once, having held office as

### Mr. Churchill Resigns

Prime Minister for 1,902 days covering the most momentous period in the history of the British Isles. The King at once invited Mr. Attlee to form a Government. Mr. Attlee, First Lord of the Treasury and Minister of Defence as well as Prime Minister (as Mr. Churchill had been) filled the first seven Cabinet posts and on July 28 returned to Potsdam (where he had been with Mr. Churchill in an advisory capacity for the opening of the conference) as leader of the British delegation with his Foreign Secretary Mr. Ernest Bevin. Mr. Attlee chose the rest of the Cabinet (*see illus.* in page 3888) and his other Ministers after his return to London at the end of the Conference, which lasted until August 1.

On August 6 came the dropping of the first atomic bomb on the Japanese



Lieutenant FURNESS  
(Welsh Guards)

In late May 1940, during the retreat to the French coast, Lieut. the Hon. Christopher Furness performed a 'magnificent act of self-sacrifice against hopeless odds' for which he was posthumously awarded the V.C. While covering the withdrawal of transport from Arras his carriers were disabled, the crews killed or wounded, whereupon he fought the enemy hand-to-hand, single-handed, till he was killed. The transport got through.

industrial town of Hiroshima. Following the announcement of this event by President Truman, Mr. Attlee released a statement which had been prepared by Mr. Churchill before the change of government, setting out the history of the research which had gone to the production of this latest logical development of man's continued use of the finest fruits of his scientific intelligence for



Sergeant DURRANT  
(Corps of Royal Engineers)

For 'gallantry, skill, and devotion to duty' when in charge of a Lewis gun in a motor-launch in the St. Nazaire raid on March 28, 1942, Sergeant Thomas Frank Durrant was awarded the V.C. Answering a German destroyer's demand to surrender with a burst of fire, he continued to work his gun though badly wounded, until he was taken prisoner, when he died. For his part in this raid, Lt.-Col. A. C. Newman was also awarded the V.C. (See page 2255.)



Captain LIDDELL  
(Coldstream Guards)

While capturing a bridge over the River Ems near Lingen, Germany, on April 3, 1945, Captain Ian Oswald Liddell displayed 'outstanding gallantry' for which he was posthumously awarded the V.C. 'His superb example of courage,' ran the citation, 'will never be forgotten by those who saw it.' It was disclosed after his death that he was one of eight Brigade of Guards officers (Coates Mission) selected to protect the Royal Family in case of invasion.

purposes of destruction. Research into the possibilities of the release of energy by atomic fission, it was explained, had been undertaken by His Majesty's Government in 1941. Interchange of ideas between British and American scientists went on, and in October 1941 (before the United States came into the war) President Roosevelt suggested the merging of British and American efforts, as a result of which a number of British scientists went to the United States. By the summer of 1942 the work done confirmed the report made in the autumn of 1941 by the British Government committee of scientists presided over by Sir George Thomson, that the atomic bomb could be produced by the end of the war.

### EISENHOWER GETS CITY'S FREEDOM

General of the Army Dwight D. Eisenhower, Supreme Allied Commander, on June 11, 1945, flew to London from his H.Q. at Frankfurt-on-Main to receive the following day a sword of honour and the Freedom of the City of London which the Court of Common Council had unanimously decided to confer on him. Here, in Guildhall, he is receiving from the Lord Mayor, Sir Frank Alexander, as a token pending the completion of his own sword, one once owned by Wellington.

Photo, G.P.U.







#### VICTORY STAMPS

To mark the victory celebrations on June 8, 1946, special issues of British stamps were printed to the total cash value of £2,800,000, made up of 240,000,000 of the 2½d. denomination and 24,000,000 of the 3d. The former were blue, the latter deep violet, both being twice the normal breadth. After V.E. and V.J. Days postmarks (centre) bore the 'V' sign and victory bells.

"By God's mercy," said Mr. Churchill's statement, "British and American science outpaced all German efforts. These were on a considerable scale, but far behind. The possession of these powers by the Germans at any time might have altered the result of the war, and profound anxiety was felt by those who were informed. Every effort was made by our Intelligence Service and the R.A.F. to locate in Germany anything resembling the plants that were being created in the U.S. In the winter of 1942-43 most gallant attacks were made in Norway on two occasions by small parties of volunteers from the British Commandos and Norwegian forces at very heavy loss of life, upon stores of 'heavy water,' an element in one of the possible processes; the second of these attacks was completely successful." (See page 3202 and Chapter 379.)

But the first bomb was pronounced already out-dated when a second "better" one was dropped on Nagasaki three days later. Tokyo broadcast acceptance of the Potsdam ultimatum next day: the hideous weapon could be said to

have justified itself. Thousands of Japanese civilian men, women and children had been killed: but probably many more thousands of Allied, and of Japanese, service lives had been saved, since the Allies were spared the need of an armed invasion of the Japanese homeland with all the carnage that would have involved. Formal acceptance of the Allied terms of unconditional surrender was handed by the Japanese Minister to the Swiss Foreign Office at 8.10 p.m. on August 14, and at midnight Mr. Attlee broadcast news

of Japan's surrender, proclaiming August 15 and 16 Victory-over-Japan days (see Hist. Doct. 310, p. 3905).

The State opening of the new Parliament by King George VI coincided with the end of hostilities in the Second Great War. The speech from the Throne (see Hist. Doct. 311, p. 3905), setting out the Government's programme, was read to an assembly of both Houses and in the presence of the Diplomatic Corps. When the House of Commons reassembled in the afternoon, the Prime Minister read the terms of the



#### THANKSGIVING DAY AT ST. PAUL'S

Sunday, May 13, 1945, was observed throughout Britain as a day of thanksgiving. In London, Their Majesties, accompanied by the Princesses, drove through cheering crowds to St. Paul's Cathedral where the special service was conducted by the Archbishop of Canterbury. The vast congregation included European crowned heads, Allied Service leaders, the Diplomatic Corps, and Mr. Churchill and the War Cabinet. Here, the royal carriages pass down Ludgate Hill.

Photo, Planet News



Japanese surrender and then moved, "That this House do now attend the Church of St. Margaret, Westminster, to give humble and reverent thanks to Almighty God on the victorious conclusion of the War."

On August 21, Mr. Attlee announced in the House that the Government had decided to appoint an advisory committee, with Sir John

**Committee on Atomic Energy** Anderson as chairman, to assist them on the technical side on ques-

tions raised by the discovery of how to release atomic energy. Its members were Sir Alexander Cadogan, Permanent Under-Secretary of the Foreign Office, Field-Marshal Sir Alan Brooke, C.I.G.S., Sir Alan Barlow, Second Secretary of the Treasury, Sir Edward Appleton, Director of the Department of Scientific and Industrial Research, Sir Henry Dale, President of the Royal Society, Professor P. M. S. Blackett, Sir James Chadwick, and Sir George Thomson. On the recommendation of this committee, it was announced on October 29 that it had been decided to set up at Harwell near Didcot in Berkshire a research and experimental station covering all aspects of the use of atomic energy.

Relaxation of wartime restrictions continued. On May 9, 84 defence regulations (including 18B under which the Home Secretary could, without formal charge, detain persons whose activities he considered to be a possible danger to the State) were revoked in entirety, 25 others in part. Fifty persons still detained under 18B were released. All lighting restrictions everywhere in the United Kingdom were lifted on May 10. Shipping movements



#### SURRENDERED U-BOAT COMES UP THE THAMES

London had its first view of a surrendered U-boat on May 22, 1945, when the U776 sailed up the Thames to be moored for public inspection below Westminster Bridge. The U-boat, flying the White Ensign, was reputed to have a range of 10,000 miles at a surface speed of 10 knots, but when surrendered had done only one patrol of 54 miles and fired only one torpedo—which missed.

*Photo, Daily Press*

and casualties were published by Lloyd's on May 29 for the first time since September 1939, and from midnight on May 28-29 convoys ceased to sail in

non-combat areas, and the necessity of darkening ships at night was lifted. Lighthouses and lightships round the British coast, blacked out during the war, showed full lights on May 30.

Restrictions on travel between Great Britain and Northern Ireland were relaxed from May 17. All internal censorship in Great Britain, and censorship of mails and of documents carried by passen-

gers to Northern Ireland, ceased at the same time. Censorship of the press ended in Britain on September 2, exactly six years after it began. Submission of news had remained voluntary throughout the war; editors, co-operating willingly with the Chief Press Censor Rear-Admiral G. P. Thomson in preventing any breach of security, had submitted for censorship 665,500 items, totalling 183 million words.

The last civilian internment camps in the Isle of Man were closed by the beginning of September. Double summer time (introduced in 1941 as a war measure) ended on July 15, summer time on October 7, the following winter

#### THE KING BIDS FAREWELL TO THE CIVIL DEFENCE

A farewell parade was held in Hyde Park on Sunday, June 10, 1945, of 2,500 men and women representative of Britain's Civil Defence services in every region of Great Britain and Northern Ireland. They were inspected by the King, accompanied by the Queen and Princess Elizabeth. Here, a section marches past the saluting base. Stand-down of the Civil Defence took place on May 2.

*Photo, Planet News*

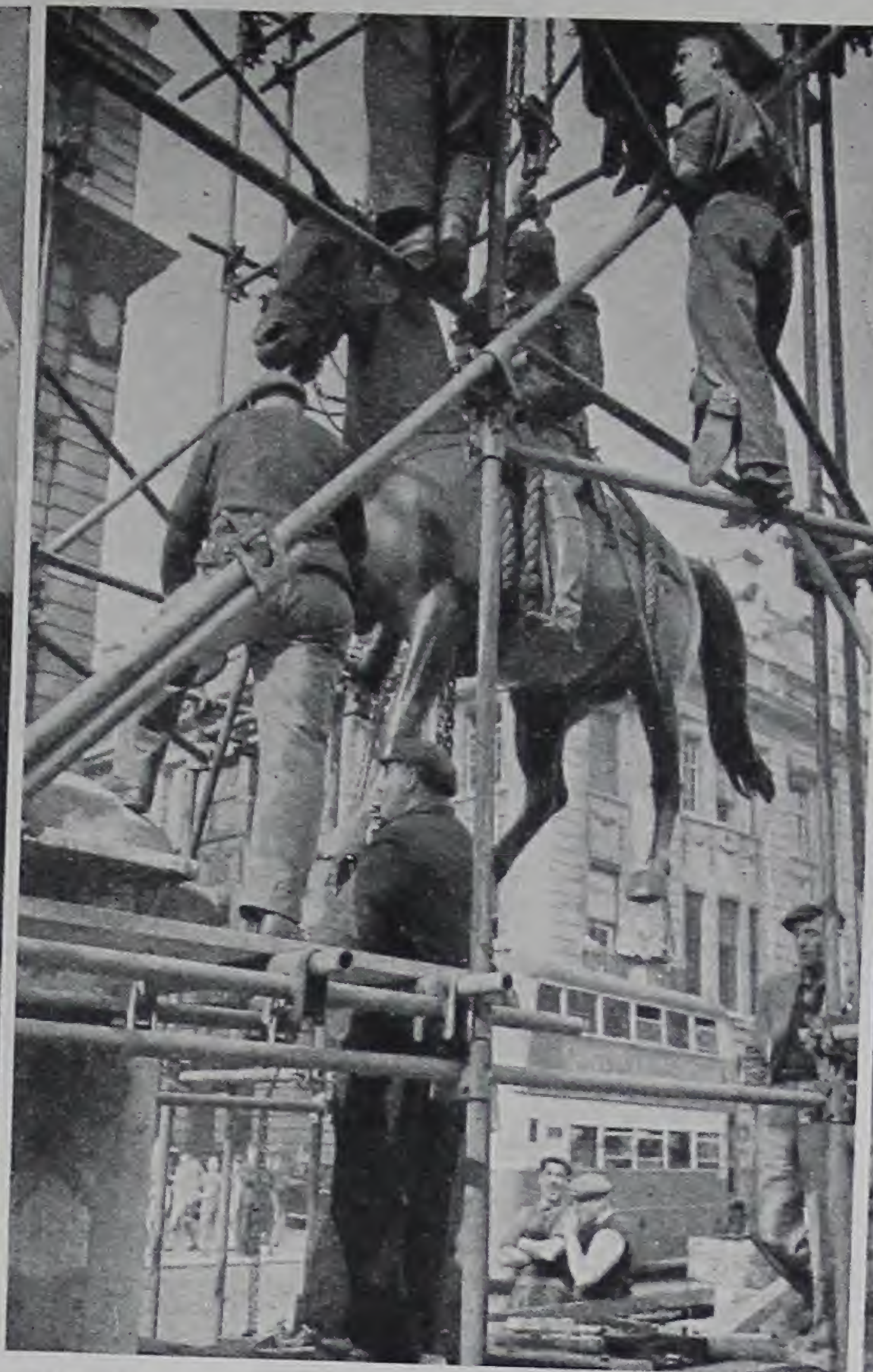




## LONDON GETS BACK TO NORMAL



Famous paintings from the national collections, stored for safety during the war eighty feet beneath Piccadilly Circus in the Underground, brought up again, February 1946.



The fine equestrian statue of George III by Wyatt which had been removed 'for the duration' to Berkhamsted, Herts (see illus. in page 1912), returned to Cockspur Street, in mid-April 1946.



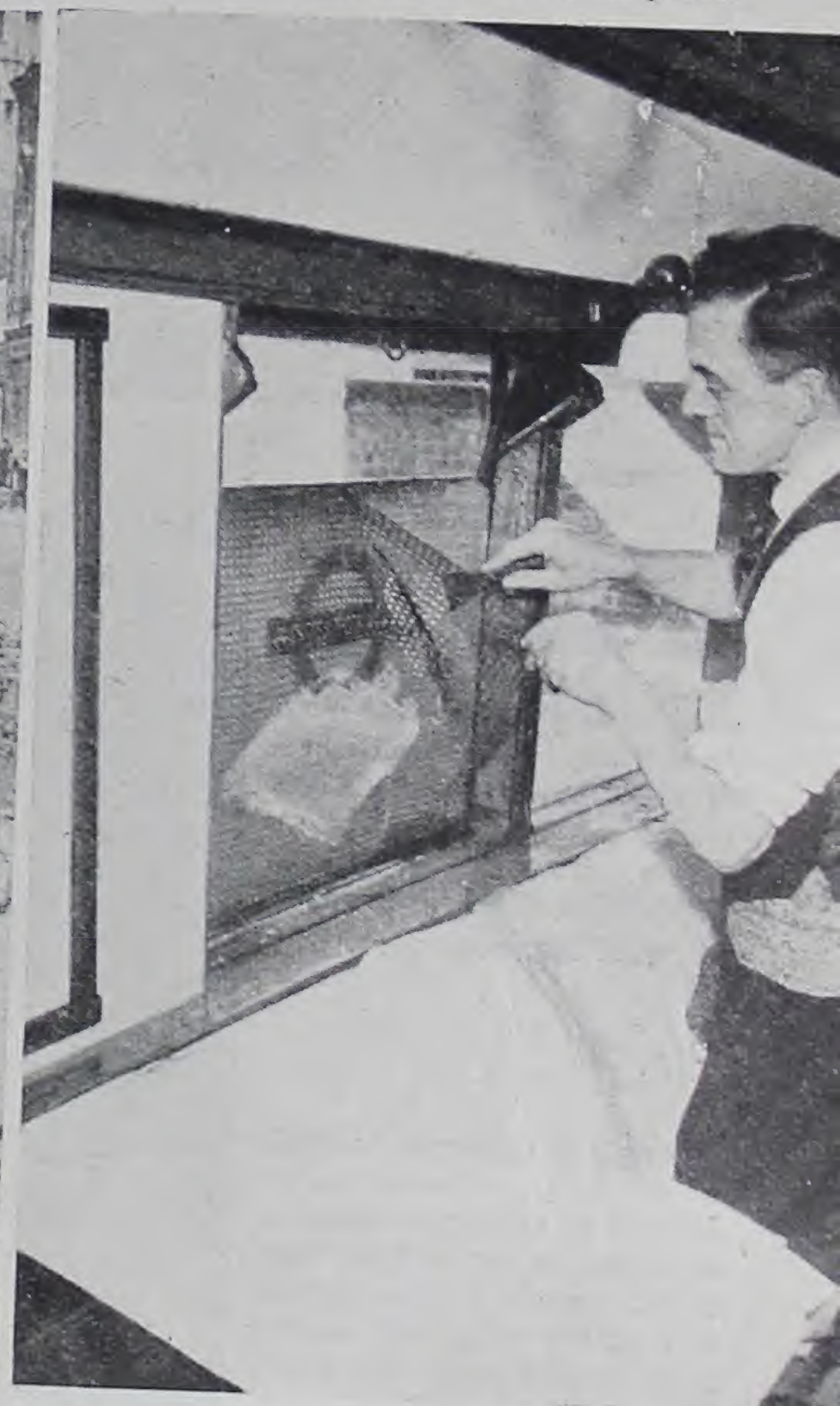
On January 30, 1946, 20 tons of priceless manuscripts were brought back to the British Museum from Skipton Castle, Yorkshire, where they had been for six years.



Removal of surface pipes, laid along London streets to provide water for fire-fighting (see page 1720), began in July 1945. Here, dismantling pipes across London Bridge.

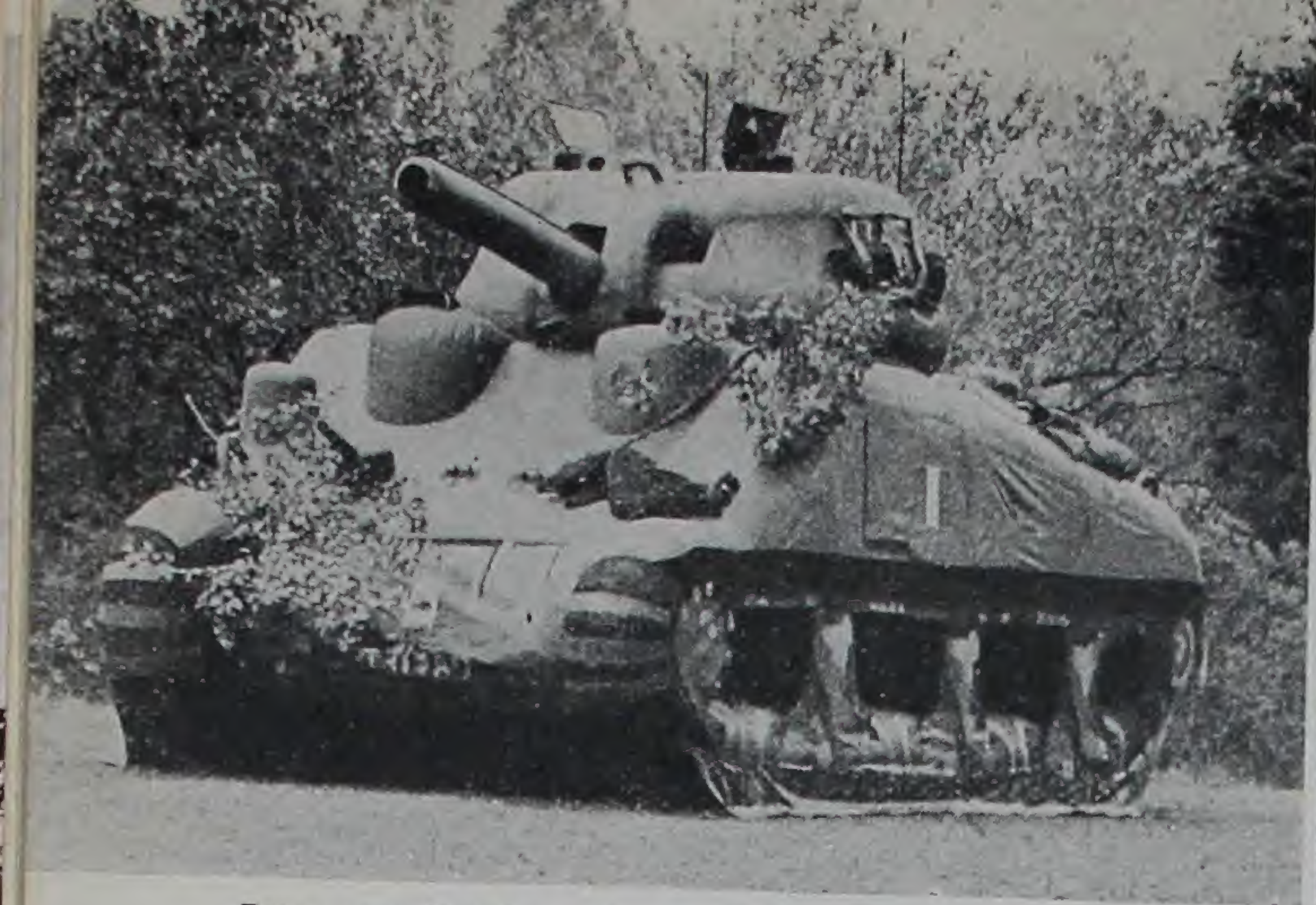


By the autumn of 1945 removal of the thousands of public surface shelters erected in the streets had begun. Demolition squads are here at work in Haymarket during March 1946 (see page 831).

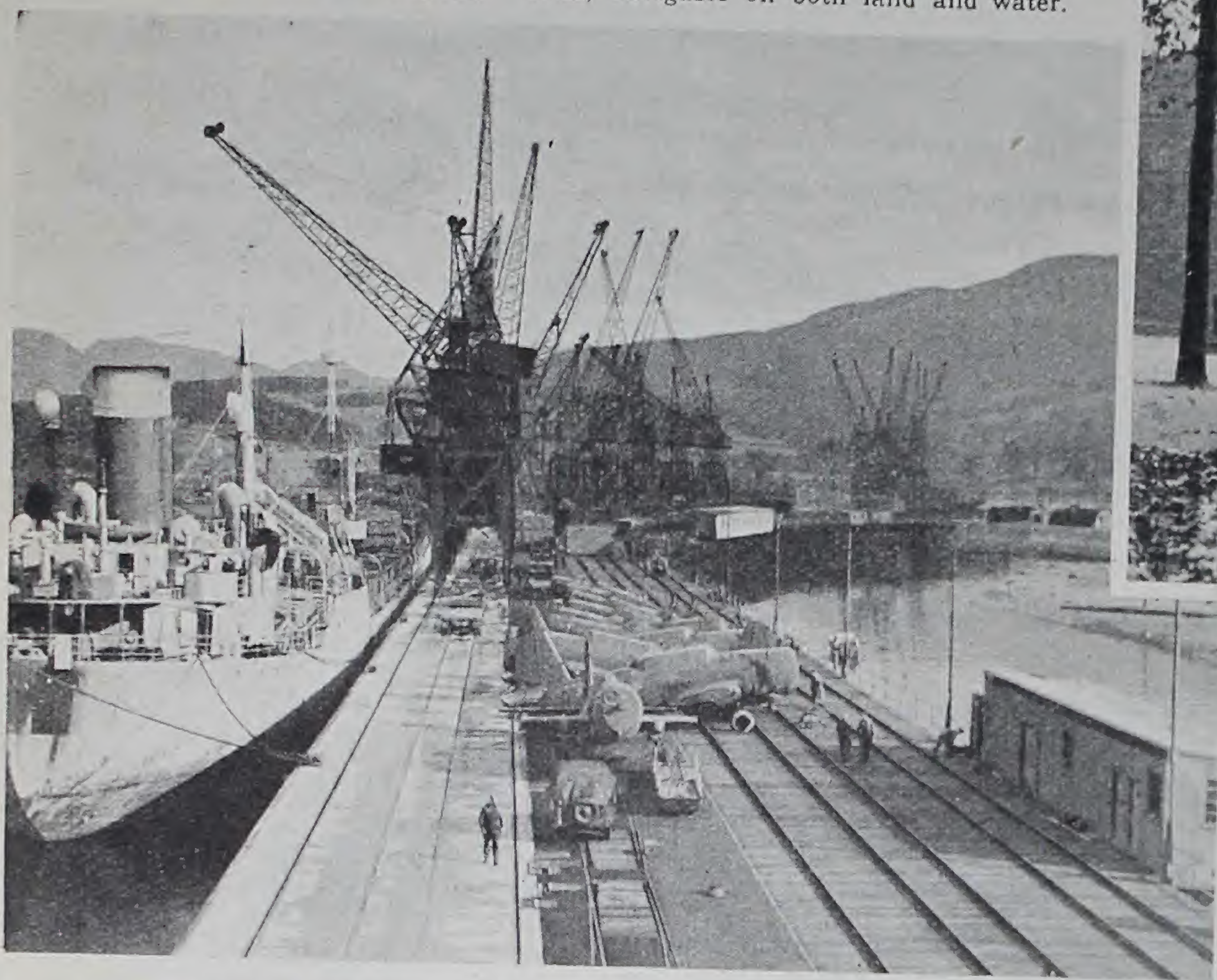


It took sharp-edged stripping-knives—and razor-blades to finish it off—to remove the protective netting (see page 2114) from the windows of London's buses and tube trains.





From 1942 Britain made use of pneumatic camouflage devices constructed from barrage balloon material. Here is a dummy Sherman tank which weighed only 17 lb. and fitted into a holdall when deflated. Right, heavily armed British 'Neptune' tank, navigable on both land and water.



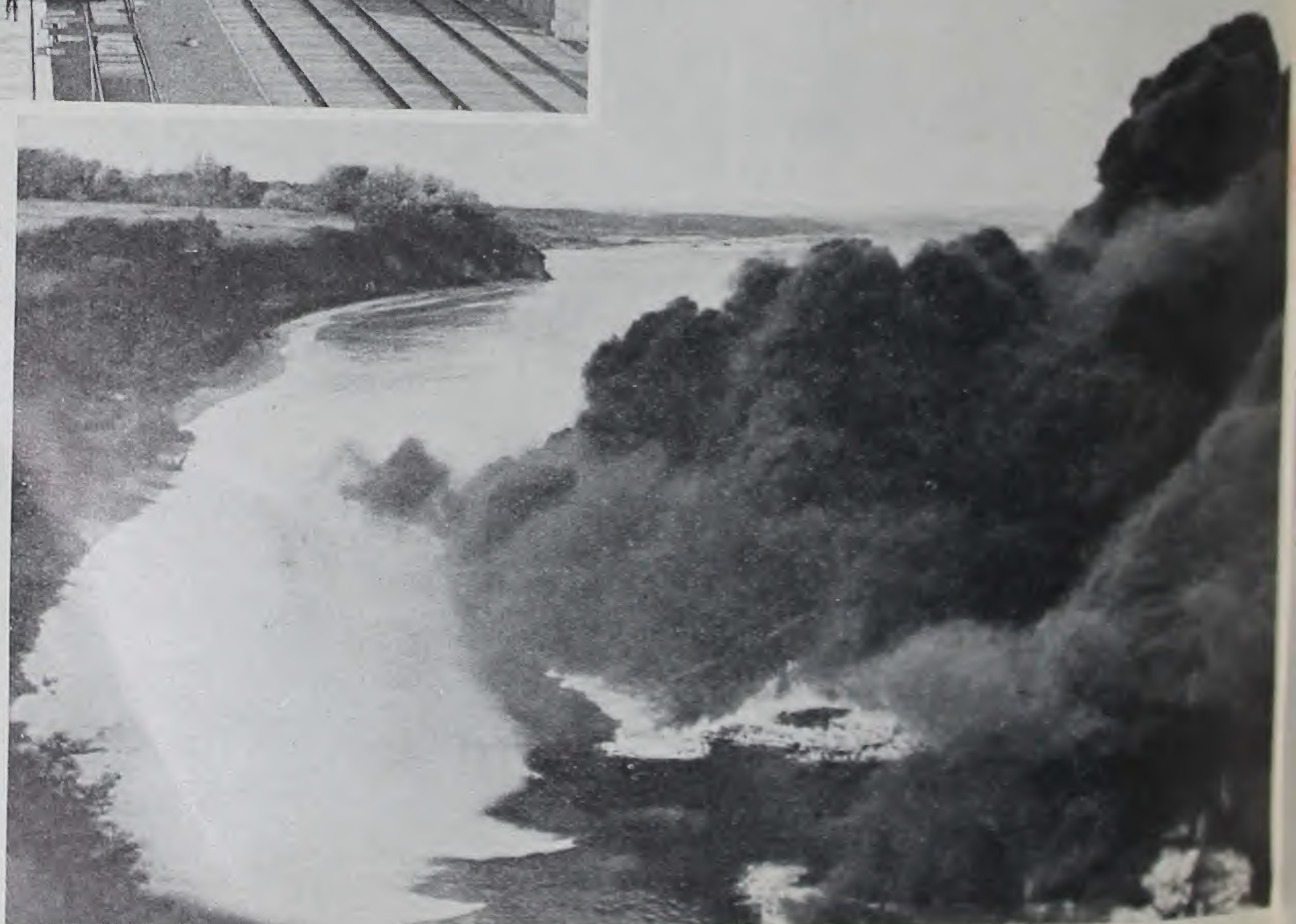
Most striking of London's wartime buildings was 'The Citadel' in the Mall, overlooking Horse Guards Parade. With walls eight feet thick and heavily guarded by A.A. guns, it was the Admiralty's bomb-proof secret H.Q.

## BRITISH WAR SECRETS

After the defeat of France, when Britain's ports in the south and east were virtually closed, two emergency ports for ocean-going traffic were built on the west coast of Scotland—at the Gareloch on the Clyde and at Cairnryan on Loch Ryan. Above, deep-water berth at 'No. 1 Military Port,' Gareloch.

(See also page 3618.)

Britain's 'oil defences,' capable of setting the Channel ablaze in case of attempted invasion, were kept secret till June 1945. Right, demonstration blaze of one of the secondary inshore lines of oil-defence: the whole area is swept with fire and smothered in thick smoke





being the first winter of Greenwich mean time since that of 1939-1940. The basic petrol ration, restored on June 1, was increased in September from a mileage of 120 to one of 150 miles a month, and coupons were made valid for use in the month of issue and the month following (instead of only in the month of issue).

On July 10 the Dover Command which, since December 1939, had been a separate command, reverted to its

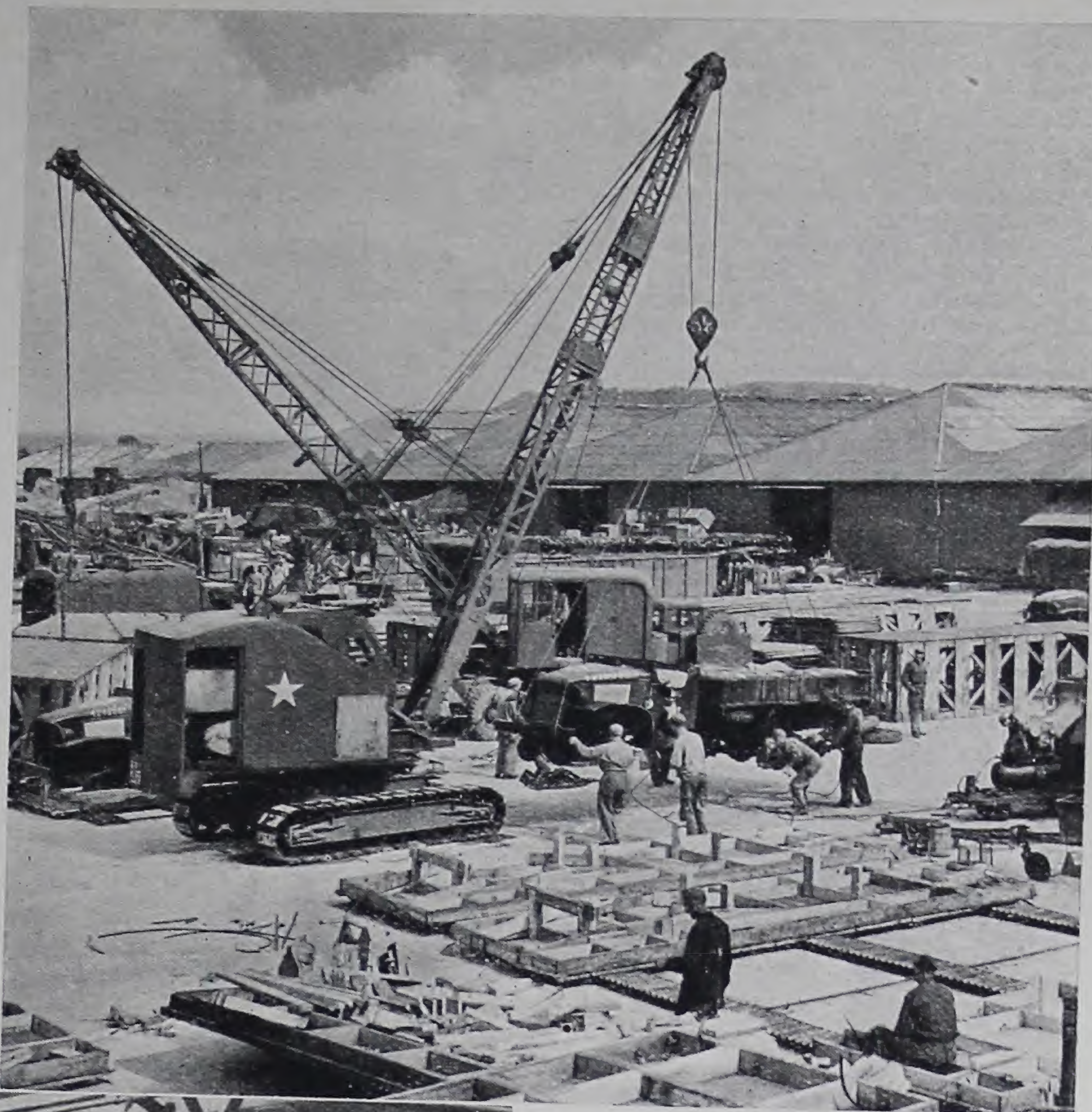
G.H.Q. Home Forces Disbanded peacetime status as part of the Nore Command. G.H.Q. Home Forces, formed in the summer

of 1940 when invasion seemed imminent, was disbanded on July 15. Under the command of Sir Alan Brooke and later of Sir Bernard Paget, it had grown into a powerful field army and provided many divisions for North Africa, Sicily, Italy, and the whole 21st Army Group for the final campaign in western Europe. At

### BOMBERS TO FURNITURE

Change-over from war to peace production in many sections of British industry was well advanced by the late summer of 1945. Below, in a factory at Walthamstow, London, where orders for R.A.F. Mosquito aircraft—the famous wooden bombers—are being completed, other workmen are making much-needed Utility furniture.

*Photo, Topical Press*



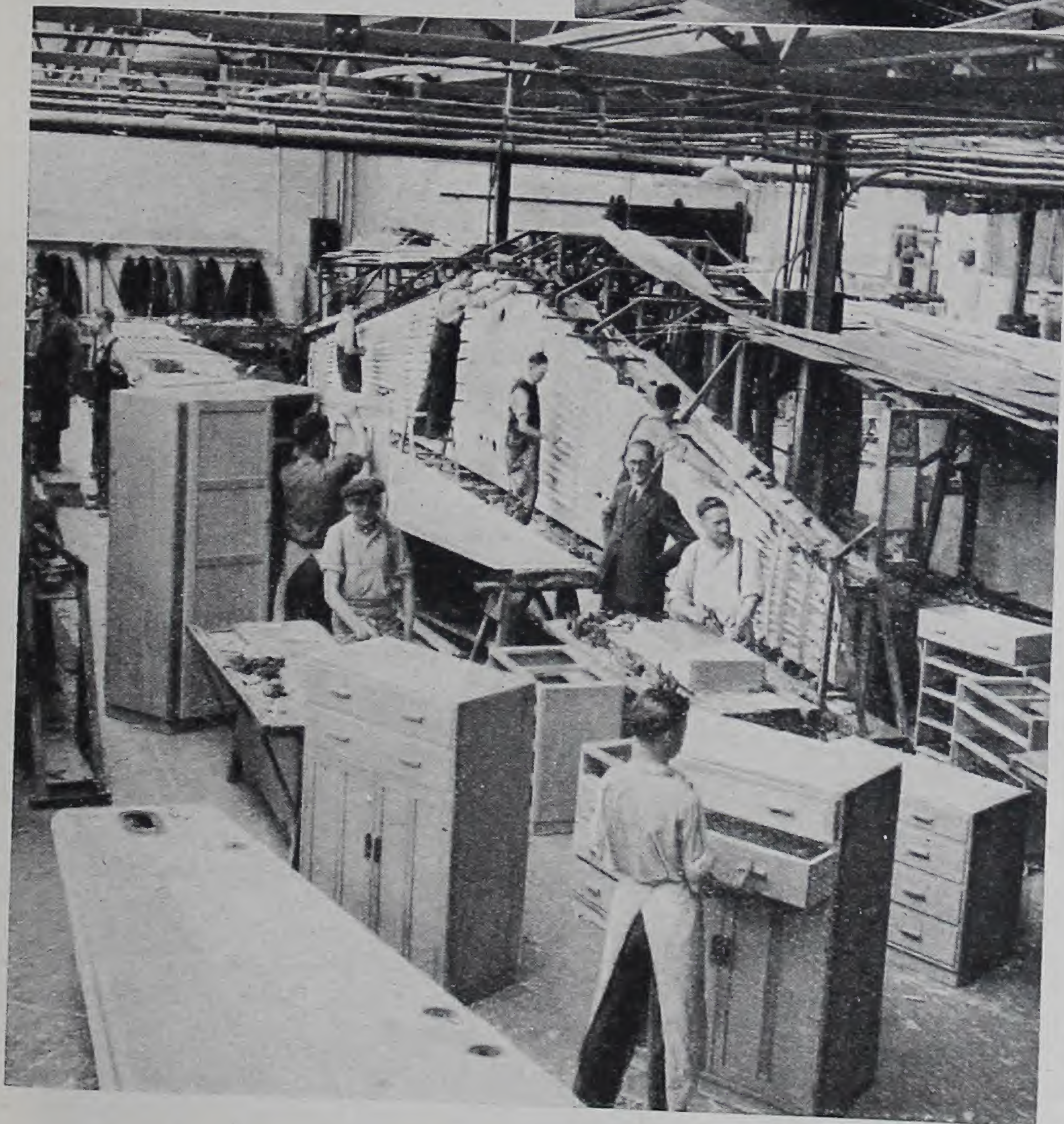
### PACKING UP U.S. LORRIES

With the end of the war in Europe, the Americans in Britain were faced with the task of preparing for shipment to the Far East some 35,000 U.S. Army vehicles. Most of them had left by January 1, 1946. Above, at the U.S. base at Ashchurch, Glos., lorries are crated after being reconditioned and sprayed with rust-preventive, so that they will be serviceable within six hours of arrival at the end of their journey.

*Photo, U.S. Official*

the time of its disbandment the C.-in-C. was Lt.-General Sir Harold Franklyn. The last of the training areas used by United States troops in Britain in preparation for the invasion of France were returned to the War Office during the summer. Of the 3,036,332 acres in the west, the Midlands, Lancashire, Wales and Northern Ireland placed at their disposal, less than 50,000 remained under United States control at the end of the war in Europe. The great American warrior, General Dwight D. Eisenhower, who had led the Allied armies to victory in the west, on June 12 drove in an open carriage through cheering crowds to the Guildhall to receive the Freedom of the City of London. In a warm and modest speech, Eisenhower said,

"No man could alone have brought about this result. Had I possessed the military skill of a Marlborough, the wisdom of a Solomon, the understanding of Lincoln, I still





would have been helpless without the loyalty, vision and generosity of thousands upon thousands of Britons and Americans. My most cherished hope is that after Japan joins the Nazis in utter defeat neither your country nor mine need ever again summon its sons and daughters from their peaceful pursuits to march to the drums of war. But—a fact important for both of us to remember—neither London nor Abilene [Eisenhower's birthplace] will sell her birthright for physical safety or her liberty for mere existence."

Great crowds acclaimed him when he appeared later on the balcony of the Mansion House. In the afternoon he was received in audience by the King

at Buckingham Palace, who conferred on him, its first American recipient, the Order of Merit.

Collection of war damage insurance premiums ceased with the one due on July 1. Mr. Aneurin Bevan stated on August 24 that 700,000 bombed houses in the London region needed further repair, though they were considered fit for habitation; about 70,000 in "bomb alley" also needed further attention. In the blitzed city areas outside London repairs had, broadly speaking, been completed. Sir Malcolm Trustram Eve,

K.C., Chairman of the War Damage Commission, stated in September that notification of damage to 3,281,953 separate properties had been received, with hundreds more coming in each week. 3,024,822 were in respect of dwelling houses (the total number of dwelling houses in England and Wales in 1939 was about 11,200,000), 25,989 of agricultural properties; 1,400,245 were in London, 386,822 in Scotland, 76,556 in Wales, 64,604 in Northern Ireland. In all these cases the cost of repairs or rebuilding had to be met; 1,018,538 claims did not exceed £25, 394 exceeded £10,000. Properties scheduled as total losses, for which a value payment was to be made, numbered just under 200,000. The Commission had already paid £271,281,171. These figures did not cover damage to public utilities such as railways, docks, electricity, gas and water undertakings, all special objects of attack.

Total Service casualties for the United Kingdom were: killed, 244,723; missing, 53,059; wounded, 277,090; prisoners, 180,405. (During the war of 1914-1918, 812,317 men from the United Kingdom were killed, 1,849,494 wounded.)

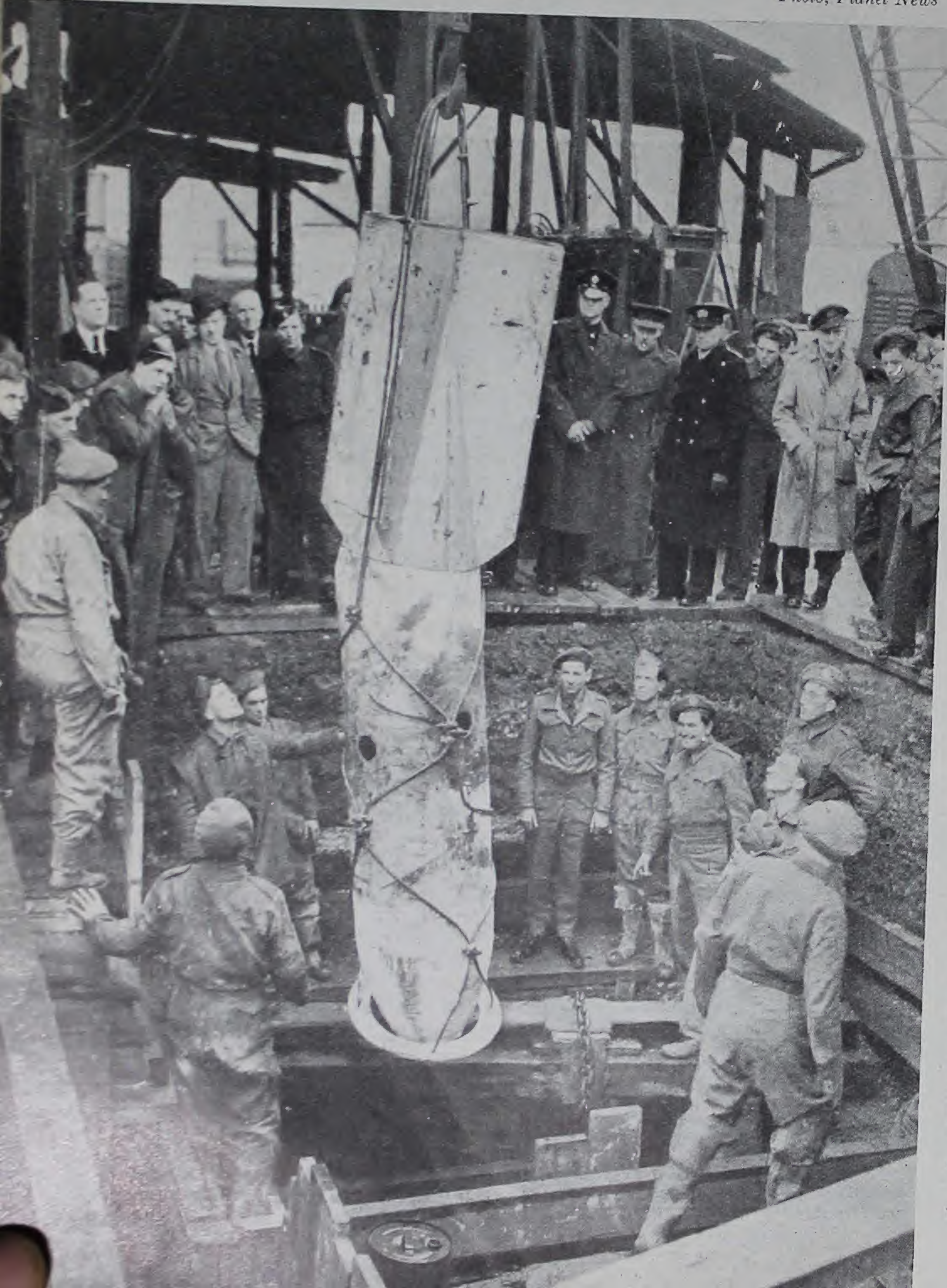
Five Acts passed by the old House of Commons received the Royal Assent on June 15: the Treason Act, which made no change in what constitutes treason, but made all cases of treason and misprision of treason triable in the same way as cases of murder, i.e. before a jury with the ordinary laws of evidence applying, and in cases of treason committed abroad abolished the accused's right to apply to the Attorney-General to order a trial at bar with three judges; the Requisitioned Land and War Works Act, to conserve the use or value of assets created at the public expense on requisitioned or other land; the Family Allowances Act, which provided for the payment to the mother, from a date to be specified by Order, of a weekly allowance of 5s. for each child after the first up to the age at which school attendance ceased to be compulsory; the Education (Scotland) Act, which applied to Scotland with necessary modifications the Education Act (1944) for England and Wales (see Historic Document 277 page 3017); the Distribution of Industry Act, which was intended to abolish distressed areas by offering to industrialists help in establishing new industries in the former "special areas" (to be extended and renamed "development areas").

One of the first acts of the new House was to ratify, with the approval of all

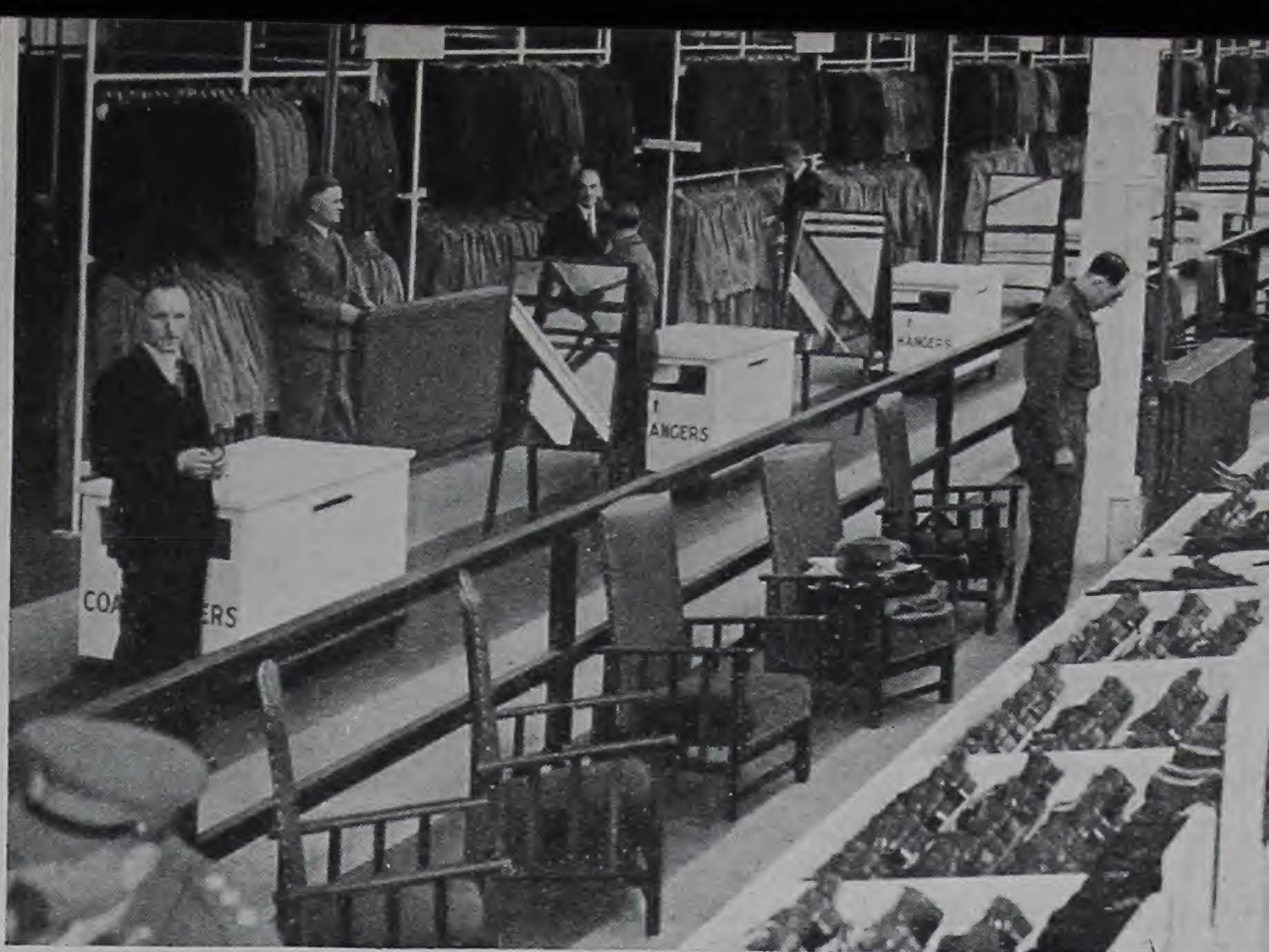
### CROYDON'S UNEXPLODED BOMB

After 200 days sappers of the Royal Engineers on Dec. 17, 1945, succeeded in freeing Croydon, near London, from the threat of a 4,000-lb. unexploded German bomb which had lain buried since January 1941. Nicknamed 'Hermann' by the local inhabitants, the bomb is here being hauled from the 40-foot shaft at the bottom of which it was found. Its 2,000 lb. of high explosive had been sterilized by steam-heating.

*Photo, Planet News*







parties, the United Nations Charter (August 23). The bill for the nationalization of the Bank of England, introduced on October 10, was the first measure of nationalization brought forward by the Government, and it went through before the end of the year with little opposition. In November, Mr. Morrison outlined the programme of nationalization of industry which the Government proposed to undertake during the life of Parliament. First on the list was the coal industry (the Coal Industry Nationalization Bill was published on December 20), to be followed at a later stage by the electricity and gas industries, and by railways, canals and long distance road haulage services—road passenger transport was to be co-ordinated with the national transport scheme, within which dock and harbour undertakings were to be brought.

President Truman's unilateral announcement on August 20 that Lend-

### HELPING EX-SOLDIERS TO FACE THE FUTURE

In 1944 the War Office began to make plans for the rehabilitation of returned prisoners-of-war, known as the Civil Resettlement Scheme. Left, at No. 1 Civil Resettlement Unit, Hatfield House, Herts, repatriated prisoners are instructed in such subjects as rationing and post-war credits. Right, the Guildford 'demob' depot, one of several where demobilized servicemen were able to choose civilian outfits.

*Photos, P.N.A. ; Illustrated*

Lease ceased forthwith caused by its abruptness a certain amount of consternation in Britain, a considerable part of whose food had been supplied during the war years under the terms of the Lend-Lease agreement. It was true that those terms stipulated that with the end of hostilities would come the end of the supply of goods by America on Lend-Lease terms; but it was generally felt that President Roosevelt would have found a more tactful way of impressing on the people of Great Britain that though they had stood unaided between the United States and the Nazis for over a year they could not expect continued support, except on commercial terms, from that great country.

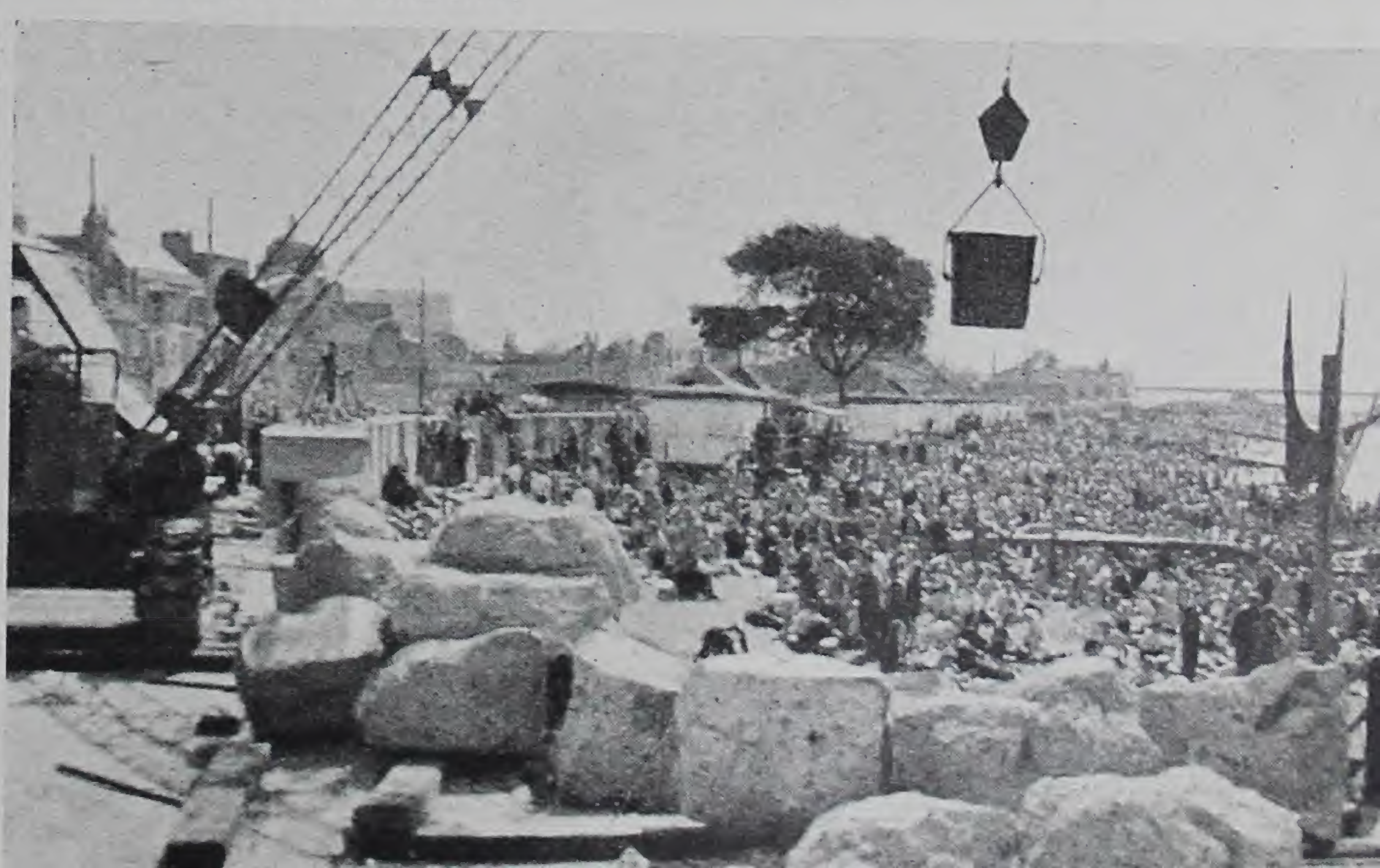
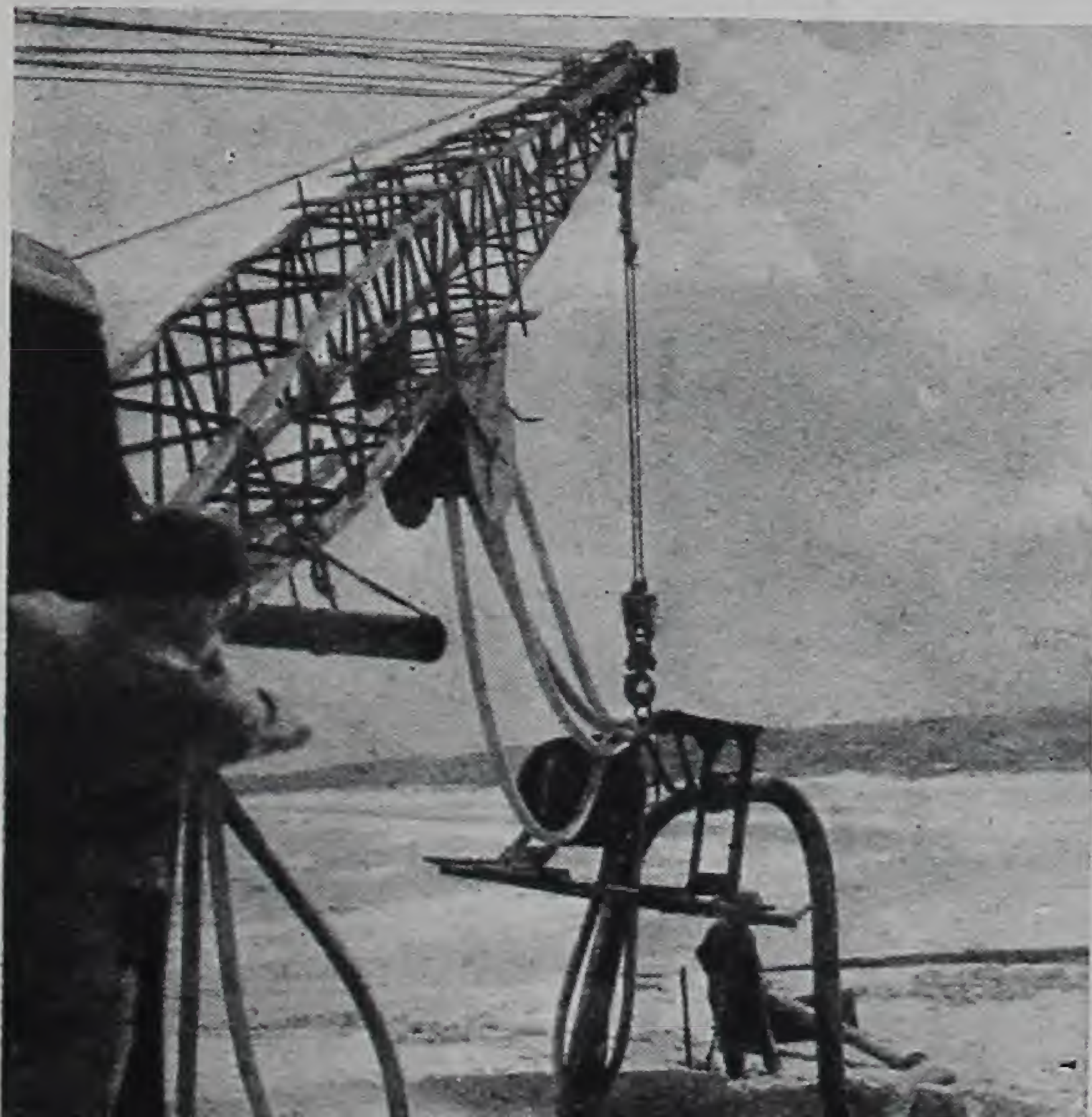
Talks between a delegation headed by Lord Halifax, British Ambassador in Washington, and Lord Keynes, a Director of the Bank of England, on the one hand and the United States Treasury on the other opened in Washington on September 11. After twelve weeks of hard bargaining, in which Lord Keynes laid bare to the United States Treasury the details and extent of Britain's financial commitments and burdens, an agreement was reached under which, subject to ratification by the British Parliament (which took place on December 13) and the American Congress (which took place on July 13, 1946), Britain was to receive a loan of £1,100,000,000 at two per cent interest repayable over fifty years from 1951. Of this total, £162,000,000 was the final settlement of Lend-Lease. Interest

### Loan Talks in Washington

### CLEARING BRITAIN'S BEACHES

An important task for the Royal Navy and Royal Engineers from 1943 onwards, after the threat of invasion had passed, was the clearing of Britain's beaches of mines and heavy obstructions. Left, an ejector pump on the beach at Great Yarmouth turns over the sand with water jets to locate a mine. Right, Sunday holiday-makers amuse themselves at Southend while removal of defence blocks goes on.

*Photos, Keystone ; Planet News*





was to be cancelled in any year in which Britain's income from home-produced exports should be less than the average for the years 1936-1938. Britain was to ratify the Bretton Woods agreement before the end of 1945 (carried out on December 20), to abolish the sterling area dollar pool, and to support a general reduction of tariffs and other barriers to trade. (See also page 3854.)

The Council of the Foreign Ministers of Britain, the United States, the Soviet Union, France and China, set up under the Berlin agreement, met for the first time in London on September 11. Its immediate task as laid down at Potsdam

was "to draw up, with a view to their submission to the United Nations, treaties of peace with Italy, Rumania, Bulgaria, Hungary and Finland, and to propose settlements of territorial questions outstanding on the termination of the war in Europe." At the opening session it was agreed that the five Foreign Ministers should preside in turn at the Council's meetings, and that the Council's terms of reference should be "to continue the necessary preparatory work for the peace settlements and to consider any other matters which may from time to time be referred to it by the Governments who are members of the Council."

The questions of the future of the Italian colonies, and of the Italo-

Yugoslav frontier were referred to the Foreign Ministers' deputies for study. The peace treaties with Finland and Rumania were discussed on September 20, that with Bulgaria on the 21st. Complete divergence of view about the Balkan situation between the Soviet Union on the one hand and Britain and the U.S.A. on the other at once became apparent. While the western Allies were not satisfied that the governments in Rumania, Bulgaria, and Hungary represented the majority of the people, the Soviet Union, said Mr. Molotov, unequivocally considered their regimes fully democratic. A French memorandum on Germany was considered on September 28.

But on October 2 a communiqué announced that the conference had ended in deadlock; not only were there differences on the matters that had been discussed, but differences also on the interpretation to be put upon the terms of the Berlin agreement made a joint communiqué on the work of the Council impossible. Mr. Byrnes, U.S. Secretary of State, summed up the position in a statement made the same day: "On September 22 the Soviet delegation came to feel that treaty discussions should be confined in each case to the signatories of the surrender terms, as contemplated by the first and narrow provision of Article 2, section 3, subsection 2 of the Berlin agreement, rather than under other and broader provisions

of the Berlin agreement. The Soviet delegation took the position that the Council should rescind or withdraw its decision of September 11 whereby France and China were invited to participate in all discussions. This would have meant the elimination of China from all discussion of European peace treaties, and the similar elimination of France except in the case of the treaty with Italy." Mr. Bevin said in the House of Commons on October 9, "It seemed to me, as to Mr. Byrnes, that the difference of view with the Soviet delegation, technical though it might appear to be, in reality involved a big question of principle—to what extent are the 'Big Three' to exclude other nations from the discussion of matters of grave concern to them? This principle I felt it was incumbent on me to defend."

#### THE CHANNEL ISLANDS

On May 9, after five years of enemy occupation, the Channel Islands—only British soil overrun by the Germans—were liberated. The surrender was signed at 7.41 a.m., after which a token force of the Royal Artillery went ashore to hoist the Union Jack at St. Peter Port (Guernsey). A relief force of 7,000 arrived on May 12, bringing technicians to restore communications, specialists to assess the needs of the islands' agriculture for machinery, fertilizers, and seeds, and 9,533 tons of supplies, including food for a fortnight, a year's clothing ration, soap (almost entirely lacking during the occupation), medical supplies, coal, and two lorry loads of sterling currency.

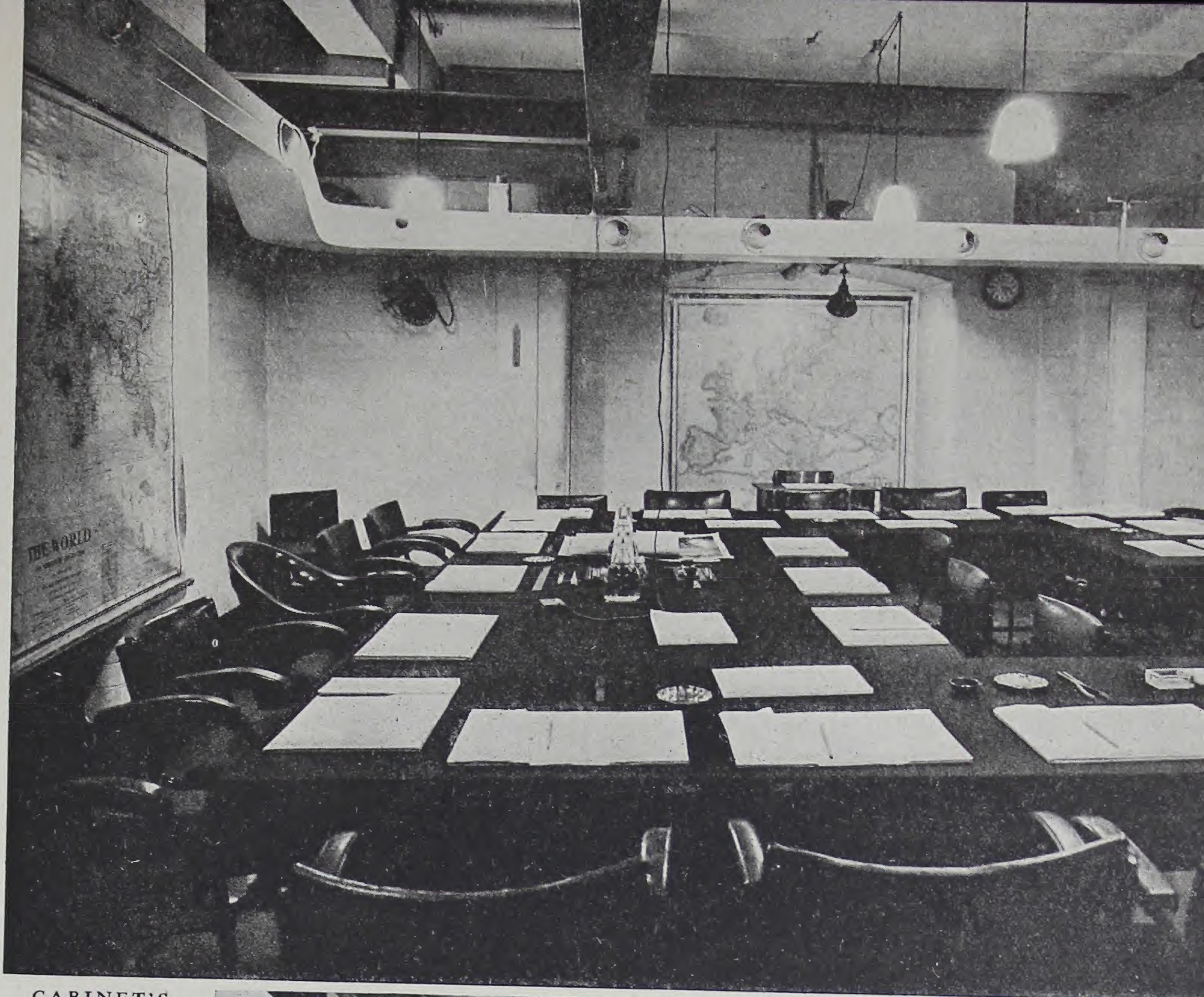
The evacuation of the German garrison of 30,000 began on May 13. Next

#### OPENING OF THE COUNCIL OF FOREIGN MINISTERS

The Council of Foreign Ministers set up under the Berlin agreement met for the first time at Lancaster House, St. James's, London, on September 11, 1945, to discuss treaties of peace with Italy and others of the Axis powers. Below are the Ministers, attended by their experts and advisers: (1) Mr. James A. Byrnes (U.S.A.); (2) Mr. Georges Bidault (France); (3) Mr. Ernest Bevin (Great Britain); (4) Mr. Molotov (U.S.S.R.); (5) Dr. Wang Shih-chieh (China).





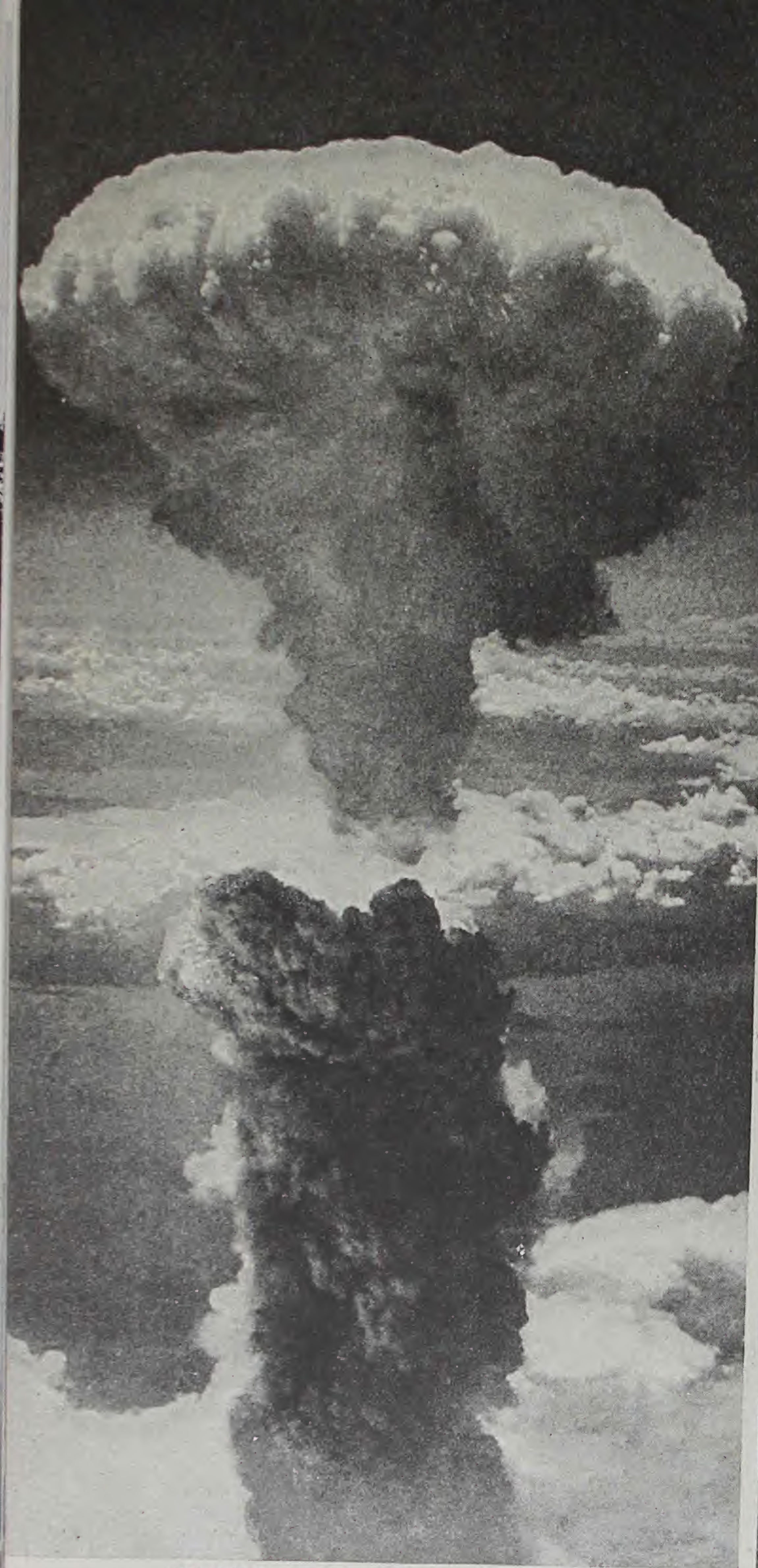


## CABINET'S WARTIME H.Q.

It was disclosed in November 1945 that shortly after the Chamberlain-Hitler talks at Munich in September 1938 construction began of a bomb-proof H.Q. for the Cabinet some 70 feet below ground in Whitehall, to be used in the event of war. The apartments included a 'War Room,' bedrooms for members of the Government, and a 'strong room' for the safe keeping of secret documents. From the 'War Room' (above), hung with maps showing the daily situation on the world fronts, campaigns on four continents were directed. Note the air-conditioning system running along the sides of the walls. Right, the Prime Minister's private room. One of a suite of three occupied by Mr. Churchill and his family, it contained a large-scale map of England. From the large desk in the foreground Mr. Churchill made most of his war broadcasts.







### ATOMIC BOMBS BLAST JAPANESE CITIES

The most horrifying development of the Second Great War was the use of the atomic bomb by the U.S.A.A.F. against Japan in August 1945 (see also page 3847). Two atomic bombs were dropped : the first at Hiroshima (population 320,000) on August 6, the second at Nagasaki (population 260,000) three days later, each causing havoc unprecedented in the history of man. It was officially estimated that at Hiroshima there were 78,150 dead and 13,983 missing. The American Medical Association estimated that there were 40,000 dead at Nagasaki. In addition, some 85,000 in Hiroshima and 75,000 in Nagasaki were left in need of immediate medical care, making a total of over 300,000 casualties caused by the two bombs. Of 580 workers marching across a bridge in Hiroshima, nearly  $1\frac{1}{2}$  miles from the centre of the damage, all were burnt (nine died) except three at the rear of the column screened by the eaves of a building. The awe-inspiring smoke-cloud that towered 20,000 feet into the sky three minutes after the bomb had hit Nagasaki is seen above. On the right, devastated Hiroshima, where only steel-framed structures stand











### RUINS THAT WERE HIROSHIMA AND NAGASAKI

A British Mission, under the direction of the Chiefs of Staff sent to Japan to investigate the effects of the atomic bombs, spent the month of November 1945 in Hiroshima and Nagasaki. These photographs are reproduced from the report of their mission summarized in page 3847. Above, general view of Hiroshima looking across the centre of damage, the approximate position of which is marked with an arrow. The palace (centre) is 250 ft. and the buildings on the right 500 ft. from the spot on the ground immediately below the explosion of the bomb (which went off in the air). Below, at Nagasaki, where the centre of damage was to the left, only 300 yards from the bridge.

*By permission of His Majesty's Stationery Office*





day three hundred displaced persons on Jersey (Spanish Republicans, French and a few Russians) were assembled for repatriation. During the last hopeless months the Germans had been living in indescribable conditions of filth and chaos in requisitioned hotels and houses, wantonly destroying appointments and fittings. Expert reconnaissance of the islands showed that it was probably the most heavily defended area in Europe, and that the Allied Command had been wise in not attempting an attack on the islands: even if successful, it would have destroyed them completely.

Weekly civilian rations during the occupation had been 2 ozs. of meat, 2 pints of milk, 7 ozs. of oatmeal, 5 lb of potatoes, supplemented by swedes and other vegetables and beet syrup. Tobacco had

been obtainable at £30 a lb., wood at £50 a ton, wheat at £80 a cwt. second-hand suits and overcoats up to £40, tea at £20 a lb. The general health of the people was fairly good, thanks to the Red Cross parcels which reached Guernsey on December 27, 1943, from Lisbon by the Swedish ship "Vega," and through the retention and diversion by the islanders of undisclosed stocks. During the last part of the occupation the Germans, cut off from all contact with their base, had suffered worse than the local inhabitants, and had been reduced to eating nettles and dandelions, their own horses, cats and dogs, and swedes discarded by the islanders as unfit for cattle.

Mr. Morrison (Home Secretary) arrived at St. Peter Port on May 14 to consult with the States on the future of the islands. His assurance to them that military government would be terminated as soon as it had done its work was carried into effect on August 25, when Lieutenant-General Sir A. E. Grasett was sworn in as Lieutenant-Governor of Jersey, Major-General Neame as

Lieutenant-Governor of Guernsey. The King and Queen visited the liberated islands on June 7.

Speaking in the House of Commons on August 17, Mr. Chuter Ede (Home Secretary in the new Government) gave some account of the history of the war years in the Channel Islands. When British troops were withdrawn on June 19, 1940, the Bailiffs (Mr. Coutanche in Jersey and Mr. Carey in Guernsey) were instructed to stay at their posts and administer the government of the islands to the best of their ability in

the interests of the inhabitants. Other officers appointed by the Crown, including Law Officers, were also instructed to remain at their posts. Of the 50,000 inhabitants of Jersey, 10,000 came to England; of the 40,000 of Guernsey, 18,000. Ten thousand Channel Islanders served in the British armed forces.

The Island States decided to set up a central controlling body to exercise the functions of government. The Germans allowed this body to function, subject to their direction, thus leaving the



### THE CHANNEL ISLANDS FREED FROM NAZIDOM

After almost five years of German occupation, the Channel Islands were freed on May 9, 1945. Three days later, crowds assembled outside Elizabeth College, Guernsey (above), used by the enemy as their administrative H.Q., to hear Brigadier A. E. Snow, R.A., commander of the relief forces, read the King's proclamation of greeting. Below, a long line of Nazi prisoners embarks on the way to England.

*Photos, P.N.A. ; British Newspaper Pool*







### THE KING VISITS LOYAL ULSTER

An important contribution to Britain's war effort—notably in ships, aircraft, linen and agricultural produce—was made by Northern Ireland. Above, in the Commons Chamber of the Parliament at Stormont, Belfast, the King presents decorations at an investiture in July 1945. The Queen and Princess Elizabeth are seated on his right. Left, Belfast's Victory parade on May 16 passes along Donegall-square North. *Photos, Topical Press*

Islands in possession of a large measure of self-government. Information obtained since the liberation showed that the responsible administrators deserved well not only of their fellow islanders, but of Britain for their conduct in a situation which, always difficult, became almost impossible during the last few months of the occupation when the Islands were entirely cut off.

#### Northern Ireland

Something of what Northern Ireland's loyalty to Great Britain meant was expressed by Mr. Churchill on May 13, 1944, when he said that owing to Mr. de Valera's action in refusing the Allies the use of the southern Irish ports, Britain had only the north-western approach between Ulster and Scotland through which to bring "the means of life and to send out the forces of war." Had it not been for the loyalty of Northern Ireland, "we should have been forced to come to close quarters with Mr. de Valera or perish for ever from the earth."

Northern Ireland did all she could to increase her agricultural production: in 1939, 470,823 acres were under crops; in 1943, 850,730 acres: an increase of 78 per cent compared with 69 per cent in England and Wales and 46 per cent in Scotland. Flax acreage had increased from 21,194 to 124,536 (the highest since 1870). During the war in Europe, Northern Ireland sent to Britain £3,000,000 worth of fat sheep and cattle, and 20 per cent of home produced eggs. 140 warships and 123 merchant vessels, aggregating 600,000 tons (or 10 per cent of the total United Kingdom merchant shipbuilding), were constructed at Belfast. Nearly 500 tanks, over 500 guns, 14,000 gun barrels and other gun parts, 42,000 carbine machine-guns, about 75,000,000 shells, over 2,000,000 yards of cloth for the Services and 30,000,000 shirts were produced; 1,500 heavy bombers were built, and some 3,000 aircraft were repaired.

In July 1945 the King and Queen paid a state visit to the country, arriving

in Belfast by air on the 17th. The King, opening Parliament, paid high tribute to the contribution to victory made by the people of Northern Ireland, mentioning specially the hospitality given to the first contingents of American troops to reach the United Kingdom. On the 19th Their Majesties inspected surrendered U-boats lying at Londonderry.

#### King and Queen Visit Ulster

Following the elections to the United Kingdom Parliament, a meeting of the Nationalists of Tyrone and Fermanagh decided that the Irish Nationalist members for that constituency, Mr. Cunningham and Mr. Mulvey, should take their seats at Westminster, thus reversing the decision of 1935 when the same two men, then also elected members, were asked to abstain from attendance at Westminster, and did so. They took the oath and their seats on August 21. In September Vice-Admiral the Earl of Granville succeeded the Duke of Abercorn as Governor.



## END OF THE SECOND GREAT WAR, AUGUST 14, 1945

At midnight B.S.T. on the night of August 14–15, 1945, the Prime Minister, Mr. Clement R. Attlee, broadcast the news, in the message given below, that Japan had surrendered. The newly elected House of Commons assembled for the first time next day, August 15 to listen to the King's Speech, extracts from which are also given

Mr. Attlee, Prime Minister of the United Kingdom, announces the end of the Second Great War, August 14, 1945:

JAPAN has to-day surrendered. The last of our enemies is laid low. Here is the text of the Japanese reply to the allied demands:

"With reference to the announcement of August 10 regarding the acceptance of the provisions of the Potsdam declaration and the reply of the Governments of the United States, Great Britain, the Soviet Union, and China sent by Secretary of State Byrnes on the date of August 11, the Japanese Government has the honour to communicate to the Governments of the four Powers as follows:

"(1) His Majesty the Emperor has issued an Imperial rescript regarding Japan's acceptance of the provisions of the Potsdam declaration.

"(2) His Majesty the Emperor is prepared to authorize and insure the signature by his Government and the Imperial General Headquarters of the necessary terms for carrying out the provisions of the Potsdam declaration.

"(3) His Majesty is also prepared to issue commands to the military, naval, and air forces of Japan, and all forces under their control wherever they may be found, to cease all active operations, relinquish all arms, and obey all commands of the allied forces in accordance with the above terms.

(Signed) Togo."

Let us recall that on December 7, 1941, Japan, whose onslaught China had already resisted for over four years, fell upon the United States of America, who were then not at war, and upon ourselves, who were sorely pressed in our death struggles with Germany and Italy. Taking full advantage of surprise and treachery, Japan's forces quickly overran the territory of ourselves and our allies in the Far East, and at one time it appeared as though they might invade the mainland of Australia and advance into India.

But the tide turned; first slowly and then with ever-increasing speed and violence the mighty forces of the United States and the British Commonwealth and Empire and all their allies, and finally of Russia, were brought to bear. Their resistance has everywhere now been broken.

At this time we should pay tribute to the men of this country, from the Dominions, from India, and the Colonies, to our fleets, armies, and air forces that have fought so well in the arduous campaign, against Japan. Our gratitude goes out to all our splendid allies . . .

We also think especially of the prisoners in Japanese hands, of our friends . . . in Burma and in those colonial territories upon whom the brunt of the Japanese attack fell. We rejoice that their sufferings will soon be at an end . . .

Here at home you have earned a short rest. . . I have no doubt that to-morrow (Wednesday) and Thursday will everywhere be treated as days of holiday . . . Let all who can relax and enjoy themselves . . . Peace has once again come to the world.

The King's Speech at the Opening of the 38th Parliament of the United Kingdom, August 15, 1945:

THE surrender of Japan has brought to an end six years of warfare which has caused untold loss and misery to the world . . . It is the firm purpose of My Government to work in the closest co-operation with the Governments of My Dominions and in concert with all peace-loving peoples to attain a world of freedom, peace and social justice so that the sacrifices of the war shall not have been in vain.

It has given Me special pleasure to meet the President of the United States on his brief visit to My country after the Conference at Berlin. I have also been glad to express the gratitude of this country to the Supreme Commander of the Allied Expeditionary Force for his inspiring leadership.

My Forces in Europe continue to discharge the duties entailed in the occupation of enemy countries and the repatriation of the many thousands of persons who were deported from their homes by the enemy. My Navy, aided by the Navies of My Allies, is clearing the seas of mines . . .

In the Far East My Ministers will make it their most immediate concern to ensure that all prisoners in Japanese hands are cared for and returned to their homes . . .

My Government will continue the orderly release of men and women from the Armed Forces . . . The arrangements already in operation for the resettlement in civil life of men and women released from the Forces and from war work will be continued and, where necessary, expanded . . .

My Government will take up with energy the tasks of reconverting industry from the purposes of war to those of peace, of expanding our export trade, and of securing by suitable control or by an extension of public ownership that our industries and services shall make their maximum contribution to the national well-being. The orderly solution of these difficult problems will require from all My people efforts comparable in intensity and public spirit to those which have brought us victory . . .

A measure will be laid before you to bring the Bank of England under public ownership. A Bill will also be laid before you to nationalize the coal-mining industry.

My Ministers will organize the resources of the building and manufacturing industries in the most effective way to meet the housing and other essential building requirements of the nation. They will also lay before you proposals . . . to promote the best use of land in the national interest.

You will be asked to approve measures to provide a comprehensive scheme of insurance against industrial injuries, to extend and improve the existing scheme of social insurance and to establish a national health service.

My Ministers will develop to the fullest possible extent the home production of good food . . . and they will keep in being and extend the new food services for the workers and for mothers and children established during the war . . .





# THE ADVENT OF THE ATOMIC BOMB

*Captain Norman Macmillan, M.C., A.F.C., here surveys technical developments in aero-engine, aircraft and armament design from 1939 to 1945, demonstrating how power, speed and weight progressively increased. He records the first operational use of jet-propelled aircraft, and the ever-expanding use of radar, and concludes his review with a description of the revolutionary atomic bomb and its appalling effects as evidenced by its use at Hiroshima and Nagasaki in August 1945. (See colour plate facing page 3862; illustrations in pages 3839, 3850, 3900-01 and 4034; and Hist. Doc. No. 309 in page 3847)*

**T**HE Royal Air Force fought the war principally on three famous aero-engines, the Rolls-Royce Merlin, the Bristol Hercules, and the Napier Sabre. The Merlin in 1939 developed 1,030 h.p. at 15,000 feet; by the time of the Battle of Britain this engine gave

**R.A.F.'s  
Three  
Aero-Engines**

1,300 h.p. at 8,000 feet, an increase of about 350 h.p. at that height. This first advance was largely due to the fuel technologists who had greatly increased the supply of 100 octane petrol. Improved fuel increased the rates of climb of the Spitfire and Hurricane, enabling them to get up to the attacking bombers and fighters more quickly and deal with them on more advantageous terms when encountered. After their earliest mass attacks the Luftwaffe formations came in at greater heights, a change forced upon them by this improved performance of the British interceptors.

The decisive Battle of Britain was fought by the Royal Air Force with

all-British equipment on the ground and in the air, with the exception of the fighters' machine guns, which were of American design. American aircraft then delivered to Britain were used only as trainers and in Coastal Command for reconnaissance and bombing.

The Merlin went on developing as a basic engine throughout the war. The Mark 61, with two superchargers and an intercooler, to cool the compressed gas, first saw service in late 1942, and doubled the horse-power of the engine above 20,000 feet. Before the war ended more than 2,000 h.p. was developed by this same basic engine, the Merlin 100 of 1944. Merlin engines were fitted to the Battle, Hurricane, Defiant, Spitfire, Mustang, Fulmar, Barracuda, Whitley, Mosquito, Lancaster, Wellington, Beau-fighter, and some Halifaxes.

The Germans did not succeed in producing a two-stage supercharger before the war ended. Instead, they boosted power by injecting methanol-water mixture into the single stage

supercharger intake to prevent detonation, and raised the power of an 1,800 h.p. engine to 2,100 h.p. for short periods by this means. When the aircraft reached the maximum supercharged height of its particular engine, this method was valueless. Nitrous oxide (the dentist's "laughing gas") was therefore injected at greater altitudes to provide more oxygen, and the Junkers Jumo 213E thus gained 418 h.p. at 35,000 feet.

The Bristol Hercules 14-cylinder air-cooled radial entered the war with a power output of 1,340 h.p. Later it gave 1,680 h.p., and finally over 2,000. The Bristol Centaurus 18-cylinder radial first gave 2,500 and later over 2,800 h.p. The Napier Sabre 24-cylinder engine used in the ground strafing Typhoon and the Tempest fighters first developed 2,200 h.p., later 2,400 and finally 3,000. Available engine-power in single units was thus more than doubled in six years of high pressure development, during which fighter speeds rose from the early Hurricane's 335 m.p.h. and the Spitfire's 357 m.p.h. to the 450 m.p.h. of the Spitfire and Mustang models used in 1945. During the battle of the flying bombs a new improved iso-octane fuel, known as 150 grade fuel, was introduced to permit higher power to be taken from piston engines at the low altitudes at which the fighter pilots had to fly to combat the robots.

American fighter development was comparable to the British, but Japanese fighter development reached its limit with the 2,000 h.p. Nakajima 18-cylinder radial air-cooled engine, which gave the best Japanese fighter a maximum speed of 420 m.p.h.

Light bomber performance increased from the 256 m.p.h. maximum speed of the Battle to the Mosquito, which could bomb Berlin from Britain at an operational speed of 370 m.p.h. from a height of 30-35,000 feet, a distance and height far beyond the Battle's capacity.

At the beginning of the war the Whitley heavy bomber could carry

## 'FIDO' CLEARED FOG-BOUND WARTIME AIRFIELDS

One of Britain's most important war inventions was 'Fido,' which cleared airfields of fog with high-powered petroleum burners, thus enabling aircraft to land and take off in otherwise impossible conditions. Invented by the Petroleum Warfare Department and first used in November 1942, it derived its name from the initial letters of 'Fog Investigation Dispersal Operations.'

Below, a R.A.F. Lancaster takes off in fog—between two bands of flaming petroleum.







### BEWARE MINES!

The Germans in their Baltic seaports issued this poster to warn the inhabitants against R.A.F. sea-mines. 'Beware! Enemy Sea-Mines. Danger to Life,' it read. 'Parachute mines are also dropped from aircraft into rivers and canals. Your life is in danger if you approach or disturb mines which have fallen on land.' Photo, British Official

about two tons of bombs to Oslo or Berlin at an operational speed of about 170 m.p.h. The Lancaster raised the load to 10 tons, and the operational speed to about 235 m.p.h. The Super-Fortress could carry up to about eight tons of bombs over the longer striking ranges of the Pacific theatre and operate between 30-35,000 feet at a speed of about 300 m.p.h. Neither the Germans nor the Japanese ever possessed heavy bombers with the characteristics of the Lancaster or of the Super-Fortress.

The war stimulated armaments development. In 1939 the R.A.F. used the 500-lb. bomb as its normal heavy bomb,

### Development of H.E. Bombs

but had a 2,000-lb. bomb for use against special targets, such as heavy warships. During the war the largest American bomb weighed 4,000 lb., the German 2,500 kg. (5,500 lb.). R.A.F. bomb development grew steadily from the initiation of the 2,000-lb. parachute bomb to the 4,000-lb., 8,000-lb., and 12,000-lb. blockbusters and the 12,000-lb. and 22,000-lb. streamlined bombs. One Super-Fortress was modified to carry the R.A.F. 12,000-lb. bomb, but the alterations to the structure were not proceeded with in other aircraft of the type.

Great attention was paid by most air forces to incendiary bombs. In 1940

the Luftwaffe tried to burn British towns by dropping considerable quantities of thermite and oil bombs, causing what was currently thought to be great damage, especially when the water supply failed.

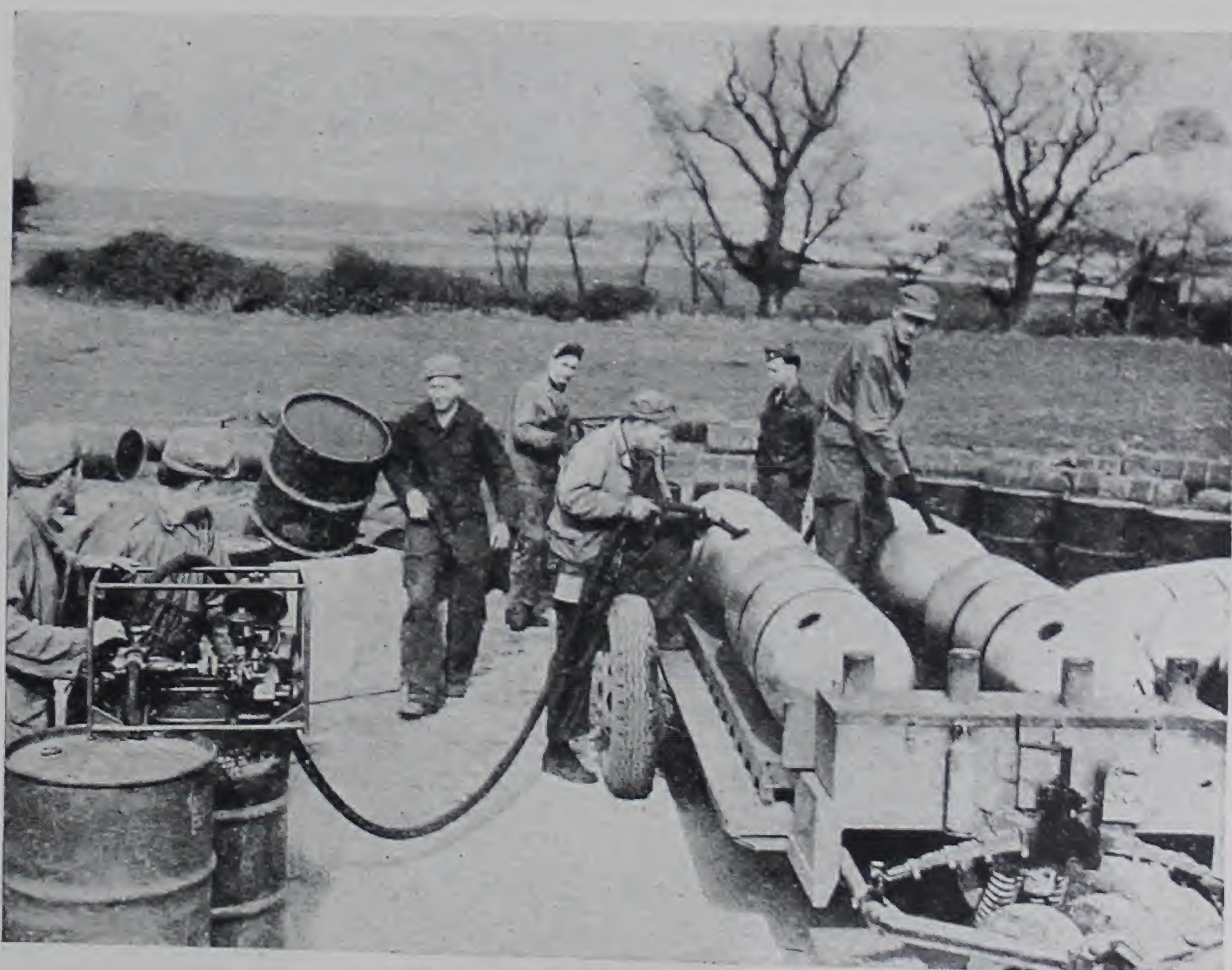
The Germans introduced explosive incendiaries to defeat fire-fighting. But nothing the Luftwaffe did compared with the incendiary attacks of the R.A.F. against Germany and those of the U.S.A.A.F. against Japan. The R.A.F. small incendiary and 30-lb. petrol incendiary bombs burned out city after city in Germany, the American 6-lb. petrol jelly bomb caused immense destruction by fire in the more inflammable Japanese cities.

A special mine broke the Ruhr dams (see page 2660). The Moehne dam, about 850 yards long, measured 140 feet alike in thickness and in height, and was built of solid concrete. It held back its load of 140,000,000 tons of water by gravity, the force of its own weight. To break such a structure required the destruction of the stable relationship between the dam and the weight of water, and a suitable method was scientifically evolved by Mr. B. Neville Wallis, designer of the dam mines and of the 12,000- and 22,000-lb. streamline bombs. The attack had to be made when the weight of water was at its maximum, and the concrete barrage therefore at its greatest static load, with the water only four feet from the top of the dam. The

attacking aircraft had to fly exactly 60 feet above the water at a speed of 232 m.p.h. and release the mines at an exact distance from the dam to prevent them from breaking up at the moment of hitting the water, and to ensure getting them over the protective net to explode actually against the dam wall 60 feet under the surface. The force of the explosion of these 11 feet diameter mines at this precise depth (which was automatically determined by hydrostatic detonation) imposed such unbalanced stresses on the structure that the dam wall fractured at its base and collapsed. The aircraft's correct height above the reservoir surface and distance from the dam at the moment of release were determined very simply by the focusing of two fixed spotlights on the water's surface, and by triangulation sighting on the dam towers.

Unlike the dam mines, anti-shiping mines were dropped gently into the water by parachute. These mines were cylindrical in shape (for easy stowage in the aircraft) and weighed rather less than one ton. They were detonated by the vessel's magnetic or acoustic fields, and the method of detonation was continually varied to make successful mine-sweeping as difficult as possible. They were effective against both submarines and surface craft. Anti-submarine depth charges weighed about

### Special Mines for Ruhr Dams



### NEW ALLIED FIRE BOMB

In April 1945 details were released of a new Allied fire bomb. Containing a jellied substance, it burned at 1,400 degrees Fahrenheit, percolating into cracks and crevices which made it hard to extinguish. It was used in the last stages of the war against the defenders of Bordeaux and other French ports. Here, U.S.A. 8th A.F. ordnance men prepare the new bombs.

Photo, Planet News